



See kind Mamma with anxious care
Implores dear daddy's Aid,
To make a Doctor of the young Heir,
While nurse presents the Babe.



See kind Mamma with anxious care
Implores dear daddy's Aid,
To make a Doctor of the young Heir,
While nurse presents the Babe.

cf. Page

T H E
Fortunate Mistress;
O R, A
H I S T O R Y
O F T H E
L I F E
A N D

Vast Variety of Fortunes
O F

Mademoiselle de BELEAU,

AFTERWARDS CALL'D

The Countess de WINTSELSHEIM,
in GERMANY.

Being the Person known by the Name of the LADY ROXANA,
in the Time of King Charles II.

L O N D O N :

Printed by E. APPLEBEE, in Wine Office-Court Fleet-street.
And to be had of the News-Carriers. 1740.





T H E

P R E F A C E.

TH E History of this Beautiful Lady, is to speak for itself: If it is not as Beautiful as the Lady herself is reported to be; if it is not as diverting as the Reader can desire, and much more than he can reasonably expect; and if all the most diverting Parts of it are not adapted to the Instruction and Improvement of the Reader, the Relator says, it must be from the Defect of his Performance; dressing up the Story in worse Cloaths than the Lady, whose Words he speaks, prepared it for the World.

He takes the Liberty to say, That this Story differs from most of the Modern Performances of this Kind, tho' some of them have met with a very good Reception in the World: I say, It differs from them in this Great and Essential Article, Namely, That the Foundation of This is laid in Truth of Fact; and so the Work is not a Story, but a History.

The Scene is laid so near the Place where the Main Part of it was transacted, that it was necessary to conceal Names and Persons; lest what cannot be entirely forgot in that Part of the Town, should be remembered, and the Facts traced back too plainly, by the many People yet living, who would know the Persons by the Particulars.

It is not always necessary that the Names of Persons should be discovered, tho' the History may be many Ways useful; and if we should be always oblig'd to name the Persons, or not to relate the Story, the Consequence might be only this, That many a pleasant and delightful History would be buried in the Dark, and the World be deprived both of the Pleasure and the Profit of it.

The

The P R E F A C E.

The Writer says, He was particularly acquainted with this *First Husband*, the Brewer, and with his Father; and also, with *Bad Circumstances*; and knows that this first Part of the Story to be's Truth.

This may, he hopes, be a Pledge for the Credit of the rest, tho' the Latter Part of her History lay Abroad, and could not so well be vouch'd as the First; yet, as she has told it herself, we have the less Reason to question the Truth of that Part also.

In the Manner she has told the Story, it is evident she does not insist upon her Justification in any one Part of it; less does she recommend her Conduct, or indeed, any Part of it, except her Repentance to our Imitation: On the contrary, she makes frequent Excursions, in a just censuring and condemning her own Practice: How often does she reproach herself in the most passionate Manner; and guide us to a just Reflection in the like Cases?

It is true, She met with unexpected Success in all her wicked Courses; but even in the highest Elevations of her Prosperity, she makes frequent Acknowledgments, That the Pleasure of her Wickedness was not worth the Repentance; and that all the Satisfaction she had, all the Joy in the View of her Prosperity, no, nor all the Wealth she ramb'd in; the Gaiety of her Appearance; the Equipages, and the Honours, she was attended with, could quiet her Mind, abate the Reproaches of her Conscience, or procure her an Hour's Sleep, when just Reflections kept her waking.

The Noble Inferences that are drawn from this one Part, are worth all the rest of the Story; and abundantly justify (as they are the profess'd Design of) the Publication.

If there are any Parts in her Story, which being oblig'd to relate a wicked Action, seem to describe it too plainly, the Writer says, all imaginable Care has been taken to keep clear of Indecencies, and immodest Expressions; and 'tis hop'd you will find nothing to prompt a vicious Mind, but every-where much to discourage and expose it.

Scenes of Crime can scarce be represented in such a Manner, but some may make a Criminal Use of them, but when Vice is painted in its Low-priz'd Colours, 'tis not to make People in love with it, but to expose it; and if the Reader makes a wrong Use of the Figures, the Wickedness is his own.

In the mean time, the Advantages of the present Work are so great, and the Virtuous Reader has room for so much Improvement, that we make no Question, the Story, however meanly told, will find a Passage to his best Hours; and be read both with Profit and Delight.

T H E



THE
Fortunate Mistress;
OR, A
HISTORY
OF THE
Life of the Lady ROXANA, &c.

I Was Born, as my Friends told me, at the City of *Poitiers*, in the Province, or County of *Poitou*, in *France*, from whence I was brought to *England* by my Parents, who fled for their Religion about the Year 1683, when the Protestants were Banish'd from *France*, by the Cruelty of their Persecutors.

I, who knew little or nothing of what I was brought over hither for, was well enough pleas'd with being here; *London*, a large and gay City, took with me mighty well, who, from my being a Child, lov'd a crowd, and to see a great many fine Folks.

I retain'd nothing of *France*, but the Language: My Father and Mother being People of better Fashion, than ordinarily the People call'd Refugees at that Time were; and having fled early, while it was easie to secure their Effects, had, before their coming over, remitted considerable Sums of Money; or, as I remember, a considerable Value in *French* Brandy, Paper, and other Goods; and these selling very much to Advantage here, my Father was in very good Circumstances at his coming over, so that he was far from applying to the rest of our Nation that were here for Countenance and Relief: On the contrary, he

had his Doors continually throng'd with miserable Objects of the poor starving Creatures, who at that Time fled for Shelter, on Account of Conscience, or something else.

I have indeed, heard my Father say, That he was pestered with a great many of those, who, for any Religion they had, might e'en have staid where they were; but who flock'd over hither in Drove, for want of what they call in *English*, a Livelihood; hearing with what open Arms the Refugees were received in *England*, and how they fell readily into Business, being, by the charitable Assistance of the People in *London*, encourag'd to Work in their Manufactures, in *Spittle-Fields*, *Canterbury*, and other Places; and that they had a much better Price for their Work, than in *France*, and the like.

My Father, I say, told me, That he was more pestered with the clamours of these People, than of those who were truly Refugees, and fled in Distress, merely for conscience.

I was about ten Years old when I was brought over hither, where, as I have said, my Father liv'd in very good circumstances, and died in about eleven Years more; in which time, as I had accomplish'd myself for the sociable Part of the World, so I had acquainted myself with some of our *English* Neighbours, as is the custom in *London*, and as, while I was Young, I had pick'd up three or four Play-Fellows and Companions, suitable to my Years; so as we grew bigger, we learnt to call one another Intimates and Friends; and this forwarded very much the finishing me for Conversation, and the World.

I went to English Schools, and being young, learnt the English Tongue perfectly well, with all the customs of the English young Women; so that I retain'd nothing of the French, but the Speech; nor did I so much as keep any Remains of the French Language tagg'd to my Way of speaking, as most Foreigners do, but spoke what we call Natural English, as if I had been born here.

Being to give my own Character, I must be excus'd to give it impartially as possible, and as if I was speaking of another body; and the Sequel will lead you to judge whether I flatter myself or no.

I was speaking of myself as about fourteen Years of Age, tall, and very well made; sharp as a Hawk in Matters of common Knowledge; quick and smart in Discourse; apt to be Satirical; full of Repartee, and a little too forward in Conversation, or, as we call it in English, Bold, tho' perfectly Modest in my Behaviour. Being French born, I danc'd, as some say, naturally lov'd it extremely, and sung well also
and,

and so well, that, as you will hear, it was afterwards some Advantage to me: With all these Things, I wanted neither Wit, Beauty, or Money. In this Manner I set out into the World, having all the Advantages that any young Woman could desire, to recommend me to others, and form a Prospect of happy Living to myself.

At about fifteen Years of Age, my Father gave me as he call'd it in French, 25000 Livres, that is to say, two Thousand Pounds Portions, and married me to an eminent Brewer in the City, pardon me if I conceal his Name, for tho' he was the Foundation of my Ruin, I cannot take so severe a Revenge upon him.

With this Thing call'd a Husband, I liv'd eight Years in good Fashion, and for some Part of the Time, kept a Coach, that is to say, a kind of Mock-Coach, for all the Week the Horses were kept at Work in the Dray-carts, but on Sunday I had the Privilege to go Abroad in my Chariot, either to Church, or otherways, as my Husband and I could agree about it, which, by the way, was not very often: But of that hereafter.

Before I proceed in the History of the married Part of my Life, you must allow me to give as impartial an Account of my Husband, as I have done of myself: He was a jolly handsome Fellow, as any Woman need wish for a Companion, tall, and well made, rather a little too large, but not so as to be ungenteel, he danc'd well, which I think, was the first thing, that brought us together: He had an old Father who manag'd the Business carefully, so that he had little of that Part lay on him, but now and then to appear, and show himself, and he took the Advantage of it, for he troubled himself very little about it, but went Abroad, kept Company, hunted much, and lov'd it exceedingly.

After I have told you that he was a handsome Man, and a good Sportsman, I have indeed said all; and unhappy was I, like other young People of our Sex, I chose him for being a handsome jolly Fellow as I said, for he was otherwise a weak empty headed untaught Creature, as any Woman cou'd ever desire to be coupled with: And here I must take the Liberty, whatever I have to reproach myself with in my after Conduct, to turn to my Fellow-Creatures, the young Ladies of this Country, and to speak to them by way of Precaution, if you have any Regard to your future Happiness, any View of living comfortably with a Husband, any Hope of preserving your Fortunes, or restoring them after any Disaster: Never, Ladies, marry a Fool, any Husband rather than a Fool, with some other Husbands you may be unhappy, but with

a Fool you will be miserable, with another Husband you may, I say, be unhappy, but with a Fool you must, nay, if he wou'd, he cannot make you easie, every thing he does is so awkward, every thing he says is so empty, a Woman of any Sense cannot but be surfeited, and sick of him twenty times a Day: What is more shocking, than for a Woman to bring a handsome comely Fellow of a Husband into Company, and then be oblig'd to Blush for him every time she hears him speak? To hear other Gentlemen talk Sense, and he able to say nothing? And so look like a Fool, or which is worse, hear him talk Nonsense, and be laugh'd at for a Fool.

In the next Place, there are so many Sorts of Fools, such an infinit Variety of Fools, and so hard it is to know the Work of the Kind, that I am oblig'd to say, No Fool, Ladies, at all, no kind of Fool, or a sober Fool, a wise Fool, or a silly Fool: take any thing but a Fool: nay, be any thing, be even an Old Maid, the worst of Nature's Curses, rather than take up with a Fool.

But to leave this a while, for I shall have Occasion to speak of it again: my Case was particularly hard, for I had a Variety of foolish Things complication in this unhappy Match.

First, and which, I must confess, is very unsufferable, he was a conceited Fool, Tout Opiniatre, every thing he said, was Right, was Best, and was to the Purpose, whoever was in Company, and whoever was advanc'd by others, tho' with the greatest Modesty imaginable: and yet when he came to defend what he had said, by Argument and Reason, he would do it so weakly, so empty, and so nothing to the Purpose, that it was enough to make any body that heard him, sick and asham'd of him.

Secondly, As was positive and obstinate, and the most positive in the most simple and inconsistent Things, such as were intollerable to bear.

These two Articles, if there had been no more, qualified him to be a most unbearable Creature for a Husband; and so it may be supposed at first Sight, what a kind of Life I led with him: However, I did as well as I cou'd, and held my Tongue, which was the only Victory I gain'd over him: for when he would talk after his own empty rattling Way with me, and I would not answer, or enter into Discourse with him on the Point he was upon, he would rise up in the greatest Passion imaginable and go away; which was the cheapest Way I had to be deliver'd.

I could

I could enlarge here much, upon the Method I took to make my Life passable and easie with the most incorrigible Temper in the World ; but it is too long, and the Articles too trifling : I shall mention some of them as the Circumstances I am to relate, shall necessarily bring them in.

After I had been married about four Years, my own Father died, my Mother having been dead before ; he lik'd my Match so ill, and saw so little Room to be satisfied with the Conduct of my Husband, that tho' he left me 5000 l. ivres, and more at his Death, yet he left it in the Hands of my elder Brother, who running on too rashly in his Adventures, as a Merchant, fail'd, and lost not only what he had, but what he had for me too ; as you shall hear presently.

Thus I lost the last Gilt of my Father's Bounty, by having a Husband not fit to be trusted with it ; there's one of the Benefits of marrying a Fool.

Within two Years after my own Father's Death, my Husband's Father also died, and, as I thought, left him a considerable Addition to his Estate, the whole Trade of the Brewhouse, which was a very good one, being now his own.

But this Addition to his Stock was his Ruin, for he had no Genius to Business ; he had no Knowledge of his Accounts ; he bumbled a little about it indeed, at first, and put on a Face of Business, but he soon grew slack ; it was below him to inspect his Books, he committed all that to his Clerks and Book-Keepers ; and while he found Money in Cash to pay the Malt-Man, and the Excise, and put some in his Pocket, he was perfectly easie and indolent, let the Main Chance go as it would.

I foresaw the Consequence of this, and attempted several times to perswade him to apply himself to his Business ; I put him in Mind how his Customers complain'd of the Neglect of his Servants on one Hand, and how abundance broke in his Debt, on the other Hand, for want of the Clerks Care to secure him, and the like ; but he thrust me by, either with hard Words, or fraudulently, with representing the Cases otherwise than they were.

However, to cut short a dull Story, which ought not to be long, he began to find his Trade sunk, his Stock declin'd, and that, in short, he could not carry on his Business, and once or twice his Brewing Utensils were extended for the Excise ; and the last Time he was put to great Extremities to clear them.

This alarm'd him, and he resolv'd to lay down his Trade; which, indeed, I was not sorry for; foreseeing that if he did not lay it down in Time, he would be forc'd to do it another Way, namely, as a Bankrupt. Also I was willing he should draw out while he had something left, lest I should come to be stript at home, and be turn'd out of Doors with my Children; for I had now five Children by him; the only Work (perhaps) that Fools are good for.

I thought myself happy when he got another Man to take his Brewhoule clear off of his Hands; for paying down a large Sum of Money, my Husband found himself a clear Man, all his Debts paid, and with between Two and Three Thousand Pound in his Pocket, and being now oblig'd to remove from the Brewhouse, we took a House at -----, a Village about two Miles out of Town, and happy I thought myself, all things consider'd, that I was got off clear, upon so good Terms, and had my handsome Fellow had but one Cap full of Wit, I had been still well enough.

I propos'd to him either to buy some Place with the Money, or with Part of it, and offer'd to join my Part to it, which was then in Being, and might have been secur'd: so we might have liv'd tollerably, at least during his Life. But as it is the Part of a Fool to be void of Council, so he neglected it, liv'd on as he did before, kept his Horses and Men, rid every Day out to the Forest a hunting, and nothing was done all this while, but the Money decreased apace, and I thought I saw my Ruin hastening on, without any possible Way to prevent it.

I was not wanting with all that perswasions and Entreaties could perform, but it was all fruitless representing to him how fast our Money wasted, and what would be our Condition when it was gone, made no Impression on him, but like one stupid, he went on, not valuing all that Tears and Lamentations could be suppos'd to do; nor did he abate his Figure or Equipage, his Horses or Servants, even to the last, till he had not a hundred Pound left in the whole World.

It was not above three Years that all the Ready-Money was thus spending off, yet he spent it, as I may say, foolishly too, for he kept no valuable Company neither, but generally with Huntsmen and Horse-Courers, and Men meaner than himself, which is another Consequence of a Man's being a Fool, such can never take Delight in Men more wise and capable than themselves, and that makes them

converse

converse with Scoundrels, drink Belch with Porters, and keep Company always below themselves.

This was my wretched Condition, when one Morning my Husband told me, he was sensible he was come to a miserable Condition, and he would go and seek his Fortune somewhere or other; he had said something to that Purpose several times before that, upon my pressing him to consider his Circumstances, and the Circumstances of his Family before it should be too late: But as I found he had no Meaning in any thing of that Kind, as indeed, he had not much in any thing he ever said, so I thought they were but Words of Courte now: When he said he would be gone, I used to wish secretly, and even say in my Thoughts, "I wish you would, for if you go on thus, you will starve as all."

He staid, however, at home all that Day, and lay at home that Night; early the next Morning he gets out of Bed, goes to a Window which look'd out towards the Stables, and sounds his French Horn, as he call'd it, which was his usual Signal to call his Men to go out a hunting.

It was about the latter end of August, and so was light yet at five o'Clock. and it was about that Time that I heard him and his two Men go out and shut the Yard-Gates after them. He said nothing to me more than as usual when he us'd to go out upon Sport, neither did I rise, or say any thing to him that was material, but went to sleep again after he was gone, for two Hours, or thereabouts.

It must be a little surprizing to the Reader to tell him at once, that after this, I never saw my Husband more, but to go farther, I not only never saw him more, but I never heard from him, or of him, neither of any or either of his two Servants, or of the Horses, either what became of them, where, or which way they went, or what they did, or intended to do, no more than if the Ground had open'd and swallowed them all up, and no-body had known it, except as hereafter.

I was not, for the first Night or two, at all surpriz'd no nor very much the first Week or two, believing that if any thing Evil had befallen them, I should soon enough have hard of that; and also knowing that as he had two Servants and three Horses with him, it wou'd be the strangest thing could befall them all, but that I must some time or other hear of them.

But you will easily allow, that as Time run on a Week, two Weeks, a Month, two Months, and so on, I was dreadfully frighted at last, and the more when I look'd into my own Circumstances, and consider'd the Condition in which I was left; with five Children, and not one Farthing Subsistence for them, other than about seventy Pound in Money, and what few Things of Value I had about me, which, tho' considerable in themselves, were yet nothing to feed a Family, and for a length of Time too.

What to do I know not, nor to whom to have recourse; to keep in the House where I was, I could not, the Rent being too great; and to leave it without his Order, if my Husband should return, I could not think of that neither; so that I continued extremely preplex'd, melancholly, and discourag'd, to the last Degree.

I remain'd in this dejected Condition near a Twelvemonth. My Husband had two Sisters, who were married, and liv'd very well, and some other near Relations that I knew of and I hop'd would do something for me: and I frequently sent to these, to know if they could give me any Account of my vagrant Creature; but they all declar'd to me in Answer, That they knew nothing about him; and after frequent sending, began to think me troublesome, and to let me know, they thought so too, by their treating my Maid with very slight and unhandsome Returns to her Inquiries.

This grated hard, and added to my Affliction, but I had no recourse, but to my Tears, for I had not a friend of my own left me in the World: I should have observ'd, that it was about half a Year before this Elopement of my Husband, that the Disaster I mention'd above besel my Brother; who Broke, and that in such bad Circumstances, that I had the Mortification to hear not only that he was in Prison, but that there would be little or nothing to be had by Way of Compensation.

Misfortunes seldom come alone: This was the Forerunner of my Husband's Flight! and as my Expectations were cut off on that Side, my Husband gone, and my Family of Children on my Hands, and nothing to subsist them, my Condition was the most deplorable that Words can express.

I had some Plate and some Jewels, as might be supposed, my Fortune and former Circumstances considered; and my Husband, who had never staid to be distress'd, had not been put to the Necessity of ridding me, as Husbands usually do in such Cases: ut as I had
seen

seen an End of all the Ready Money, during the long Time I had liv'd in a State of Expectation for my Husband, so I began to make away one Thing after another, till those few Things of Value which I had to lessen apace, and I saw nothing but Misery and the utmost Distress before me, even to have my Children starve before my Face; I leave any one that is a Mother of Children, and has liv'd in Plenty and good Fashion, to consider and reflect, what must be my Condition: As to my Husband, I had now no hope or Expectation of seeing him any more; and, indeed, if I had, he was the Man, of all the Men in the World, the least able to help me, or to have turn'd his hand to the gaining one Shilling towards lessening our Distress; he neither had the Capacity or the Inclination; he could have been no Clerk, for he scarce wrote a legible Hand; he was so far from being able to write Sense, that he could not make Sense of what others wrote; he was so far from understanding good *English*, that he could not spell good *English*: To be out of all Business was his delight; and he would stand leaning against a Post for half an Hour together, with a Pipe in his Mouth, with all the Tranquillity in the World, smoking, like *Dryden's* Countryman, that Whistled as he went, for want of Thought; and this even when his Family was at it were starving, that little he had wasting, and that we were all bleeding to Death; he not knowing, and as little considering, where to get another Shilling when the last was spent.

This being his Temper, and the Extent of his Capacity, I confess I did not see so much Loss in his parting with me, as at first I thought I did, tho' it was hard and cruel, to the last Degree in him, not giving me the least Notice of his Design, and, indeed, that which I was most astonish'd at, was, that seeing he must certainly have intended this Excursion some few Moments at least, before he put it in Practice, yet he did not come and take what little Stock of Money we had left; or at least, a Share of it, to bear his Expence for a little while, but he did not; and I am morally certain he had not five Guineas with him in the World, when he went away: All that I could come to the Knowledge of, about him, was, that he left his Hunting-Horn, which he called the French Horn, in the Table, and his Hunting Saddle, went away in a handsome Furniture, as they call it, which he used

sometimes to Travel with; having embroidered Housing, a Case of Pistols, and other things belonging to them; and one of his Servants had another Saddle with Pistols, tho' plain; and the other a long Gun; so that they did not go out as Sportsmen, but rather as Travellers: What Part of the World they went to, I never heard for many Years.

As I have said, I sent to his Relations, but they sent me short and surly Answers; nor did any one of them offer to come to see me, or to see the Children, or so much as to enquire after them, well perceiving that I was in a Condition that was likely to be soon troublesome to them: But it was no Time now to dally with them, or with the World; I left off sending to them, and went myself among them; laid my Circumstances open to them, told them my whole Case, and the Condition I was reduc'd to, begg'd they would advise me what Course to take, laid myself as low as they could desire, and intreated them to consider that I was not in a Condition to help myself, and that without some Assistance, we must all inevitably perish: I told them, that if I had had but one Child, or two Children, I would have done my Endeavour to have work'd for them with my Needle, and should only have come to them to beg them to help me to some Work, that I might get our Bread by my Labour; but to think of one single Woman not bred to Work, and at a Loss where to get Employment, to get the Bread of five Children, that was not possible, some of my Children being young too, and none of them big enough to help one another.

It was all one I received not one Farthing of Assistance from any body, was hardly ask'd to sit down at the two Sisters Houses, nor offer'd to eat or drink at two more near Relations. The fifth, an antient Gentlewoman, Aunt-in-Law to my Husband, a Widow, and the least able also of any of the rest, did, indeed, ask me to sit down, gave me a Dinner, and refresh'd me with a kinder Treatment than any of the rest; but added the melancholly Part, viz. That she would have helped me, but that, indeed, she was not able; however, I was satisfied was very true.

Here I relieved myself with the constant Assistant of the Afflicted, I mean Tears; for relating to her how I was received by the other of my Husband's Relations, it made me burst into Tears, and

I cry'd vehemently for a great while together, till I made the good old Gentlewoman cry too several times.

However, I came home from them all without any Relief, and went on at home till I was reduced to such inexpressible Distress, that it is not to be described: I had been several times after this at the old Aunt's; for I prevail'd with her to promise me to go and talk with the other Relations; at least, that if possible, she could bring some of them to take off the Children, or to contribute something towards their Maintenance; and to do her Justice, she did use her Endeavour with them, but all was to no Purpose, they would do nothing, at least that Way: I think, with much Entreaty, she obtained by a kind of Collection among them all, about eleven or twelve Shillings in Money; which, tho' it was a present Comfort, was yet not to be named as capable to deliver me from any Part of the Load that lay upon me.

There was a poor Woman that had been a kind of a Dependant upon our Family, and who I had often, among the rest of the Relations, been very kind to; my Maid put it into my Head one Morning to send to this poor Woman, and to see whether she might not be able to help, in this dreadful Case.

I must remember it here, to the Praise of this poor Girl, my Maid, that tho' I was not able to give her any Wages, and had told her so, nay I was not able to pay her the Wages that I was in Arrears to her, yet she would not leave me; nay, and as long as she had any Money, when I had none, she would help me out of her own; for which, tho' I acknowledged her Kindness and Fidelity, yet it was but a bad Coin that she was paid in at last, as will appear in its Place.

Amy, (for that was her name) put it into my Thoughts to send for this poor Woman to come to me, for I was now in great Distress, and I resolved to do so; but just the very Morning that I intended it, the old Aunt, with the poor Woman in her Company, came to see me; the good old Gentlewoman was, it seems, heartily concerned for me, and had been talking again among those People to see what she could do for me; but to very little Purpose.

You shall judge a little of my present Distress by the Posture she found me in: I had five little Children, the eldest was under ten
Years

Years old, and I had not one Shilling in the House to buy them Victuals, but had sent *Amy* out with a Silver Spoon to sell it, and bring home something from the Butcher's; and I was in a Parlour sitting on the Ground, with a great heap of old Rags, Linnen, and other things about me, looking then over, to see if I had any thing among them that would Sell or Pawn for a little Money, and had been crying ready to burst myself, to think what I should do next.

At this Juncture they knocked at the Door, I thought it had been *Amy*, so I did not rise up, but one of the Children opened the Door, and they came directly into the Room where I was, and where they found me in that Posture, and crying vehemently, as above; I was surpriz'd at their coming, you may be sure, especially seeing the Person I had but just before resolved to send for: But when they saw me, how I looked, for my Eyes were swelled with crying, and what a Condition I was in as to the House, and the heaps of things that were about me, and especially when I told them what I was doing, and on what Occasion, they sat down like *Job's* three Comforters, and said not one Word to me for a great while, but both of them cry'd as fast, and as heartily as I did.

The Truth was, there was no need of much Discourse in the Case, the Thing spoke itself; they saw me in Rags and Dirt, who was but a little before riding in my Coach; thin, and looking almost like one Starved, who was before fat and beautiful: The House that was before handsomely furnished with Pictures and Ornaments, Cabinets, Pier-Glasses, and every thing suitable, was now stripped and naked, most of the Goods having been seized by the Landlord for Rent, or sold to buy Necessaries; in a word, all was Misery and Distress, the Face of Ruin was every where to be seen; we had eaten up almost every thing, and little remained, unless, like one of the pitiful Women of *Jerusalem*, I should eat up my very Children themselves.

After these two good Creatures had sat, as I say, in silence some time, and had then looked about them, my Maid *Amy* came in, and brought with her a small Breast of Mutton, and two great Bunches of Turnips, which she intended to stew for our Dinner: As for me, my Heart was so overwhelmed at seeing these two Friends, for
such

suchth ey were, tho' poor, and at their seeing me in such a Condition, that I fell into another violent Fit of crying; so that, in short, I could not speak to them again for a great while longer.

During my being in such an Agony, they went to my Maid *Amy* at another Part of the same Room, and talked with her: *Amy* told them all my Circumstances, and set them forth in such moving Terms, and so to the Life, that I could not upon any Terms have done it like her myself, and in a Word, affected them both with it in such a manner, that the old Aunt came to me, and tho' hardly able to speak for Tears: Look ye, Cousin, said she, in a few Words, Things must not stand thus; some course must be taken and that forthwith; pray where were these Children born? I told her the Parish where we lived before, that four of them were born there; and one in the House where I now was, where the Landlord, after having seized my Goods for the Rent past, not then knowing my Circumstances, had now given me leave to live for a whole Year more without any Rent, being moved with Compassion; but that this Year was now almost expired.

Upon hearing this Account, they came to this Resolution: That the Children should be all carried by them to the Door of one of the Relations mentioned above, and be set down there by the Maid *Amy*, and that I the Mother, should remove for some Days, shut up Doors, and be gone; that the People should be told, that if they did not think fit to take some Care of the Children, they might send for the Church-Wardens if they thought that better; for that they were born in that Parish, and there they must be provided for; as for the other Child which was born in the Parish of —, that was already taken Care of by the Parish Officers there; for, indeed, they were so sensible of the Distress of the Family, that they had at first Word, done what was their Part to do.

This was what these good Women proposed, and bid me leave the rest to them. I was at first, sadly afflicted at the Thoughts of parting with my Children, and especially at that terrible thing, their being taken into the Parish-keeping, and then a hundred terrible things came into my Thoughts; viz. of Parish-Children being starved at Nurse; of their being ruined, let grow crooked, lam'd, and the like, for want of being taken care of; and this sunk my very Heart within me.

But the Misery of my Circumstances hardened my Heart against my own Flesh and Blood; and when I considered they must inevitably be starved, and I too, if I continued to keep them about me, I began to be reconciled to parting with them all any how, and any where, that I might be freed from the dreadful Necessity of seeing them all perish, and perishing with them myself: So I agreed to go away out of the House, and leave the Management of the whole Matter to my Maid *Amy*, and to them, and accordingly I did so; and the same Afternoon they carried them all away to one of their Aunts.

Ausy, a resolute Girl, knock'd at the Door, with the Children all with her, and bid the eldest, as soon as the Door was open, run in, and the rest after her: She set them all down at the Door before she knocked, and when she knock'd, she staid till a Maid-Servant came to the Door; Sweet-heart, said she, pray go in and tell your Mistress, here are her little Cousins come to see her from ---, naming the Town where we lived, at which the Maid offered to go back: Here Child. says *Amy*, take one of them in your Hand, and I'll bring the rest; so she gives her the least, and the Wench goes in mighty innocently with the little one in her Hand, upon which *Amy* turns the rest in after her, shuts the Door softly, and marches off as fast as she could.

Just in the Interval of this, and even while the Maid and her Mistress were quarrelling, for the Mistress raved and scolded at her like a mad Woman, and had ordered her to go and stop the Maid *Amy*, and turn all the Children out of the Doors again; but she had been at the Door, and *Amy* was gone, and the Wench was out of her Wits, and the Mistress too: I say, just at this Juncture came the poor old Woman, not the Aunt, but the other of the two that had been with me, and knocks at the Door; the Aunt did not go, because she had pretended to Advocate for me, and they would have suspected her of some Contrivance; but as for the other Woman, they did not so much as know that she had kept up any Correspondence with her.

Amy and she had concerted this between them, and it was well, enough contrived that they did so. When she came into the House, the Mistress was fuming and raging like one Distracted, and calling the Maid all the foolish Jades and Sluts that she could think of
and

and that she would take the Children and turn them all out into the Streets. The good poor Woman seeing her in such a Passion, turned about as if she would be gone again, and said, Madam, I'll come again another time, I see you are engaged. No, no, Mrs. ---, says the Mistress, I am not much engaged, sit down: This senseless Creature here has brought in my Fool of a Brother's whole House of Children upon me, and tells me that a Wench brought them to the Door, and thrust them in, and bid her carry them to me; but it shall be no Disturbance to me, for I have ordered them to be set in the Street, without the Door, and so let the Church-Wardens take Care of them, or else make this dull Jade carry them back to --- again, and let her that brought them into the World, look after them if she will; what does she send her Bratts to me for?

The last, indeed, had been the best of the two, says the poor Woman, if it had been to be done, and that brings me to tell you my Errand, and the Occasion of my coming, for I came on purpose about this very Business, and to have prevented this being put upon you, if I could; but I see I am come too late.

How do you mean too late, says the Mistress? What, have you been concerned in this Affair then? What, have you helped to bring this Family-flur upon us? I hope you do not think such a thing of me, Madam, says the poor Woman; but I went this Morning to ---, to see my old Mistress and Benefactor, for she had been very kind to me, and when I came to the Door, I found all fast and bolted, and the House looking as if nobody was at home.

I knocked at the Door, but nobody came, till at last some of the Neighbours Servants call'd to me and said, there's nobody lives there, Mistress, what do you knock for? I seemed surpriz'd at that: What, nobody live there! said I, what d'ye mean? Does not Mrs. --- live there? The answer was, no, she is gone; at which I parly'd with one of them, and ask'd her what was the Matter; Matter, says she, why 'tis Matter enough, the poor Gentlewoman has liv'd there all alone, and without any thing to subsist her a long time, and this Morning the Landlord turned her out of Doors.

Out of Doors! says I, what with all her Children, poor Lambs, what is become of them? Why truly, nothing worse, said they can come to them han staying here, for they were almost starved with

with Hunger; so the Neighbours seeing the poor Lady in such Distress, for she stood crying, and wringing her Hands over her Children like one distracted, sent for the Church-Wardens to take care of the Children; and they, when they came took the youngest, which was born in this Parish, and have got it a very good Nurse, and taken Care of it; but as for the other four, they had sent them away to some of their Father's Relations, and who were very substantial People, and who besides that, lived in the Parish where they were born.

I was not surpriz'd at this, as not presently to foresee that this Trouble would be brought upon you, or Mr. -----; so I came immediately to bring you word of it, that you might be prepared for it, and might not be surpriz'd, but I see they have been too nimble for me, so that I know not what to advise; the poor Woman, it seems is turned out of Doors into the Street; and another of the Neighbours there told me, that when they took her Children from her, she swooned away, and when they recovered her out of that, she run distracted, and is put into a mad House by the Parish; for there is nobody else to take any Care of her.

This was acted to the Life by this good, kind poor Creature; for tho' her Design was perfectly good and charitable, yet there was not one Word of it true in Fact; for I was not turned out of Doors by the Landlord, nor gone distracted; it was true indeed, that at parting with my poor Children I fainted, and was like one mad when I came to myself and found they were gone; but I remained in the House a good while after that; as you shall hear.

While the poor Woman was telling this dismal Story, in came the Gentlewoman's Husband, and tho' her Heart was hardned against all Pity, who was really and nearly related to the Children, for they were the Children of her own Brother; yet the good Man was quite softened with the dismal Relation of the Circumstances of the Family; and when the poor Woman had done, he said to his Wife, this is a dismal Case, my Dear, indeed, and something must be done: His Wife fell a raving at him, What says she, do you want to have four Children to keep? Have we not Children of our own? Would you have these Bratts come and eat up my Children's Bread? No, no, let 'em go to the Parish, and let them take Care of them, I'll take Care of my own. Come,

Come, come, my Dear, says the Husband, Charity is a Duty to the Poor, and *he that gives to the Poor, lends to the Lord*; let us lend our Heavenly Father a little of our Children's Bread, as you call it, it will be a Store well laid up for them, and will be the best Security that our Children shall never come to want Charity, or be turned out of Door as these poor innocent Creatures are.

Don't tell me of Security, says the Wife, 'tis a good Security for our Children, to keep what we have together, and provide for them, and then 'tis time enough to help other Folks Children; Charity begins at home.

Well, my Dear, says he again, I only talk of putting out a little Money to Interest, our Maker is a good Borrower, never fear making a bad Debt there Child; I'll be bound for it.

Don't banter me with your Charity, and your Allegories, says the Wife angrily; I tell you they are my Relations, not yours, and they shall not roost here, they shall go to the Parish.

All your Relations are my Relations now, says the good Gentleman very calmly, and I won't see your Relations in Distress and not pity them any more than I would my own; indeed, my Dear, they shan't go to the Parish, I assure you none of my Wife's Relations shall come to the Parish, if I can help it.

What will you take four Children to keep? says the Wife.

No, no, my Dear, says he, there's your Sister -----, I'll go and talk with her and your Uncle -----, I'll send for him and the rest; I'll warrant you when we are all together we will find Ways and Means to keep four poor little Creatures from Beggary and Starving, or else it will be very hard; we are none of us in so bad Circumstances but we are able to spare a Mite for the Fatherless; don't shut up your Bowels of Compassion against your own Flesh and Blood: Could you hear these poor innocent Children cry at your Door for Hunger, and give them no Bread.

Prithee what need they cry at our Door? says she, 'tis the Business of the Parish to provide for them, they shan't cry at our Door; if they do, I'll give them nothing: Won't you, says he, but I will remember that dreadful Scripture is directly against us, Prov. 21. 13. *Whoso stoppeth his Ears at the Cry of the Poor, he also shall cry himself, but shall not be heard.*

Well,

Well, well, *says she*, you must do what you will, because you pretend to be Master; but if I had my Will, I would send them where they ought to be sent, I would send them from whence they came.

Then the poor Woman put in, and said, but, Madam, that is sending them to starve indeed; for the Parish has no Obligation to take care of 'em, and so they would lie and perish in the Street.

Or be sent back again, *says the Husband*, to our Parish in a Cripple Cart, by the Justice's Warrant, and so expose us and all our Relations to the last Degree, among our Neighbours, and among those who knew the good old Gentleman their Grand-Father, who lived and flourished in this Parish so many Years, and was so well beloved among all People, and deserved it so well.

I don't value that one Farthing, not I, *says the Wife*, I'll keep none of them.

Well, my Dear, *says her Husband*, but I value it, for I won't have such a Blot lie upon the Family, and your Children; he was a worthy, antient and good Man, and his Name is respected among all his Neighbours, it will be a Reproach to you that are his Daughter, and to our Children, that are his Grand-Children, that we should let your Brother's Children perish, or come to be a Charge to the Publick, in the very Place where your Family once flourished: Come, say no more, I'll see what can be done.

Upon this, he sends and gathers all the Relations together at a Tavern hard by, and sent for the four little Children that they might see them: and they all at the first Word agreed to have them taken care of; and because his Wife was so furious that she would not suffer one of them to be kept at home, they agreed to keep them all together for a while; so they committed them to the poor Woman that had managed the Affair for them, and entered into Obligations to one another to supply the needfull Sums for their Maintainance; and not to have one separated from the rest, they sent for the Youngest from the Parish where it was taken in, and had them all brought up together.

It would take up too long a Part of this Story to give a particular Account of what a charitable Tenderness this good Person, who was but Uncle-in-Law to them, managed that Affair: How careful he was of them, went constantly to see them, and to see that they were well provided for, cloathed, put to School, and at last put out in the World for their Advantage, but 'tis enough to say he acted more like a Father

to them, than an Uncle in Law, tho' all along much against his Wife's Consent, who was of a Disposition not so tender and compassionate as her Husband.

You may believe I heard this with the same Pleasure which I now feel at the relating it again, for I was terribly frightened at the Apprehensions of my Children being brought to Misery and Distress, as those must be who have no Friends but are left to the Benevolence of a Parish.

I was now, however, entering on a new Scene of Life; I had a great House upon my Hands, and some Furniture left in it, but I was no more able to maintain myself and Maid *Amy* in it, than I was my five Children; nor had I any thing to subsist with, but what I might get by working, and that was not a Town where much Work was to be had.

My Landlord had been very kind indeed, after he came to know my Circumstances, tho' before I was acquainted with that Part he had gone so far as to seize my Goods, and carry some of them away too.

But I had lived three Quarters of a Year in his House after that and had not pay'd him any Rent, and which was worse, I was in no Condition to pay him any; however, I observed he came oftner to see me, looked kinder upon me, and spoke more friendly to me than he used to do, particularly the last two or three times he had been there, he observed, he said, how poorly I lived, how low I was reduced, and the like, told me it grieved him for my sake; and the last time of all he was kinder still, told me he came to Dine with me, and that I should give him leave to treat me; so he called my Maid *Amy*, and sent her out to buy a Joint of Meat, he told her what she should buy but naming two or three things, either of which she might take; the Maid, a cunning Wench, and faithful to me as the Skin on my Back did not buy any thing outright, but brought the Butcher along with her, with both the Things she had chosen, for him to please himself; the one was a large very good Leg of Veil the other a Piece of the Fore-Ribs of Roasting Beef; he looked at them, but bade me chaffer with the Butcher for him, and I did so, and came back to him and told him what the Butcher demanded for either of them, and what each of them came to; so he pulls out 11 s. and 3 d. which they came to together, and bade me take them both, the rest he said would serve another time.

I was

I was surprized, you may be sure, at the Bounty of a Man that had but a little while ago been my Terror, and had torn the Goods out of my House like a Fury, but I considered that my Distresses had mollified his Temper, and that he had afterwards been so compassionate as to give me leave to live Rentfree in the House a whole Year.

But now he put on the Face, not of a Man of Compassion only, but of a Man of Friendship and Kindness, and this was so unexpected, that it was surprising; we chatted together, and were, as I may call it, chearful, which was more than I could say I had been for three Years before; he sent for Wine and Beer too, for I had none; poor Amy and I had drank nothing but Water for many Weeks, and indeed, I have often wondered at the faithful Temper of the poor Girl, for which I but ill requited her at last.

When Amy was come with the Wine, he made her fill a Glafs to him and with the Glafs in his Hand, he came to me, and kissed me, which I was, I confess, a little surprized at, but more at what followed; for he told me, that as the sad condition which I was reduced to, had made him pity me, so my conduct in it, had given him a more than ordinary respect for me, and made him very thoughtful for my good; that he was resolved for the present to do something to relieve me, and to employ his Thoughts in the mean time, to see if he could, for the future, put me into a way to support myself.

While he found me change Colour, and look surprized at his Discourse, for so I did to be sure, he turns to my Maid Amy, and looking at her, he says no more, I say all this Madam, before your Maid because both she and you shall know that I have no ill design, and that I have, in meer Kindness, resolved to do something for you if I can, and as I have been a witness of the uncommon Honesty and Fidelity of Mrs. Amy here, to you in all your distresses, I know she may be trusted with so honest a design as mine is; for I assure you, I bear a proportioned regard to your Maid too, for her Affection to you.

Amy made him a Curtsie, and the poor girl look'd so confounded with Joy, that she could not speak, but her Colour came and went, and every now and then she blushed as red as Scarlet, and the next minute looked as pale as death: Well, having said this, he sat down, made me sit down, and then drank to me, and made me drink two glasses of Wine together; for says he, you have need of it, and so indeed I had; when he had done so, Come Amy, says he, with your Mistresses's leave
you

you shall have a glass too, and then rising up, and now Amy, f
he, go and get Dinner; and you, Madam, says he to me, go up
and dress you, and come down and smile and be merry; adding,
I'll make you easy if I can; and in the mean time he said, he
would walk in the Garden.

When he was gone, Amy chang'd her Countenance indeed, and
looked as merry as ever she did in her Life; Dear Madam! says she,
what does this Gentleman mean? Nay, Amy, said I, he means to
do us Good, you see, don't he? I know no other meaning he can
have, for he can get nothing by me: I warrant you Madam, says
she, he'll ask you a Favour by and by: No, no, you are mistaken
Amy, I dare say, said I, you heard what he said, didn't you? Ay,
ay, says Amy, it's no matter for that, you will see what he will
do after Dinner: Well, well, Amy, says I, you have hard Thoughts
of him, I cannot be of your Opinion; I don't see any Thing in
him yet that looks like it: As to that, Madam, says Amy, I don't
see any thing of it yet neither; but what should move a Gentleman
to take Pity of us, as he does? Nay, says I, that's a hard thing too,
that we should judge a man to be wicked because he's charitable;
and vicious because he's kind: O madam, says Amy, there's abun-
dance of Charity begins in that Vice, and he is not so unacquain-
ted with things, as not to know that Poverty is the strongest Incen-
tive; a Temptation, against which no Virtue is powerful enough to
stand out; he knows your Condition as well as you do: Well,
and what then? Why then he knows too that you are young and
handsome, and he has the surest Bait in the World to take you
with.

Well, Amy, said I, but he may find himself mistaken too in such
a Thing as that: Why, madam, says Amy, I hope you won't deny
him if he should offer it.

What do you mean by that, Hussy, said I, No, I'd starve first,
I hope not madam, I hope you would be wiser; I am sure if he
will set you up as he talks of, you ought to deny him nothing;
and you will starve if you do not consent, that's certain.

What consent to, I ye with him for Bread? Amy said I, How can
you talk so?

Nay, madam, says Amy, I don't think you would for any thing
else, it would not be Lawful for any Thing else but for Bread, ma-

dam; why no body can starve, there's no bearing that I am sure, Ay, says I, but if he would give me an Estate to live on, he should not lye with me, I assure you.

Why look you, madam, if he would but give you enough to live easy upon, he should lye with me for it with all my Heart.

That's a Token, *Amy*, of inimitable Kindness to me, said I, and I know not how to value it; but there's more Friendship than Honesty in it.

O Madam, says *Amy*, I'd do any thing to get you out of this sad Condition; as to Honesty, I think Honesty is out of the Question when Starving is the Case; are not we almost starved to Death?

I am indeed, said I, and thou art for my sake, but to be a Whore *Amy*! and there I stopt.

Dear Madam, says *Amy*, if I will starve for your sake, why I would die for you, if I were put to it.

Why that's an Excess of Affection, *Amy*, said I, I never met with before; I wish I may be ever in a Condition to make you some Returns suitable: But however, *Amy*, you shall not be a Whore to him, to oblige him to be kind to me; no, *Amy*, nor I won't be a Whore to him, if he would give much more than he is able to give me, or do for me.

Why Madam, says *Amy*, I don't say I will go and ask him, but I say, if he should promise to do so and so for you, and the Condition should be such, that he would not serve you unless I would let him lye with me, he should lye with me as often as he would, rather than you should not have his Assistance; but this is but Talk, Madam, I don't see any need of such Discourse, and you are of Opinion that there will be no need of it.

Indeed so I am, *Amy*, but, said I, if there was, I tell you again, I'd die before I would consent, or before you should consent for my sake.

Hitherto I had not only preserved the Virtue itself, but the virtuous Inclination and Resolution; and had I kept myself there, I had been happy, tho' I had perish'd of meer Hunger; for, without question, a Woman ought rather to die than prostitute her Virtue and Honour, let the Temptation be what it will.

But to return to my Story, he walked about the Garden, which was, indeed, all in Disorder, and over-run with Weeds, because I had

had not been able to hire a Gardener to do any thing to it, no not so much as to dig up the Ground enough to sow a few Turnips and Carrots for Family-Use: After he had view'd it, he came in, and sent *Amy* to fetch a poor Man, a Gardener, that used to help our Man-Servant, and carried him into the Garden, and ordered him to do several things in it, to put it in a little Order; and this took him up near an Hour.

By this Time I had dress'd me as well as I could, for though I had good Linnen left still, yet I had but a poor Head-Dress, and no Knots, but old Fragments, no Necklace nor Equipages all those things were gone long before for meer Bread.

However, I was tight and clean, and in better Plight than he had seen me in a great while, and he looked extremely pleas'd to see me so, for he said I look'd so disconsolate, and so afflicted before, that it griev'd him to see me; and he bad me pluck up a good Heart, for he hop'd to put me in a Condition to live in the World, and be beholden to no body.

I said that was impossible, for I must be beholden to him for it, for all the Friends I had in the World would not, or could not do so much for me as that he spoke of. Well, *Widow*, said he, for so he call'd me, and so indeed I was, in the worst Sense that desolate Word could be used in, if you are beholden to me you shall be beholden to no body else.

By this time Dinner was ready, and *Amy* came in to lay the Cloth, and indeed it was happy there was none to Dine but he and I, for I had but six Plates left in the House, and but two Dishes; however, he knew how things were, and bid me not scruple about bringing out what I had, he hop'd to see me in a better Plight, he did not come, *he said*, to be Entertain'd, but to Entertain me, and Comfort and Encourage me: Thus he went on, speaking so chearfully to me, and such chearful things, that it was a Cordial to my very Soul, to hear him speak.

Well, we went to Dinner, I'm sure I had not eat a good Meal hardly in a Twelvemonth, at least, not of such a Joint of Meat as the Loin of Veal was; I eat indeed very heartily, and so did he, and he made me drink three or four Glasses of Wine, so that, in short, my Spirits were lift'd to a Degree I had not been us'd to, and

and I was not only chearful, but merry, and so he press'd me to be.

I told him, I had a great deal of Reason to be merry, seeing he had been so kind to me, and had given me hopes of recovering me from the worst Circumstances that ever Woman of any sort of Fortune was run into; that he could not but believe that what he had said, was like Life from the Dead: that it was like recovering one Sick from the Brink of the Grave; how I should ever make a Return any way suitable, was what I had yet had no time to think of; I could only say, that I should never forget it while I had Life, and be should always ready to acknowledge it.

He said, That was all he desir'd of me, that his Reward would be, the Satisfaction of having rescued me from Misery; that he found he was obliging one that knew what Gratitude meant; that he would make it his Business to make me compleatly Easy, first or last, if it lay in his Power; and in the mean time, he bade me consider of any thing that I thought he might do for me, for my Advantage, and in order to make me perfectly easy.

After we had talk'd thus, he bade me be chearful; come, says he, lay aside these melancholly things, and let us be merry: *Amy* waited at the Table, and she smil'd, and laugh'd; and was so merry she could hardly contain it, for the Girl loved me to an Excess, hardly to be describ'd; and it was such an unexpected thing to hear any one talk to her Mistress, that the Wench was besides herself almost, and as soon as Dinner was over, *Amy* went up-Stairs, and put on her Best Cloaths too, and came down dress'd like a Gentlewoman.

We sat together talking of a thousand Things, of what had been, and what was to be, all the rest of the Day, and in the Evening he took his Leave of me, with a thousand Expressions of Kindness and Tenderness, and true Affection to me, but offer'd not the least of what my Maid *Amy* had suggested.

At his going away, he took me in his Arms, protested an honest Kindness to me; said a thousand kind things to me, which I cannot now recollect, and after kissing me twenty times, or thereabouts, put a Guinea into my Hand; which, he said, was for my present Supply, and told me, that he would see me again, before it was out; also he gave *Amy* half a Crown.

When

When he was gone, Well, Amy, said I, are you convinced now that he is an honest as well as a true Friend, and that there has been nothing, not the least Appearance of any thing of what you imagined in his Behaviour; Yes, says Amy, I am, but I admire at it; he is such a Friend as the World, sure, has not abundance of to show.

I am sure, says I, he is such a Friend as I have long wanted, and as I have as much Need of as any Creature in the World has, or ever had: and in short, I was so overcome with the Comfort of it, that I sat down and cried for Joy a good while, as I had formerly cried for Sorrow. Amy and I went to bed that Night, for Amy lay with me, pretty early, but lay chatting almost all night about it, and the girl was so transported, that she got up two or three times in the night, and danced about the Room in her shift; in short, the girl was half distracted with the Joy of it; a Testimony still of her violent Affection for her Mistress, in which no Servant ever went beyond her.

We heard no more of him for two Days, but the third Day he came again; then he told me, with the same Kindness, that he had ordered me a Supply of Household-Goods for the furnishing the House; that in particular, he had sent me back all the Goods he had seized for Rent, which consisted, indeed, of the best of my former Furniture; and now, says he, I'll tell you what I have had in my Head for you, for your present Supply, and that is, says he, that the House being well furnished, you shall let it out to Lodgings, for the Summer Gentry, says he, by which you will easily get a good comfortable Subsistence, especially seeing you shall pay me no Rent for two Years, nor after neither, unless you can afford it.

This was the first View I had of living comfortably indeed, and it was a very probable way, I must confess; seeing we had very good Conveniences, six Rooms on a Floor, and three Stories high: And while he was laying down a Scheme of my Management came a Cart to the Door with a Load of Goods, and an Upholsterer's Man to put them up; they were chiefly the Furniture of two Rooms, which he had carried away for his two Years Rent, with two fine Cabinets, and some Pier-Glasses, out of the Parlour, and several other valuable things.

H

These

These were all restor'd to their Places, and he told me he gave them me freely, as a Satisfaction for the Cruelty he had us'd me with before; and the Furniture of one Room being finished, and set up, he told me, he would furnish one Chamber for himself, and would come and be one of my Lodgers, if I would give him Leave.

I told him, he ought not to ask me Leave who had so much Right to make himself welcome; so the House began to look in some tollerable Figure, and clean; the Garden also, in about a Fortnight's Work, began to look something less like a Wilderness than it us'd to do; and he order'd me to put up a Bill for Letting Rooms, reserving one for himself, to come to as he saw Occasion.

When all was done to his Mind, as to placing the Goods, he seem'd very well pleas'd, and we dined together again of his own providing, and the Upholsterer's Man gone; after Dinner he took me by the Hand, Come, now Madam, says he, you must show me your House, for he had a Mind to see every thing over again. No Sir, said I, but I'll go show you your own House if you please; so we went up through all the Rooms, and in the Room which was appointed for himself Amy was doing something; well Amy, says he, I intend to Lye with you to Morrow-Night; To Night, if you please Sir, says she very innocently, your Room is quite ready. Well Amy, says he, I am glad you are so willing: No says she, I mean your Chamber is ready to-Night; and away she ran out of the Room ashamed enough; for the Girl meant no harm, whatever she had said to me in private.

However, he said no more then; but when Amy was gone, he walk'd about the Room and look'd at every thing, and taking me by the Hand, he kiss'd me, and spoke a great many kind affectionate things to me indeed; as of his Measures for my Advantage, and what he would do to raise me again in the World; told me, that my Afflictions, and the Conduct I had shewn in bearing them to such an Extremity, had so engag'd him to me, that he valued me infinitely above all the women in the world; that though he was under such Engagements that he could not Marry me, his wife and he had been parted, for some Reasons, which make too long a Story to intermix with mine; yet that he would be every thing else that a woman could ask in a Husband, and with that he kiss'd me again,

again, and took me in his Arms, but offered not the least uncivil Action to me, and told me, he hop'd I would not deny him all the Favours he should ask, because he resolv'd to ask nothing of me but what it was fit for a Woman of Virtue and Modesty, for such he knew me to be, to yield.

I confess, the terrible Pressure of my former Misery, the Memory of which lay heavy upon my Mind, and the surprizing Kindness with which he had delivered me, and withal, the Expectations of what he might still do for me, were powerful things, and made me have scarce the Power to deny him any thing he would ask; however, I told him thus, with an Air of Tenderneſs too, that he had done so much for me, that I thought I ought to deny him nothing, only I hop'd, and depended upon him, that he would not take the Advantage of the infinite Obligations I was under to him, to desire any thing of me, the yielding to which would lay me lower in his Esteem than I desired to be; that as I took him to be a Man of Honour, so I knew he could not like me the better for doing any thing that was below a Woman of Honesty and Good Manners to do.

He told me, that he had done all this for me, without so much as telling me what Kindness or real Affection he had for me; that I might not be under any Necessity of yielding to him in any thing, for want of Bread; and he would no more oppress my Gratitude now, than he would my Necessity before, nor ask any thing, supposing he would stop his Favours, or withdraw his Kindness, if he was deny'd; it was true, he said, he might tell me more freely his Mind now, than before, seeing I had let him see that I accepted his Assistance, and saw that he was sincere in his Design of serving me; that he had gone thus far to shew me that he was kind to me, but that now he would tell me, that he lov'd me, and yet would demonstrate that his Love was both honourable, and what he should desire, was what he might honestly ask, and I might honestly grant.

I answer'd, That within these two Limitations I was sure I ought to deny him nothing, and I should think myself not ungrateful only, but very unjust, if I should; so he said no more, but I observed he kiss'd me more, and took me in his Arms in a kind of familiar Way, more than usual, and which once or twice put me in Mind

Mind of my Maid's Words; and yet, I must acknowledge, I was so overcome with his Goodness to me in those many kind thing he had done, that I not only was easy at what he did, and made no Resistance, but was inclined to do the like, whatever he offer'd to do: But he went no further than what I have said, nor did he offer so much as to sit down on the Bed-side with me, but took his Leave, said he lov'd me tenderly, and would convince me of it by such Demonstrations as should be to my Satisfaction: I told him, I had a great deal of Reason to believe him; that was full Master of the whole House, and of me, as far as was within the Bounds we had spoken of, which I believ'd he would not break; and asked him if he would not Lodge that Night.

He said, he could not stay that Night, Business requiring him in London, but added, smiling, that he would come the next Day, and take Night's Lodging with me. I press'd him to stay that Night, and told him, I should be glad a Friend so valuable should be under the same Roof with me; and Indeed, I began at that time not only to be much obliged to him, but to love him too, and that in a Manner that I had not been acquainted with myself.

O let no Woman slight the Temptation that being generously delivered from Trouble, is to any Spirit furnish'd with Gratitude and just Principles: This Gentleman had freely and voluntarily delivered me from Misery, from Poverty, and Rags; he had made me what I was, and put me into a Way to be even more than ever I was, namely to live happy and pleased, and on his Bounty I depended: What could I say to this Gentleman when he press'd me to yield to him, and argued the Lawfulness of it? But of that in it's Place.

I press'd him again to stay that Night, and told him it was the first compleatly happy Night that I had ever had in the House in my Life, and I should be very sorry to have it be without his Company, who was the Cause and Foundation of it all; that we would be innocently merry, but that it could never be without him; and, in short, I counted him so, that he said, he could not deny me, but he would take his Horse and go to London, do the Business he had to do, which it seems, was to pay a Foreign Bill that was due that Night, and would else be protested; and that he would come back in three Hours at farthest, and Sup with me,
but

but bade me get nothing there, for since I was resolved to be merry, which was what he desired above all things, he would send me something from London, and we will make it a Wedding Supper, my Dear, says he, and with that Word, took me in his Arms, and kiss'd me so vehemently, that I made no question but he intended to do every thing else that Amy had talked of.

I started a little at the Word Wedding: What do you mean? to call it such a Name, says I; adding, We will have a Supper, but t'other is impossible, as well on your Side as mine; he laugh'd, Well, says he, you shall call it what you will, but it may be the same thing, I shall satisfy you, it is not so impossible as you make it.

I don't understand you, said I, have not I a Husband, and you a Wife?

Well, well, says he, we will talk of that after Supper; so he rose up, gave me another Kiss, and took his Horse for London.

This kind of Discourse had fired my Blood, I confess, and I knew not what to think of it; it was plain now that he intended to lye with me, but how he would reconcile it to a legal thing, like a Marriage, that I could not imagine: We had both of us us'd Amy with so much Intimacy, and trusted her with every thing, having such unexampled Instances of her Fidelity, that he made no Scruple to kiss me, and say all these things to me before her, nor had he cared one Farthing if I would have let him lay with me, to have had Amy there too all Night. When he was gone, Well Amy, says I, what will all this come to now? I am all in a Sweat at him: Come to, Madam, says Amy, I see what it will come to, I must put you to Bed to Night together: Why you would not be so impudent, you Jade you, says I, would you? Yes I would, says she, with all my Heart, and think you both as honest as ever you were in your Lives.

What ails the Slut to talk so? says I, Honest! How can it be Honest? Why I'll tell you, Madam, says Amy, I sounded it as soon as I heard him speak, and it is very true too; he calls you Widow, and such indeed you are; for as my Master has left you so many Years, he is dead to be sure; at least, he is dead to you; he is no Husband, you are, and ought to be free to marry who you will; and his Wife being gone from him, and refuses to lye with him, then he is a single Man again, as much as ever; and though you
I cannot

cannot bring the Laws of the Land to join you together, yet one refusing to do the Office of a Wife, and the other of a Husband; you may certainly take one another fairly.

Nay, Amy, says I, if I could take him fairly, you may be sure I'd take him above all the Men in the World; it turn'd the very Heart within me, when I heard him say he loved me; How could it do otherwise? when you know what a Condition I was in before; despised, and trampled on by all the World; I could have took him in my Arms, and kissed him as freely as he did me, if it had not been for Shame.

Ay, and all the rest too, says Amy, at the first Word; I don't see how you can think of denying him any thing; has he not brought you out of the Devils Clutches; brought you out of the blackest Misery that ever poor Lady was reduced to? Can a Woman deny such a Man any thing?

Nay, I don't know what to do Amy, says I; I hope he won't desire any thing of that Kind of me, I hope he won't attempt it; if he does, I know not what to say to him.

Not ask you, says Amy, depend upon it he will ask you, and you will grant it too; I am sure my Mistress is no Fool; come, pray Madam let me go air you a clean Shift; don't let him find you in foul Linnen the Wedding-Night.

But that I know you to be a very honest Girl, Amy, says I, you would make me abhor you; why, you argue for the Devil, as if you were one of his Privy-Counsellors.

It is no matter for that, Madam, I say nothing but what I think; you own you love this Gentleman, and he has given you sufficient Testimony of his Affection to you; your Conditions are alike unhappy, and he is of Opinion that he may take another Woman, his first wife having broke her Honour, and living from him, and that though the Laws of the Land will not allow him to marry formally, yet, that he may take another woman into his Arms, provided he keeps true to the other woman as a wife; nay he says it is usual to do so, and allowed by the Custom of the Place, in several Countries abroad; and I must own I am of the same Mind; else it is in the Power of a whore, after she has jilted and abandoned her Husband, to confine him from the Pleasure as well as Convenience of a woman all Days of his Life, which would be very unreasonable; and

and as Times go, not tollerable to all People; and the like on your side, Madam.

Had I now had my Senses about me, and had my Reason not been overcome by the powerful Attraction of so kind, so beneficent a Friend; had I consulted Conscience and Virtue, I should have repelled this Amy, however faithful and honest to me in other things, as a Viper, and Engine of the Devil; I ought to have remembred that neither he nor I, either by the Laws of God or Man, could come together upon any other Terms than that of notorious Adultery.

But the Poverty was my Snare; dreadful Poverty! the Misery I had been in, was great, such as would make the Heart tremble at the Apprehensions of its Return; and I might appeal to any that has had any Experience of the World, whether one so entirely destitute as I was, of all manner Helpes, or Friends, either to support me, or to assist me to support myself, could withstand the Proposal; not that I plead this as a Justification of my Conduct, but that it may move the Pity, even of those that abhor the Crime.

Besides this, I was young, handsome, and with all the Mortifications I had met with, was vain, and that not a little; and as it was a new thing, so it was a pleasant thing, to be courted, caress'd, embrac'd, and high Professions of Affection made to me by a Man so agreeable, and so able to do me good.

And to this, that if I had ventur'd to disoblige this Gentleman, I had no Friend in the World to have Recourse to; I had no Prospect, no, not of a Bit of Bread; I had nothing before me, but to fall back into the same Misery that I had been in before.

Amy had but too much Rhetorick in this Cause; she represented all those Things in their proper Colours; she argued them all with her utmost Skill, and at last, the merry Jade, when she came to dress me, Look ye, Madam, said she, if you won't consent, tell him you'll do as *Rachael* did to *Jacob*, when she could have no Children, put her Maid to Bed to him; tell him you cannot comply with him, but there's Amy, he may ask her the Question, she has promised she won't deny you.

And would you have me say so, Amy? said I.

No, Madam, but I would really have you do so, besides you are undone if you do not; and if my doing it would save you from
bein

being undone, as said before, he shall if he will; if he asks me, I won't deny him, not I; Hang me if I do, says *Amy*.

Well, I know not what to do, says *I*, to *Amy*.

Do! says *Amy*, Your Choice is fair and plain; here you may have a handsome, charming Gentleman, be rich, live pleasantly, and in plenty; or refuse him, and want a Dinner, go in Rags, live in Tears; in short beg and starve; you know this is the Case, Madam, says *Amy*, I wonder how you can say you know not what to do.

Well, *Amy*, says *I*, the Case is as you say, and I think verily I must yield to him; but then, said *I*, mov'd by Conscience, don't talk any more of your Cant, of its being Lawful that I ought to Marry again, and that he ought to Marry again, and such Stuff as that's 'tis all Nonsense, says *I*, *Amy*, there's nothing in it, let me hear no more of that; for if I yield, 'tis in vain to mince the Matter, I am a Whore, *Amy*, neither better nor worse, I assure you.

I don't think so, Madam, by no means, says *Amy*, I wonder how you can talk so; and then she run on with her Argument of the Unreasonableness that a Woman should be obliged to live single, or a Man to live single in such Cases, as before: Well, *Amy*, said *I*, come let us dispute no more, for the longer I enter into that Part, the greater my Scruples will be; but if I let it alone, the Necessity of my present Circumstances is such, that I believe I shall yield to him, if he should importune me much about it, but I should be glad he would not do it at all, but leave me as I am.

As to that, Madam, you may depend, says *Amy*, he expects to have you for his Bedfellow to Night; I saw it plainly in his Management all Day, and at last he told you so too, as plain I think, as he could: Well, well *Amy*, said *I*, I don't know what to say, if he will he must I think, I don't know how to resist such a Man, that has done so much for me: I don't know how you should says *Amy*.

Thus *Amy* and I canvas'd the Business between us; the Jade prompted the Crime, which I had but too much Inclination to commit; that is to say, not as a Crime, for I had nothing of the Vice in my Constitution; my Spirits were far from being high; my Blood had no Fire in it to kindle the Flame of Desire; but the

Kindness

Kindness and good Humour of the Man, and the dread of my own Circumstances concurred to bring me to the Point, and I even resolved, before he asked, to give up my Virtue to him, whenever he should put it to the Question.

In this I was a double Offender, whatever he was; for I was resolved to commit the Crime, knowing and owning it to be a Crime; he, if it was true as he said, was fully persuaded it was Lawful, and in that Persuasion he took the Measures, and used all the Circumlocutions which I am going to speak of.

About two Hours after he was gone, came a *Leaden-Hall* Basket-Woman, with a whole Load of good Things for the Mouth; the Particulars are not to the Purpose, and brought Orders to get Supper by eight a-Clock; however, I did not intend to begin dressing any thing till I saw him; and he gave me time enough, for he came before Seven; so that *Amy*, who had gotten one to help her, got every thing ready in Time.

We sat down to Supper about Eight, and were indeed very merry; *Amy* made us some Sport, for she was a Girl of Spirit and Wit, and with her Talk made us laugh very often, and yet the Jade managed her Wit with all the good Manners imaginable.

But to shorten the Story; after Supper he took me up into his Chamber, where *Amy* had made a very good Fire, and there he pulled out a great many Papers, and spread them upon a little Table, and then took me by the Hand, and after kissing me very much, he entered into a Discourse of his Circumstances, and of mine, how they agreed in several things exactly; for Example, That I was abandoned of a Husband in the Prime of my Youth and Vigour, and he of a Wife in his Middle-Age; how the End of Marriage was destroyed by the Treatment we had either of us received; and it would be very hard that we should be ry'd by the Formality of the Contract, where the Essence of it was destroy'd: I interrupted him, and told him, There was a vast difference between our Circumstances, and that in the most essential Part; namely, That he was Rich, and I was Poor; that he was above the World, and I infinitely below it; that his Circumstances were very easie, mine miserable, and this was an inequality the most essential that could be imagined. As to that, my Dear, said he, I have taken such Measures as shall make an Equality still: and with that

he shewed me a Contract in Writing, wherein he engaged himself to me; to cohabit constantly with me; to provide for me in all respects as a Wife; and repeating in the Preamble a long Account of the Nature and Reason of our living together, and an Obligation in the Penalty of seven Hundred Pounds never to abandon me; and at last, shewed me a Bond of five Hundred Pounds to be paid to me, or to my Assigns, within three Months after his Death.

He read over all these Things to me, and then in a most obliging affectionate Manner, and in Words not to be answered, *he said*, Now, my Dear, is this not sufficient? Can you object any thing against it? If not, as I believe you will not, then let us debate this Matter no longer; with that he pulled out a silk Purse, which had threescore Guineas in it, and threw them into my Lap, and concluded the rest of his Discourse with Kisses, and Protestations of his Love; of which indeed I had abundant Proof.

Pity human Frailty, you that read of a Woman reduced in her Youth and Prime, to the utmost Misery and Distress; and raised again, as above, by the unexpected and surprising Bounty of a Stranger; I say pity her if she was not able, after all these things, to make any more Resistance.

However, I stood out a little longer still, I asked him, How he could expect that I could come into a Proposal of such a Consequence, the very first Time it was moved to me? and that I ought (if I consented to it) to capitulate with him, that he should never upbraid me with Easiness, and consenting too soon. *He said*, No; but on the contrary, he would take it as a Mark of the greatest Kindness I could show him; then he went on to give Reasons why there was no Occasion to use the ordinary Ceremony of Delay, or to wait a reasonable Time of Courtship, which was only to avoid Scandal; but as this was private, it had nothing of that Nature in it; that he had been courting me some Time by the best of Courtship, *viz.* doing Acts of Kindness to me; and that he had given Testimonies of his sincere Affection to me by Deeds, not by flattering Trifles, and the usual Courtship of Words, which were often found to have very little Meaning; that he took me not as a Mistress, but as his Wife; and protested, it was clear to him he might lawfully do it, and that I was perfectly at Liberty; and assured me by all that it was possible for an honest Man to say, that he would treat me

me as his Wife as long as he lived : In a Word, he conquered all the little Resistance I intended to make ; he protested he loved me above all the World, and begged I would for once believe him ; that he had never deceived me, and never would, but would make it his Study to make my Life comfortable and happy, and to make me forget the Misery I had gone through. I stood still a-while, and said nothing, but seeing him eager for my Answer, I smil'd, and looking up at him, And must I then, *says I*, say Yes at first asking ? Must I depend upon your Promise ? Why then, *said I*, upon the Faith of that Promise, and in the Sense of that inexpressible Kindness you have shown me, you shall be obliged, and I shall be wholly yours to the End of my Life ; with that, I took his Hand which held me by the Hand, and gave it a Kiss.

And thus in Gratitude for the Favours I received from a Man, was all sense of Religion, and Duty to God, all Regard to Virtue and Honour, given up at once, and we were to call one another Man and Wife, who in the Sense of the Laws, both of God and our Country, were no more than two Adulterers, in short, a Whore and a Rogue ; nor, as I have said before, was my Conscience silent in it, tho' it seems his was ; for I sinned with open eyes, and thereby had a double Guilt upon me ; as I always said his Notions were of another Kind, and he either was before of the Opinion, or argued himself into it now, that we were both free, and might lawfully marry.

But I was quite of another side, nay, and my Judgment was right but my Circumstances were my Temptation ; the Terrors behind me looked blacker than the Terrors before me ; and the dreadful Argument of wanting Bread, and being run into the horrible Distresses I was in before, mastered all my Resolution, and I gave myself up as above.

The rest of the Evening we spent very agreeably to me ; he was perfectly good humoured, and was at that time very merry ; then he made Amy dance with him, and I told him I would put Amy to Bed to him ; Amy said, with all her Heart, she never had been a Bride in her Life ; in short, he made the girl so merry, that had he not been to lie with me the same night, I believe he would play the Fool with Amy for half an Hour and the Girl would no more have refused him than I intended to do ; yet before, I had always found

found her a very modest Wench, as any I ever saw in all my life ; but, in short, the Mirth of that Night, and a few more such afterwards, ruined the Girl's Modesty for ever, as shall appear by and by, in its Place.

So far does fooling and toying sometimes go, that I know nothing a young Woman has to be more cautious of; so far had this innocent Girl gone in jesting between her and I, and in talking that she would let him lie with her, if he would but be kinder to me, that at last she let him lie with her in earnest; and so empty was I now of all Principle, that I encouraged the doing it almost before my Face.

I say but too justly, that I was empty of Principle, because, as above, I had yielded to him, not as deluded to believe it lawful, but as overcome by his Kindness, and terrified at the Fear of my own Misery, if he should leave me; so with my Eyes open, and with my Conscience, as I may say, awake, I sinned, knowing it to be a Sin, but having no Power to resist? when this had thus made a Hole in my Heart, and I was come to such a Height as to transgress against the Light of my own Conscience, I was then fit for any Wickedness, and Conscience left off speaking, where it found it could not be heard.

But to return to our Story; having consented, as above, to his Proposal, we had not much more to do; he gave me my Writings, and the Bond for my Maintenance during his Life, and for 500 l. after his Death; and so far was he from abating his Affection to me afterwards, that two Years after we were thus, as he called it, Married, he made his Will, and gave me a thousand Pounds more, and all my Household-Stuff, Plate, &c. which was very considerable besides.

Amy put us to Bed, and my new Friend, I cannot call him Husband, was so well pleased with Amy, for her Fidelity and Kindness to me, that he paid her all the Arrear of her Wages that I owed her, and gave her five Guineas over, and had it gone no farther; Amy had richly deserved what she had, for never was a Maid so true to a Mistress in such dreadful Circumstances as I was in; nor was what followed more her own Fault than mine, who led her almost into it at first, and quite into it at last; and this may be a farther Testimony what a hardness of Crime I was now arrived

to,

to, which was owing to the Conviction that was from the Beginning, upon me, that I was a Whore, not a Wife ; nor could I ever frame my Mouth to call him Husband, or to say my Husband when I was speaking of him.

We lived, surely, the most agreeable Life, the grand Exception only excepted, that ever two lived together, he was the most obliging Gentleman, and the most tender of me, that ever Woman gave herself up to ; nor was there ever the least Interruption to our mutual Kindness, no not to the last Day of his Life : But I must bring Amy's disaster in at once, that I may have done with her.

Amy was dressing me one Morning, for now I had two Maids, and Amy was my Chamber Maid ; dear Madam, says Amy, what a'n't you with Child yet ? No, Amy, says I, nor any Sign of it : Law, Madam, says Amy, what have you been doing ? Why you have been married a Year and a half, I warrant you my Master would have got me with Child twice in that Time : It may be so, Amy, says I, let him try, can't you : No, says Amy, you'll forbid it now ; before I told you he should with all my Heart, but I will not now, for he is all your own : O, says I, Amy, I'll freely give you my Consent, it will be nothing at all to me ; nay, I'll put you to Bed to him myself one Night or other, if you are willing . No, Madam, no, says Amy, not now he's yours

Why you Fool you, *says I*, don't I tell you I'll put you to bed to him myself.

Nay, nay, *says Amy*, if you put me to Bed to him, that's another Case ; I believe I shall not rise again very soon.

I'll venture that, *Amy, says I*.

After Supper, that Night, and before we were risen from Table, *I said to him*, Amy being by, Hark ye, Mr. —, Do you know that you are to lye with Amy to-Night ? No, not I, *says he* ; but turns to Amy, Is it so, Amy, *says he* ? No, Sir, *said she*. Nay, don't say no, you Fool ; Did not I promise to put you to-Bed to him ? But the Girl said No still, and it passed off.

At Night, when we came to go to-Bed, Amy came into the Chamber to undress me, and her Master slipt into Bed first ; then I began and told him all that Amy had said about my not being with Child, and of her being with Child twice in the Time : Ay, Mrs. Amy, *says he*, I believe so too, Come hither, and we'll try ; but Amy

did not go: Go, you Fool, *says I*, can't you, I freely give you both Leave; but *Amy* would not go: Nay, you Whore, *says I*, you said, if I would put you to-Bed, you would with all our Heart; and with that I sat her down, pull'd off her Stockings and Shoes, and all her Cloaths, Piece by Piece, and led her to the Bed to him: *Here, says I, try what you can do with your Maid Amy.* She pull'd back a little, would not let me pull off her Cloaths at first, but it was hot Weather, and she had not many Cloaths on, and particularly no Stays; and at last, when she saw I was in earnest, she let me do what I would; so I fairly strip'd her, and then I threw open the Bed, and thrust her in.

I need say no more; this is enough to convince any-body that I did not think him my Husband, and that I had cast off all Principle, and all Modesty, and had effectually stifled Conscience.

Amy, I dare say, began now to repent, and would fain have got out of Bed again; but he said to her, Nay *Amy*, you see your Mistress has put you to-Bed, 'tis all her doing, you must blame her; so he held her fast, and the Wench being naked in the Bed with him, 'twas too late to look back, so she lay still, and let him do what he would with her.

Had I looked upon myself as a Wife, you cannot suppose I would have been willing to have let my Husband lye with my Maid, and much less before my Face, for I stood by all the while; but as I thought myself a Whore, I cannot say but that it was something design'd in my Thoughts, that my Maid should be a Whore too, and should not reproach me with it.

Amy, however, less vicious than I, was grievously out of Sorts the next Morning, and cry'd, and took on most vehemently; that she was ruin'd and undone, and there was no pacifying of her: she was a Whore, a Slut, and she was undone! undone! and cry'd almost all Day; I did all I could to pacify her: A Whore! *says I*, well, and am not I a whore as well as you? No, no, *says Amy*, no, you are not, for you are Marry'd; not I *Amy*, *says I*, I do not pretend to it; he may marry you to Morrow if he will, for any thing I could do to hinder it, I am not marry'd, I do not look upon it as any thing: Well, all did not pacify *Amy*, but she cry'd two or three Days about it; but it wore off by Degrees.

But the Case differed between *Amy* and her Master exceedingly; for

for *Amy* retained the same kind Temper she always had; but on the contrary, he was quite altered, for he hated her heartily, and could, I believe, have killed her after it, and he told me so, for he thought this a vile Action; whereas what he and I had done, he was perfectly easy in, thought it just, and esteemed me as much his Wife as if we had been Marry'd from our Youth, and had neither of us known any other; nay he loved me, I believe, as entire- as if I had been the Wife of his Youth; nay, he told me it was true, in one Sense, that he had two Wives, but that I was the Wife of his Affection, the other the Wife of his Aversion.

I was extremely concerned at the Aversion he had taken to my Maid *Amy*, and used my utmost Skill to get it altered; for though he had indeed debauch'd the Wench, I knew that I was the principal Occasion of it; and as he was the best humour'd Man in the World, I never gave him over till I prevailed with him to be easy with her, and as I was now become the Devil's Agent, to make others as wicked as myself, I brought him to lye with her several times after that, till at last, as the poor Girl said, so it happened, and she was really with Child.

She was terribly concerned at it, and so was he too: Come, my Dear *says I*, when *Rachael* put her Handmaid to Bed to *Jacob*, she took the Children as her own; don't be uneasie, I'll take the Child as my own; Had not I a Hand in the Frolick of putting her to Bed to you? It was my Fault as much as yours; so I called *Amy*, and encouraged her too, and told her, that I would take care of the Child and her too, and added the same Argument to her; for, *says I*, *Amy*, it was all my Fault; Did not I drag your Cloaths off of your Back, and put you to Bed to him: Thus I that had, indeed, been the Cause of all the Wickedness between them, encouraged them both when they had any Remorse about it, and rather prompted them to go on with it, then to repent of it.

When *Amy* grew Big, she went to a Place I had provided for her, and the Neighbours knew nothing but that *Amy* and I was parted; she had a fine Child indeed, a Daughter, and we had it nurs'd, and *Amy* came again in about half a Year, to live with her old Mistress; but neither my Gentleman, or *Amy* either, cared for playing that Game over again; for as he said, the Jade might bring him a House-full of Children to keep.

We lived as merrily, and as happily after this as could be expected, considering our Circumstances; I mean as to the pretended Marriage, &c. and as to that, my Gentleman had not the least Concern about him for it; but as much as I was harden'd, and that was as much I believe as ever any Creature was, yet I could not help it; there was, and would be, Hours of Intervals, and of dark Reflections which came involuntarily in, and thrust in Sighs into the middle of all my Songs; and there would be, sometimes, a heaviness of Heart, which intermingled itself with all my Joy, and which often fetch'd a Tear from my Eye; and let others pretend what they will, I believe it impossible to be otherwise with any body; there can be no substantial Satisfaction in a Life of known Wickedness; Conscience will, and does often break in upon them at particular times, let them do what they can to prevent it.

But I am not to preach, but to relate, and whatever loose Reflections were, and how often soever those dark Intervals came on, I did my utmost to conceal them from him; ay, and to suppress and smother them too in myself, and to outward appearance we lived as chearfully, and as agreeably, as it was possible for any Couple in the World to live.

After I had thus lived with him something above two Years, truly, I found myself with Child too; my Gentleman was mightily pleased at it, and nothing could be kinder than he was in the Preparations he made for me, and for my Lying-in, which was, however, very private, because I car'd for as little Company as possible; nor had I kept up my neighbourly Acquaintance; so that I had nobody to invite upon such an Occasion.

I was brought to Bed very well (of a Daughter, as well as *Amy*) but the Child died at about six Weeks, so all the Work was to do over again, that is to say, the Charge, the Expence, the Travel, &c.

The next Year I made him amends, and brought him a Son, to his great satisfaction, it was a charming Child, and did very well: After this my Husband, as he called himself, came to me one Evening, and told me he had a very difficult thing happened to him, which he knew not what to do in, or how to resolve about, unless I would make him easy; this was, that his Occasions required him to go over to France for about two Months.

Well my dear says I, and how shall I make you easy?

Why

Why by consenting to let me go, says he, upon which Condition I'll tell you the occasion of my going, that you may judge of the Necessity there is for it on my side; then to make me easy in his going, he told me he would make his Will before he went, which should be to my full Satisfaction.

I told him the latter part was so kind, that I could not decline the first Part, unless he would give me leave to add, that if it was not for putting him to an extraordinary Expence, I would go over along with him.

He was so well pleased with this Offer, that he told me he would give me full Satisfaction for it, and accept of it too; so he took me to London with him the next Day, and there he made his Will and shewed it to me, and sealed it before proper Witnesses and then gave it to me to keep: In this Will he gave a thousand Pounds to a Person of his Acquaintance in trust, to pay it with the Interest from the Time of his Decease, to me or my Assigns; then he willed the Payment of my Jointure, as he called it, viz. his Bond of a Hundred Pounds after his Death, also he gave me all my Household-Stuff, Plate, &c.

This was a most engaging thing for a Man to do to one under my Circumstances; and it would have been hard, as I told him, to deny him any thing, or to refuse to go with him any where, so we settled every thing as well as we could; left *Amy* in Charge with the House; and for his other Business, which was in Jewels, he had two Men which he entrusted, who he had good Security for, and who managed for him, and corresponded with him.

Things being thus concerted, we went away to *France*, arrived safe at *Calais*, and by easy Journeys came, in eight Days more, to *Paris*; where we lodged in the House of an *English* Merchant of his Acquaintance, and was very courteously entertained.

My Gentleman's Business was with some Persons of the first Rank, and to whom he had sold some Jewels of very good Value, and received a great Sum of Money in Specie, and, as he told me in private, he gained three Thousand Pistoles by his Bargain, but would not suffer the most intimate Friend he had there, to know what he had received; for it is not so safe a thing in *Paris*, to have a great Sum of Money in keeping, as it might be in *London*.

We made this Journey much longer than we intended; and my

Gentleman sent for one of his Managers in *London*, to come over to us to *Paris* with some Diamonds, and sent him back to *London* again to fetch more; then other Business fell into his Hands so unexpectedly, that I began to think we should take up our constant Residence there, which I was not very averse to, it being my Native Country, and I spoke the Language perfectly well; so we took a good House in *Paris*, and lived very well there; and I sent for *Ammy* to come over to me, for I lived gallantly, and my Gentleman was, two or three times, going to keep me a Coach, but I declin'd it, especially at *Paris*; but as they have those Conveniencies by the Day there, at a certain Rate, I had an Equipage provided for me whenever I pleased, and I lived here in a very good Figure, and might have lived higher if I pleased.

But in the middle of all this Felicity, a dreadful Disaster befel me, which entirely unhinged all my Affairs, and threw me back into the same state of Life that I was in before, with this one happy Exception however, that whereas before I was poor even to misery, now I was not only provided for, but very rich.

My gentleman had the Name in *Paris* for a very rich Man, and indeed he was so, though not so immensely rich as People imagined; but that which was fatal to him was, that he generally carried a flagreen case in his pocket, especially when he went to court, or to the houses of any of the Princes of the Blood, in which he had Jewels of very great value.

It happened one day, that being to go to Versailles, to wait upon the prince of -----, he came up into my chamber in the morning, and laid out his Jewel-case, because he was not going to show any Jewels, but to get a foreign bill accepted, which he had received from Amsterdam; so when he gave me the Case, he said, my Dear, I think I need not carry this with me, because it may be, I may not come back till night, and it is too much to venture; I returned, then my Dear you shall not go, Why, says he, because as they are too much for you, so you are too much for me to venture; and you shall not go, unless you will promise me not to stay so as to come back in the night.

I hope there is no Danger, said he, seeing I have nothing about me of any Value; and therefore lest I should take that too, says he, and

and gives me his gold Watch, and a rich Diamond, which he had in a Ring, and always wore on his Finger.

Well, but my Dear says I, you make me more uneasy now than before, for if you apprehend no Danger, why do you use this Caution? And if you apprehend there is any Danger, Why do you go at all.

There is no Danger, says he, if I do not stay late, and I do not design it.

Then promise me that you will not go, or else I cannot let you go.

I won't indeed, my Dear, says he, unless I am obliged to it; I assure you I do not intend it; but if I should, I am at present not worth robbing, for I have nothing about me, but about six Pistoles in my little purse, and that little Ring, shewing me a small Diamond one, worth about ten or twelve Pistoles, which he put upon his Finger, in the room of the rich Diamond Ring that he generally wore.

I still pressed him not to stay late, and he said he would not; but if I am kept late says he, beyond my Expectation, I'll stay all Night and come next Morning: This seemed a very good Caution, but still my Mind was very uneasy about him, and I told him so and entreated him not to go; I told him I did not know what might be the Reason, but that I had a strange Terror upon my Mind about his going, and that if he did go, I was perswaded some Harm would attend him; he smil'd, and return'd, Well my Dear, if it should be so, you are now richly provided for; all that I have here I give to you; and with that he takes up the Casket, or Case, Here, *says he*, hold your Hand, there is a good Estate for you in this Case; if any thing happens to me 'tis all your own, I give it you for yourself; and with that he put the Casket, the fine Ring, and Gold Watch, all into my Hands, and the Key of his Scrutore besides; adding, and in my Scrutore there is some Money, 'tis all your own.

I stared at him, as if I was frighted, for I thought all his Face look'd like a Death's Head; and then, immediately, I thought I perceived his Head all Bloody; and then his Cheeks look'd Bloody too; and immediately it all went off, and he looked as he really did; immediately I fell a crying, and hung about him, My Dear,

said I, I am frightned to Death; you shall not go, depend upon it, some Mischief will befall you; I did not tell him how my vapourish Fancy had represented him unto me, that I thought was not proper; besides he would only have laugh'd at me, and would have gone away with a Jest about it: But I press'd him seriously not to go that Day, or if he did, to promise me to come home to *Paris* again by Day-light. He look'd a little graver then than he did before; and told me, he was not apprehensive of the least Danger; but if there was, he would either take Care to come in the Day, or, as he had said before, would stay all Night.

But all these Promises came to nothing; for he was set upon in the open Day and robb'd, by three Men on Horseback, mask'd, as he went; and one of them, who it seems rifled him, while the first stood to stop the Coach, stabb'd him into the Body with a Sword, so that he died immediately. He had a Footman behind the Coach, they knock'd down with the Stock, or But-end of a Carabine: They were suppos'd to kill him, because of the Disappointment they met with, in not getting his Case, or Casket of Diamonds, which they knew he carry'd about him; and this was suppos'd, because after they had killed him, they made the Coachman drive out of the Road, a long Way over the Heath, till they came to a convenient Place, where they pulled him out of the Coach, and searched his Cloaths more narrowly than they could while he was alive.

But they found nothing but his little Ring, six Pistoles, and the Value of about seven Livres in small Moneys.

This was a dreadful Blow to me; though I cannot say I was so surprized as I should otherwise have been; for all the while he was gone, my Mind was oppress'd with the Weight of my own Thoughts, and I was as sure that I should never see him any more, that I think nothing could be like it; the Impression was so strong, that I think nothing could make so deep a Wound, that was imaginary; and I was so dejected, and disconsolate, that when I receiv'd the News of his Disaster, there was no room for any extraordinary Alteration in me: I had cry'd all that Day, eat nothing, and only waited, as I might say, to receive the dismal News, which I had brought to me about five a Clock.

I was in a strange Country; and though I had a pretty many Acquaintance, had but very few Friends that I could consult on this

Occasion; all possible Enquiry was made after the Rogues that had been thus barbarous, but nothing could be heard of them; nor was it possible that the Footman could make any Discovery of them, by his Description; for they knock'd him down immediately, so that he knew nothing of what was done afterwards; the Coachman was the only Man that could say any thing, and all his Account amounted to no more than this, that one of them had Soldiers Cloaths, but he could not remember the Particulars of his Mounting, so as to know what Regiment he belong'd to; and as to their Faces, that he could know nothing of, because they had all of them Masks on.

I had him buried as decently as the Place would permit a Protestant Stranger to be buried, and made some of the Scruples and Difficulties on that Account easie, by the help of Money to a certain Person, who went impudently to the Curate of the Parish of *St. Sulpitius*, in *Paris*, and told him, that the Gentleman who was killed, was a Catholick; that the Thieves had taken from him a Cross of Gold, set with Diamonds, worth six thousand Livres; that his Widow was a Catholick, and had sent by him sixty Crowns to the Church of -----, for Masses to be said for the Repose of his Soul: Upon all which, though not one Word of it was true, he was buried with all the Ceremonies of the *Roman* Church.

I think I almost cry'd myself to death for him; for I abandoned myself to all the Excesses of Grief; and indeed, I loved him to a Degree inexpressible; and considering what Kindness he had shewn me at first, and how tenderly he had used me to the last, What could I do less?

Then the Manner of his Death was terrible and frightful to me, and above all, the strange Notices I had of it; I had never pretended to the second Sight, or any thing of that Kind; but certainly, if any one ever had such a thing, I had it at this time; for I saw him as plainly in all those terrible Shapes, as above, *First*, as a Skeleton, not dead only, but rotten and wasted: *Secondly*, as killed, and his Face bloody: And *Thirdly*, his Cloaths bloody; and all within the Space of one Minute, or indeed, of a very few Moments.

These things amazed me, and I was a goodwhile as one stupid; however, after some Time I began to recover, and look into my Affairs;

fairs; I had the Satisfaction not to be left in Distress, or in danger of Poverty; on the contrary, besides what he had put into my Hands fairly, in his Life-time, which amounted to a very considerable Value; I found above seven Hundred Pistoles in Gold, in his Scrutore, of which he had given me the Key; and I found Foreign Bills accepted, for about twelve Thousand Livres; so that, in a Word, I found myself possess'd of almost ten Thousand Pounds Sterling, in a very few Days after the Disaster.

The first thing I did upon this Occasion, was, to send a Letter to my Maid, as I still called her, *Amy*, wherein I gave her an Account of my Disaster: how my Husband, as she called him (for I never called him so) was murder'd: And as I did not know how his Relations, or his Wife's Friends, might act upon that Occasion, I ordered her to convey away all the Plate, Linnen, and other things of Value, and to secure them in a Person's Hands that I directed her to, and then to sell, or dispose of the Furniture of the House, if she could: and so, without acquainting any body with the Reason of her going, withdraw; sending Notice to his Head Manager at *London*, that the House was quitted by the Tenant, and they might come and take Possession of it for the Executors. *Amy* was so dexterous, and did her Work so nimbly, that she gutted the House, and sent the Key to the said Manager, almost as soon as he had Notice of the Misfortune that befell their Master.

Upon their receiving the surprizing News of his Death, the Head Manager came over to *Paris*, and came to the House: I made no scruple of calling myself Madam - - - - -, the Widow of Monsieur - - - - -, the *English* Jeweller; and as I spoke *French* naturally, I did not let him know but that I was his Wife, married in *France*, and that I had not heard that he had any Wife in *England*; but pretended to be surprized, and exclaim against him for so base an Action; and that I had good Friends at *Poitou*, where I was born, who would take care to have Justice done me in *England*, out of his Estate.

I should have observed, that as soon as the News was publick, of a Man being murder'd, and that he was a Jeweller, Fame did me the Favour as to publish presently, that he was rob'd of his Casket of Jewels, which he always carried about him: I confirmed this, among my daily Lamentations for his Disaster, and added, that he had

had with him a fine Diamond Ring, which he was known to wear frequently about him, valued at a Hundred Pistoles, a Gold Watch, and a great Quantity of Diamonds of inestimable Value, in his Casket; which Jewels he was carrying to the Prince of -----, to show some of them to him; and the Prince own'd, that he had spoken to him to bring some such Jewels to let him see them. But I sorely repented this Part afterwards, as you shall hear.

This Rumour put an End to all Enquiry after his Jewels, his Ring, or his Watch; and as for the seven Hundred Pistoles that I secur'd; for the Bills which were in Hand I own'd I had them; but that, as I said, I brought my Husband thirty Thousand Livres Portion, I claim'd the said Bills, which came not to above twelve Thousand Livres, for my *Amende*; and this, with the Plate and the Household-stuff, was the Principal of all his Estate which they could come at: As to the Foreign Bill which he was going to *Versailles* to get accepted, it was really lost with him; but his Manager, who had remitted the Bill to him by Way of *Amsterdam*, bringing over the second Bill, the Money was saved; as they called it, which would otherwise have been all gone; the Thieves who robb'd and murder'd him were, to be sure, afraid to send any body to get the Bill accepted; for that would undoubtedly have discovered them.

By this Time my Maid Amy was arrived, and she gave me an Account of her Management, and how she had secured every thing, and that she had quitted the House, and sent the Key to the Head Manager of the Business; and let me know how much she had made of every thing, very punctually and honestly.

I should have observed in the Account of his dwelling with me so long at -----, that he never pass'd for any thing there but a Lodger in the House; and though he was Landlord, that did not alter the Case; so that at his Death, Amy coming to quit the House, and give them the Key, there was no affinity between that, and the Case of their Master who was newly killed.

I got good Advice at *Paris*, from an eminent Lawyer, a Counsellor of the Parliament there, and laying my Case before him, he directed me to make a Process in Dower upon the Estate, for making good my new Fortune upon Matrimony, which accordingly I did; and upon the whole, the Manager went back to *England*, well satisf.

satisfied that he had gotten the unaccepted Bill of Exchange, which was for two Thousand five Hundred Pounds; with some other things, which together amounted to seventeen thousand Livres; and thus I got rid of him.

I was visited with great Civility on this sad Occasion, of the Loss of my Husband, as they thought him, by a great many Ladies of Quality; and the Prince of - - - -, to whom it was reported he was carrying the Jewels, sent his Gentleman with a very handsome Compliment of Condolance to me; and his Gentleman, whether with or without Order, hinted, as if his Highness did intend to visit me himself, but that some Accident, of which he made a long Story of, had prevented him.

By the Concourse of Ladies and others, that thus came to visit me, I began to be much known; and as I did not forget to set myself out with all possible Advantage, considering the Dress of a Widow, which in those Days was a most frightful thing; I say, as I did thus from my own Vanity, for I was not ignorant that I was very handsome; I say, on this Account, I was soon made very publick, and was known by the Name of *La Belle veufve de Poictou*; or, The pretty Widow of *Poictou*: As I was very well pleased to see myself thus handsomely used in my Affliction, it soon dry'd up all my Tears; and though I appeared as a Widow, yet, as we say in *England*, it was of a Widow comforted: I took Care to let the Ladies see, that I knew how to receive them; that I was not at a Loss how to Behave to any of them; and in short, I began to be very popular there; but I had an Occasion afterwards, which made me decline that kind of Management, as you shall hear presently.

About four Days after I had received Compliments of Condolance from the Prince - - - -, the same Gentleman he had sent before came to tell me, that his Highness was coming to give me a Visit; I was indeed surprized at that, and perfectly at a Loss how to behave: However, as there was no Remedy, I prepared to receive him as well as I could; it was not many Minutes after, but he was at the Door, and came in, introduced by his own Gentleman, as above, and after by my Woman, *Amy*.

He treated me with abundance of Civility, and condoled handsomely the Loss of my Husband, and likewise the Manner of it; he told me, he understood he was coming to *Versailles*, to himself,

to shew him some Jewels; that it was true, that he had discoursed with him about Jewels, but could not imagine how any Villains should hear of his coming at that Time with them; that he had not ordered him to attend with them at *Versailles*, but told him, that he would come to *Paris* by such a Day, so that he was no way accessary to the Disaster. I told him gravely, I knew very well, that all his Highness had said of that Part, was true; that these Villains knew his Profession, and knew, no doubt, that he always carry'd a Casket of Jewels about him, and that he always wore a Diamond Ring on his Finger worth a Hundred Pistoles, which Report had magnified to five Hundred; and that if he had been going to any other Place, it would have been the same thing. After this his Highness rose up to go, and told me, he was resolved, however, to make me some Reparation; and with these Words put a silk Purse into my Hand, with a Hundred Pistoles, and told me, he would make me a farther Compliment of a small Pension, which his Gentleman would inform me of.

You may be sure I behaved with a due Sense of so much Goodness, and offered to kneel to kiss his Hand, but he took me up and saluted me, and sat down again (though before, he made as if he was going away) making me sit down by him.

He then began to talk with me more familiarly; told me, he hoped I was not left in bad Circumstances; that Mr. --- was reported to be very Rich, and that he had gained lately great Sums by some Jewels; and he hoped, *he said*, that I had still a Fortune agreeable to the Condition I had lived in before.

I reply'd with some Tears, which, I confess, were a little forc'd, that I believed if Mr. --- had lived, we should have been out of Danger of Want; but that it was impossible to Estimate the Loss which I had sustained, besides that of the Life of my Husband; that by the Opinion of those that knew something of his Affairs, and of what Value the Jewels were which he intended to have shown to his Highness, he could not have less about him, than the Value of a Hundred Thousand Livres; that it was a fatal Blow to me, and to his whole Family, especially that they should be lost in such a Manner.

His Highness returned, with an Air of Concern, that he was very sorry for it; but he hoped, if I settled in *Paris*, I might find Ways

to restore my Fortune; at the same Time he complimented me upon my being very handsome, *as he was pleased to call it*, and that I could not fail of Admirers. I stood up, and humbly thanked his Highness, but told him, I had no Expectations of that Kind; that I thought I should be obliged to go over into *England*, to look after my Husband's Effects there, which I was told were considerable; but that I did not know what Justice a poor Stranger would get among them; and as for *Paris*, my Fortune being so impaired, I saw nothing before me but to go back to *Poitou*, to my Friends, where some of my Relations I hop'd, might do something for me, and added, that one of my Brothers was an *Abbe* at ---, near *Poitou*.

He stood up, and taking me by the Hand, led me to a large Looking-Glass, which made up the Pier in the Front of the Parlour; Look there, Madam, *said he*; Is it fit that Face, pointing to my Figure in the Glass, should go back to *Poitou*? No, Madam, *says he*, Stay and make some Gentleman of Quality happy, that may, in return, make you forget all your Sorrows; and with that, he took me in his Arms, and kissing me twice, told me, he would see me again, but with less Ceremony.

Some little time after this, but the same Day, his Gentleman came to me again, and with great Ceremony and Respect, delivered me a black Box ty'd with a Scarlet Ribband, and sealed with a noble Coat of Arms, which, I suppose, was the Prince's; there was in it a Grant from his Highness, or an Assignment, I know not which to call it, with a Warrant to his Banker to pay me two Thousand Livres a Year, during my Stay in *Paris*, as the Widow of Monsieur --- the Jeweller, mentioning the horrid Murther of my late Husband as the Occasion of it, as above.

I received it with great Submission, and Expressions of being utterly obliged to his Master, and of my showing myself, on all Occasions, his Highness's most obedient Servant; and after giving my most humble Duty to his Highness, with the utmost Acknowledgments of the Obligation &c. I went to a little Cabinet, and taking out some Money, which made a little Sound in taking it out, offered to give him five Pistoles.

He drew back, but with the greatest Respect, and told me, he humbly thanked me, but that he durst not take a Farthing; that
his

his Highness would take it so ill of him, he was sure, he would never see his Face more; but that he would not fail to acquaint his Highness what Respect I had offered; and added, I assure you, Madam, you are more in the good Graces of my Master, the Prince of ----, than you are aware of; and I believe you will hear more of him.

Now I began to understand him, and resolved, if his Highness did come again, he should see me under no Disadvantages, if I could help it: I told him, if his Highness did me the Honour to see me again, I hoped he would not let me be so surprized as I was before; that I would be glad to have some little Notice of it, and should be obliged to him if he would procure it me. He told me he was very sure, that when his Highness intended to visit me, he should be sent before, to give me Notice of it; and that he would give me as much Warning of it as possible.

He came several Times after this on the same Errand; that is, about the settlement, the Grant requiring several things yet to be done for making it payable, without going every Time to the Prince again for a fresh Warrant; the Particulars of this Part I did not understand; but as soon as it was finished, which was above two Months, the Gentleman came one Afternoon, and said, his Highness designed to visit me in the Evening; but desired to be admitted without Ceremony.

I prepared not my Rooms only, but myself, and when he came in, there was no body appeared in the House but his Gentleman, and my Maid *Amy*; and of her I bid the Gentleman acquaint his Highness, that she was an *English* Woman, that she did not understand a Word of *French*, and that she was one also that might be trusted.

When he came into my Room, I fell down at his Feet, before he could come to salute me, and with Words that I had prepared, full of Duty and Respect, thanked him for his Bounty and Goodness to a poor desolate Woman, oppressed with the Weight of so terrible a Disaster, and refused to rise till he would allow me the Honour to kiss his Hand.

Levez vous donc, says the Prince, taking me in his Arms, I desire more Favours for you than this Title; and going on, he added, You shall, for the future, find a Friend where you did not look for

for it; and I resolve to let you see how kind I can be, to one who is, to me, the most agreeable Creature on Earth.

I was dress'd in a kind of half Mourning, had turn'd off my Weeds, and my Head, though I had yet no Ribbands or Lace, was so dress'd, as fail'd not to set me out with Advantage enough, for I began to understand his Meaning; and the Prince professed, I was the most beautiful Creature on Earth. And where have I liv'd? says he, and how ill have I been served, that I should never, till now, be shew'd the finest Woman in *France*!

This was the Way, in all the World, the most likely to break in upon my Virtue, if I had been Mistress of any, for I was now become the vainest Creature upon Earth, and particularly of my Beauty; which, as other People admir'd, so I became every Day more foolishly in Love with myself than before.

He said some very kind Things to me after this, and sat down with me for an Hour, or more; when getting up, and calling his Gentleman by his Name, he threw open the Door, *Au Boir*, says he, upon which, his Gentleman immediately brought up a little Table, covered with a fine Damask Cloth, the Table no bigger than he could bring in his two Hands; but upon it was set two Dicanters, one of Champaign, and the other of Water, fix Silver Plates, and a Service of fine Sweet-Meats, in fine *China* Dishes, on a Set of Rings standing up about twenty Inches high, one above another; below, was three roasted Patridges and a Quail; as soon as his Gentleman had set it all down, he ordered him to withdraw; now, says the Prince, I intend to Sup with you.

When he sent away his Gentleman, I stood up, and offered to wait on his Highness while he Eat, but he positively refused, and told me, No, To-Morrow you shall be the Widow of Monsieur --- the Jeweller, but to Night you shall be my Mistress; therefore sit here, says he, and Eat with me, or I will get up and serve.

I would then have called up my Woman, *Amy*, but I thought that would not be proper neither; so I made my Excuse, that since his Highness would not let his own Servant wait, would not presume to let my Woman come up; but if he would please to let me wait, it would be my Honour to fill his Highness' Wine; but, as before, he would by no means allow me; so we sat and eat together.

Now

Now Madam, says the Prince, give me leave to lay aside my Character; let us talk together with the Freedom of Equals; my Character sets me at a Distance from you, and makes you Ceremonious; your Beauty exalts you to more than an Equality: I must then treat you as Lovers do their Mistresses, but I cannot speak the Language; 'tis enough to tell you, how agreeable you are to me, how I am surprized at your Beauty, and resolve to make you happy, and to be happy with you.

I knew not what to say to him a good while, but blush'd, and looking up towards him, said, that I was already made happy in the Favour of a Person of such Rank; and had nothing to ask of this Highness, but that he would believe me infinitely obliged.

After he had Eaten, he poured the Sweet-Meats into my Lap; and the Wine being out, he called his Gentleman again, to take away the Table, who, at first, only took the Cloth, and the Remains of what was to Eat, away; and laying another Cloth, set the Table on one side of the Room, with a noble Service of Plate upon it, worth at least two hundred Pistoles; then having set the two Decanters again upon the Table, fill'd as before, he with drew, for I found the Fellow understood his Business very well, and his Lord's Business too.

About half an Hour after, the Prince told me, that I offered to wait a little before, that if I would now take the Trouble, he would give me leave to give him some Wine; so I went to the Table, fill'd a Glass of Wine, and brought it to him, on a fine Salver which the Glasses stood on, and brought the Bottle, or Decanter for Water, in my other Hand, to mix it as he thought fit.

He smil'd, and bid me look on that Salver, which I did, and admir'd it much, for it was a very fine one indeed: You may see, says he, I resolve to have more of your Company, for my Servant shall leave you that Plate for my Visit. I told him, I believed his Highness would not take it ill, that I was not furnished fit to Entertain a Person of his Rank; and that I would take great Care of it, and value myself infinitely upon the Honour of his Highness's Visit.

It now began to grow late, and he began to take Notice of it; but, says he, I cannot leave you; have you not a spare Lodging for one Night? I told him, I had but a homely Lodging to entertain such a Guest; he said something exceeding kind on that Head, but

not fit to repeat; adding, that my Company would make him amends.

About Midnight he sent his Gentleman of an Errand, after telling him, aloud, that he intended to stay here all Night; in a little Time his Gentleman brought him a Night-Gown, Slippers, two Caps, a Neckcloth, and Shirt, which he gave to me to carry into his Chamber, and sent his Man home; and then turning to me, said, I should do him the Honour to be his Chamberlain of the Household, and his Dreſſer alſo: I ſmil'd, and told him, I would do myſelf the Honour to wait on him upon all Occaſions.

About One in the Morning, while his Gentleman was yet with him, I begg'd Leave to withdraw, ſuppoſing he would go to Bed; but he took the Hint, and ſaid, I'm not going to Bed yet; pray let me ſee you again.

I took this Time to undreſs me, and to come in a new Dreſs, which was, in a manner, *une Diſhabile*, but ſo fine, and all about me ſo clean, and ſo agreeable, that he ſeemed ſurprized: I thought, *ſays he*, you could not have dreſſed to more Advantage than you had done before; but now, *ſays he*, you Charm me a thouſand Times more, if that be poſſible.

It is only a looſe Habit, my Lord, *ſays I*, that I may the better wait on your Highneſs; he pulls me to him; You are perfectly obliging, *ſays he*, and ſitting on the Bed-ſide, *ſays he*, Now you ſhall be a Princeſs, and know what it is to oblige the gratefull'eſt Man alive; and with that he took me in his Arms, — I can go no farther in the Particulars of what paſſed at that Time; but it ended in this, that, in ſhort, I lay with him all Night.

I have given you the whole Detail of this Story, to lay it down as a black Scheme of the Way how Unhappy Women are ruin'd by Great Men; for though Poverty and Want is an irrefiſtible Temptation to the Poor, Vanity and Great Things are as irrefiſtible to others; to be courted by a Prince, and by a Prince who was firſt a Benefactor, then an Admirer; to be called handſome, the fineſt Woman in *France*, and to be treated as a Woman fit for the Bed of a Prince; theſe are Things, a Woman muſt have no Vanity in her, nay, no Corruption in her, that is not overcome by it; and my Caſe was ſuch, that, as before, I had enough of both.

I had now no Poverty attending me; on the contrary, I was
Miſtreſs

Mistress of ten Thousand Pounds before the Prince did any thing for me; had I been Mistress of my Resolution; had I been less obliging, and rejected the first Attack, all had been safe; but my Virtue was lost before, and the Devil, who had found the Way to break in upon me by one Temptation, easily mastered me now, by another; and I gave myself up to a Person, who, though a Man of high Dignity, was yet the most tempting and obliging, that ever I met with in my Life.

I had the same particular to insist upon here with the Prince, that I had with my Gentleman before: I hesitated much at consenting, at first asking; but the prince told me, princes did not court like other Men; that they brought more powerful Arguments; and he very prettily added, that they were sooner repulsed than other Men, and ought to be sooner comply'd with, intimating, though very genteely, that after a Woman had positivley refused him once, he could not, like other Men, wait with Importunities, and Stratagems, and laying long Sieges; but as such Men as he storm'd warmly, so, if repulsed, they made no second Attacks; and indeed, it was but reasonable; for as it was below their Rank, to be long battering a Woman's Constancy, so they ran greater hazards in being exposed in their Amours, than other Men did.

I took this for a satisfactory Answer, and told his Highness, that I had the same Thoughts, in respect to the Manner of his Attacks, for that his person, and his Arguments, were irresistible; that a person of his Rank, and a Munificence so unbounded, could not be withstood; that no Virtue was proof against him, except such as was able too to suffer Martyrdom; that I thought it impossible I could be overcome, but that now I found it was impossible I should not be overcome; that so much Goodness, joined with so much Greatness, would have conquered a Saint; and that I confessed he had the Victory over me, by a Merit infinitely superior to the Conquest he had made.

He made me a most obliging Answer; told me abundance of fine Things, which still flattered my Vanity, till at last I began to have pride enough to believe him, and fancy'd myself a fit Mistress for a prince.

As I had thus given the prince the last Favour, and he had all the Freedom with me, that it was possible for me to grant, so he gave

gave me Leave to use as much Freedom with him another Way, and that was, to have every thing of him I thought fit to command; and yet I did not ask of him with an Air of Avarice, as if I was greedily making a penny of him; but I managed him with such Art, that he generally anticipated my Demands; he only requested of me, that I would not think of taking another House, as I had intimated to his Highness that I intended, not thinking it good enough to receive his Visits in: But, *he said*, my House was the most convenient that could possibly be found in all *Paris*, for an Amour, especially for him; having a Way out into three Streets, and not overlooked by any Neighbours, so that he could pass and repass, without Observation: for one of the Back-ways opened into a narrow dark alley, which alley was a thorough fair or passage out of one Street into another; and any person that went in or out by the door, had no more to do, but to see that there was no body following him in the alley, before he went in at the door: This request I knew was reasonable, and therefore I assured him, I would not change my dwelling, seeing his highness did not think it too mean for me to receive him in.

He also desired me that I would not take any more servants, or set up any equipage, at least for the present; for that it would then be immediately concluded, I had been left very rich, and then I should be thronged with the importunence of admirers, who would be attracted by the Money as well as by the beauty of a young Widow and he should be frequently interrupted in his visits; or, that the World would conclude I was maintained by somebody, and would be indefatigable to find out the person; so that he should have Spies peeping at him, every time he went out or in, which it would be impossible to disappoint, and that he should presently have it talked over all the toilets in *Paris*, that the prince de ----- had got the Jewellers Widow for a Mistress.

This was too just to oppose, and I made no Scruple to tell his Highness, that since he had stooped so low as to make me his own, he ought to have all the satisfaction in the World, that I was all his own, that I should take all the measures he should please to direct me, to avoid the impertinent Attacks of others, and that if he thought fit, I would be wholly within doors, and have it given out, that I was obliged to go to England, to solicit my Affairs there, after

ter my Husbands Misfortune; and that I was not expected there again for at least a Year or two: This he liked very well, only, *he said*, that he would by no means have me confin'd; that it would injure my Health; and that I should then take a Country-House in some Village, a good Way off of the City, where it should not be known who I was; and that I should be there sometimes to divert me.

I made no Scruple of the Confinement, and told his Highness, no Place could be a Confinement, where I had such a Visiter; and so I put off the House, which would have been to remove myself farther from him, and have less of his Company; so I made the House be, as it were, shut up; *Amy*, indeed, appeared; and when any of the Neighbours and Servants enquired, she answered in broken *French*, that I was gone to *England*, to look after my Affairs; which presently went current through the Streets about us: For, you are to note, that the People of *Paris*, especially the Women, are the most busie and impertinent Enquirers into the Conduct of their Neighbours, especially that of a single Woman, that are in the World; though there are no greater Intriguers in the Universe than themselves; and perhaps that may be the Reason of it; for it is an old, but a sure Rule, that

When deep Intrigues are close and shy,
The GUILTY are the first that spy.

Thus his Highness had the most easie, and yet the most undiscoverable Access to me, imaginable, and he seldom failed to come two or three Nights in a Week, and sometimes stay'd two or three Nights together. Once he told me, he was resolv'd I should be weary of his Company, and that he would learn to know what it was to be a Prisoner; so he gave out among his Servants, that he was gone to -----, where he often went a Hunting, and that he should not return under a Fortnight; and that Fortnight he staid wholly with me, and never went out of my Doors.

Never Woman, in such a Station, lived a Fortnight in so compleat a fulness of Humane Delight; for to have the entire Possession of one of the most accomplished Princes in the World, and of the politest, best bred Man; to converse with him all Day, and,

as he profess'd charm him all Night; what could be more inexpressibly Pleasing, and especially to a Woman of a vast deal of Pride, as I was?

To finish the Felicity of this Part, I must not forget, that the Devil had play'd a new Game with me, and prevailed with me to satisfy myself with this Amour, as a lawful Thing, that a Prince of such Grandeur and Majesty, so infinitely Superior to me, and one who had made such an Introduction by an unparallel'd Bounty I could not resist; and therefore, that it was very Lawful to do it, being at that Time perfectly single, and uningaged to any other Man; as I was, most certainly, by the unaccountable Absence of my first Husband, and the Murther of my Gentleman, who went for my second.

It cannot be doubted but that I was the easier to persuade myself of the Truth of such a Doctrine as this, when it was so much for my Ease, and for the Repose of my Mind, to have it so.

In Things we wish, 'tis easie to deceive;
What we would have, we willingly believe.

Besides, I had no Casuists to resolve this Doubt; the same Devil that put this into my Head, bade me go to any of the *Romish* Clergy, and under the Pretence of Confession, state the Case exactly, and I should see they would either resolve it to be no Sin at all, or absolve me upon the easiest Pennance: This I had a strong Inclination to try, but I know not what Scruple put me off of it, for I could never bring myself to like having to do with those Priests; and though it was strange that I, who had thus prostituted my Chastity, and given up all Sense of Virtue, in two such particular Cases, living a Life of Adultery, should scruple any thing; yet so it was, I argued with myself, that I could not be a Cheat in any thing that was esteemed Sacred; that I could not be of one Opinion, and then pretend myself to be of another; nor could I go to Confession, who knew nothing of the Manner of it, and should betray myself to the Priest, to be a Hugonot, and then might come into Trouble: But, in short, though I was a Whore, yet I was a Protestant Whore, and could not act as if I was Popish, upon any Account whatsoever.

But,

But, I say, I satisfy'd myself with the surprizing Occasion, that as it was all Irresistible, so it was all Lawful; for that Heaven would not suffer us to be punished for that which it was not possible for us to avoid; and with these Absurdities I kept Conscience from giving me any considerable Disturbance in all this Matter; and I was as perfectly easie as to the Lawfulness of it, as if I had been marry'd to the Prince, and had had no other Husband: So possible is it for us to roll ourselves up in Wickedness, till we grow invulnerable by Conscience; and that Centinel once doz'd, sleeps fast, not to be awaken'd while the Tide of Pleasure continues to flow, or till something dark and dreadful brings us to ourselves again.

I have, I confess, wondered at the Stupidity that my intellectual Part was under all that while; what Lethargick Fumes doz'd the Soul; and how it was possible that I, who in the Case before, where the Temptation was many Ways more forcible, and the Arguments stronger, and more irresistible, was yet under a continued Inquietude on account of the wicked Life I led, could now live in the most profound Tranquility, and with an uninterrupted Peace, nay, even rising up to Satisfaction and Joy, and yet in a more palpable State of Adultery than before; for before, my Gentleman who call'd me Wife, had the Pretence of his Wife being parted from him, refusing to do the Duty of her Office as a Wife to him; as for me, my Circumstances were the same; but as for the Prince, as he had a fine and extraordinary Lady, or Princess, of his own; so he had had two or three Mistresses more besides me, and made no Scruple of it at all.

However, I say, as to my own Part, I enjoy'd myself in perfect Tranquility; and as the Prince was the only Deity I worshipp'd, so I was really his Idol; and however it was with his Princess, I assure you, his other Mistresses found a sensible Difference; and though they could never find me out, yet I had good Intelligence, that they guess'd very well, that their Lord had got some new Favourite that robb'd them of his Company, and perhaps, of some of his Bounty too: And now I must mention the Sacrifices he made to his Idol, and they were not a few, I assure you.

As he loved like a Prince, so he rewarded like a Prince; for tho' he declined my making a Figure, as above, he let me see, he was
above

above doing it for the saving the Expence of it, and so he told me, and that he would make it up in other Things: First of all he sent me a Toilet, with all the Appurtenances of Silver, even so much as the Frame of the Table; and then, for the House, he gave me the Table, or Side-board of Plate I mentioned above, with all Things belonging to it, of massy Silver; so that, in short, I could not, for my Life, study to ask him for any thing of Plate which I had not.

He could then accommodate me with nothing more but Jewels and Cloaths, or Money for Cloaths; he sent his Gentleman to the Mercer's, and bought me a Suit, or whole Piece, of the finest Brocaded Silk, figur'd with Gold, and another with Silver, and another of Crimson; so that I had three Suits of Cloaths, such as the Queen of France would not have disdain'd to have worn at that Time; yet I went out no where; but as those were for me to put on when I went out of Mourning, I dress'd myself in them, one after another, always when his Highness came to see me.

I had no less than five several Morning Dress'es besides those, so that I never need be seen twice in the same Dress; to these he added several Parcels of fine Linnen, and of Lace, so much, that I had no room to ask for more, or indeed for so much.

I took the Liberty once, in our Freedoms, to tell him, he was too Bountiful, and that I was too chargeable to him for a Mistress, and that I would be his faithful Servant, at less Expence to him; and that he not only left me no room to ask him for any Thing, but that he supply'd me with such a Profusion of good Things, that I scarce could wear them, or use them, unless I kept a great Equipage, which he knew was no way convenient for him, or for me: He smil'd, and took me in his Arms, and told me, he was resolv'd, while I was his, I should never be able to ask him for any thing; but that he would be daily asking new Favours of me.

After we were up, for this Conferance was in Bed, he desired I would dress me in the best Suit of Cloaths I had: It was a Day or two after the three Suits were made, and brought home: I told him, if he pleas'd, I would rather dress me in that Suit which I knew he liked best; he ask'd me, how I could know which he would like best, before he had seen them? I told him, I would presume, for once, to guess at his Fancy by my own; so I went away, and
dressed

dress'd me in the second Suit, brocaded with Silver, and returned in full Dress, with a Suit of Lace upon my Head, which would have been worth in *England*, two Hundred Pounds Sterling; and I was every Way set out as well as *Amy* could dress me, who was a very genteel Dresser too: In this Figure I came to him, out of my Dressing-Room, which opened with Folding-Doors into his Bed Chamber.

He sat as one astonish'd, a good-while, looking at me, without speaking a Word, till I came quite up to him, kneeled on one Knee to him, and, almost whether he would or no, kiss'd his Hand; he took me up, and stood up himself, but was surpriz'd, when, taking me in his Arms, he perceived Tears to run down my Cheeks: My Dear, *says he aloud*, what mean these Tears? My Lord, *said I*, after some little Check, for I could not speak presently, I beseech you to believe me, they are not Tears of Sorrow, but Tears of Joy; it is impossible for me to see myself snatch'd from the Misery I was fallen into, and at once to be in the Arms of a Prince of such Goodness, such immense Bounty, and be treated in such a Manner; 'tis not possible, my Lord, *said I*, to contain the Satisfaction of it; and it will break out in an Excess in some measure proportioned to your immense Bounty, and to the Affection which your Highness treats me with, who am so infinitely below you.

It would look a little too much like a Romance here, to repeat all the kind Things he said to me, on that Occasion; but I cannot omit one Passage; as he saw the Tears drop down my Cheeks, he pulls out a fine Cambrick Handkerchief, and was going to wipe the Tears off, but check'd his Hand, as if he was afraid to deface something; I say, he check'd his Hand, and toss'd the Handkerchief to me, to do it myself; I took the Hint immediately, and with a kind of pleasant Disdain, Here, my Lord! *said I*, Have you kiss'd me so often, and don't you know whether I am painted or not? Pray let your Highness satisfy yourself, that you have no Cheats put upon you; for once let me be vain enough to say, I have not deceived you with false Colours. With this I put a Handkerchief into his Hand, and taking his Hand into mine, I made him wipe my Face so hard, that he was unwilling to do it for fear of hurting me.

He appeared surpriz'd, more than ever, and swore, which was

the first Time that I had heard him swear from my first knowing him, that he could not have believed there was any such Skin without Paint in the World: Well, my Lord, says I, Your Highness shall have a farther Demonstration than this; as to that which you are pleased to accept for Beauty, that it is the mere Work of Nature; and with that I stept to the Door, and rung a little Bell for my Woman Amy, and bade her bring me a eup full of hot Water, which she did; and when it was come, I desired his Highness to feel if it was warm; which he did, and I immediately washed my Face all over with it before him; this was indeed more than Satisfaction, that is to say, than believing; for it was an undeniable Demonstration, and he kissed my Cheeks and Breasts a thousand times, with Expressions of the greatest Surprize imaginable.

Nor was I a very indifferent Figure as to Shape; though I had had two Children by my Gentleman, and six by my true Husband, I say I was no despicable Shape; and my Prince, I must be allowed the Vanity to call him so, was taking his View of me as I walked from one end of the Room to the other, at last he leads me to the darkest part of the Room, and standing behind me, bade me hold up my Head, when putting both his Hands round my Neck, as if he was spanning my Neck, to see how small it was, for it was long and small; he held my Neck so long and so hard in his Hand, that I complained he hurt me a little; what he did it for I knew not, nor had I the least Suspicion but that he was spanning my Neck; but when I said he hurt me, he seemed to let me go, and in half a Minute more led me to a pier glass, and behold I saw my Neck clasped with a fine Necklace of Diamonds; whereas I felt no more what he was doing, than if he had really done nothing at all, nor did I suspect it in the least: if I had an ounce of Blood in me, that did not fly up into my Face Neck and Breasts, it must be from some interruption in the Vessels; I was all on Fire with the Sight, and began to wonder what it was that was coming to me,

However, to let him see that I was not unqualified to receive Benefits; I turned about, my Lord, says I, your Highness is resolved to conquer by your Bounty, the very Gratitude of your Servants; you will leave no room for any thing but Thanks, and make those Thanks useless too, by their bearing no Proportion to the Occasion.

I love, Child, *says he*, to see every thing suitable; a fine Gown and Petticoat, a fine lac'd Head, a fine Face and Neck, and no Necklace, would not have made the Object perfect: But why that Blush, my Dear, *says the Prince*? My Lord, *said I*, all your Gifts call for Blushes; but above all, I blush to receive what I am so ill able to merit and may become so ill also.

Thus far I am a standing Mark of the Weakness of Great Men, in their Vice; that value not squandering away immense Wealth upon the most worthless Creatures; or to sum it up in a Word, they raise the Value of the Object which they pretend to pitch upon, by their Fancy; I say, raise the Value of it, at their own Expence; give vast Presents for a ruinous Favour, which is so far from being equal to the Price, that nothing will, at last, prove more absurd, than the Cost Men are at to purchase their own Destruction.

I could not, in the Height of all this fine Doings, I say, I could not be without some just Reflection, though Conscience was, as I said, dumb as to any Disturbance, it gave me on my Wickedness; my Vanity was fed up to such a Height, that I had no room to give Way to such Reflections.

But I could not but sometimes look back, with Astonishment, at the Folly of Men of Quality, who immense in their Bounty, as in their Wealth, give to a Profusion, and without Bounds, to the most scandalous of our Sex, for granting them the Liberty of abusing themselves, and ruining both.

I, that knew what this Carcass of mine had been but a few Years before, how overwhelmed with Grief, drowned in Tears, frightened with the prospect of Beggery, and surrounded with Rags, and Fatherless Children; and was pawning and selling the Rags that cover'd me, for a Dinner, and sat on the Ground, despairing of Help, and expecting to be starved, till my Children were snatched from me to be kept by the Parish; I, that was after this a Whore for Bread, and abandoning Conscience and Virtue, lived with another Woman's Husband; I, that was despised by all my Relations, and my Husband's too; I, that was left so entirely desolate, friendless and helpless, that I knew not how to get the least Help to keep me from starving; that I should be caress'd by a Prince, for the Honour of having the scandalous Use of my prostituted Body, common before to his Inferiors; and perhaps would not have denied one

one of his Footmen but a little while before, if I could have got my Bread by it.

I say, I could not but reflect upon the Brutality and Blindness of Mankind; that because Nature had given me a good Skin, and some agreeable Features, should suffer that Beauty to be such a Bait to Appetite, as to do such sordid, unaccountable Things, to obtain the Possession of it.

It is for this Reason, that I have so largely set down the particulars of the Careless I was treated with by the Jeweller, and also by this Prince; not to make the Story an Incentive to the Vice, which I am now such a sorrowful Penitent for being guilty of, God forbid any should make so vile a use of so good a Design, but to draw the just Picture of a Man enslaved to the Rage of his vicious Appetite; how he defaces the Image of God in his Soul, dethrones his Reason, causes Conscience to abdicate the Possession, and exalts Sense into the vacant Throne, how he deposes the Man and highly exalts the Brute.

Oh! Could we hear now the Reproaches this great Man afterwards loaded himself with, when he grew weary of this admired Creature, and became sick of his Vice! How profitable would the Report of them be to the Reader of this Story; but had he himself also known the dirty History of my Actions upon the Stage of Life, that little time I had been in the World, how much more severe would those Reproaches have been upon himself; but I shall come to this again.

I lived in this gay sort of Retirement almost three Years, in which time no Amour of such a Kind, sure was ever carried up so high; the prince knew no bounds to his Munificence; he could give me nothing, either for my wearing or using, or eating or drinking, more than he had done from the Beginning.

His Presents were after that in Gold and very frequent and large, often a hundred Pistoles, never less than fifty at a time; and I must do myself the Justice, that I seemed rather backward to receive than craving and encroaching; not that I had not an avaricious Temper, nor was it that I did not foresee that this was my Harvest in which I was to gather up, and that it would not last long, but it was, that really his Bounty always anticipated my Expectations, and even my Wishes, and he gave me Money so fast, that he rather poured

poured it in upon me, than left me room to ask it; so that before I could spend fifty Pistoles, I had always an hundred to make it up again. After I had been near a Year and a half in his Arms, as above; or thereabouts, I proved with Child; I did not take any Notice of it to him till I was satisfied I was not deceived; when one Morning early, when we were in Bed together, I said to him, My Lord, I doubt your Highness never gives yourself leave to think, what the case should be, if I should have the Honour to be with Child by you: Why, my Dear, says he, we are able to keep it, if such a thing should happen, I hope you are not concerned about that: No my Lord, said I, I should think myself very happy if I could bring your Highness a Son, I should hope to see him a Lieutenant-Generall of the King's Armies, by the Interest of his Father, and by his own Merit.

Assure yourself, Child, says he, if it should be so I will not refuse owning him for my Son, though it be as they call it a natural Son; and shall never slight or neglect him for the sake of his Mother. Then he began to importune me, to know if it was so; but I positively denied it so long, till at last I was able to give him the Satisfaction of knowing it himself, by the Motion of the Child within me.

He professed himself overjoy'd at the Discovery, but told me, that now it was absolutely necessary for me to quit the Confinement which he said I had suffered for his sake, and to take a House somewhere in the Country, in order for Health as well as Privacy against my Lying-in. This was quite out of my way; but the Prince who was a Man of Pleasure, had it seems several Retreats of this Kind, which he had made use of, I suppose, upon like Occasions, and for leaving it as it were, to his Gentleman, he provided a very convenient House about four miles South of Paris, at the Village of ~~xxxx~~, where I had very agreeable Lodgings, good Gardens, and all things very easy to my Content; but one thing did not please me at all, and that is, that an old Woman was provided, and put into the House to furnish every thing necessary to my Lying-in, and to assist in my Travail.

I did not like this old Woman, she looked so like a Spy upon me, or like one set privately to dispatch me out of the World, as might

best suit with the Circumstance of my Lying-in; and when his Highness came the next time to see me, which was not many Days, I expostulated a little on the Subject of the Old Woman; and by the Management of my Tongue, as well as by the Strength of Reasoning, I convinced him that it would not be convenient; that it would be the greater Risque on his Side; and that first or last it would certainly expose him and me also; I assured him that my Servant being an English Woman, never knew to that Hour who his Highness was; that I always called him the Count de Clerac; and that she knew nothing else of him, nor ever should; that if he would give me leave to chuse proper Persons for my Use, it should be so ordered, that none of them should know who he was, or perhaps ever see his Face; and that for the reality of the Child that should be born, his Highness who had alone been at the first of it, should if he pleased be present in the Room all the Time; so that he would need no Witnesses on that Account.

This Discourse fully satisfied him, so that he ordered his Gentleman to dismiss the old Woman the same Day; and, without any Difficulty I sent my Maid Amy to Calais, and thence to Dover, where she got an English Midwife and an English Nurse, to come over on Purpose to attend an English Lady of Quality, as they stiled me, for four Months. The Midwife Amy had agreed to pay an Hundred Guineas to, and bear her Charges to Paris, and back again to Dover; the poor Woman that was to be my Nurse had twenty Pounds and the same Terms for Charges as the other.

I was very easy when Amy returned and the more, because she brought with the Midwife a good motherly sort of a Woman, who was to be her Assistant, and would be very helpful on Occasion, and bespoke a Man Midwife at Paris too, if there should be any Necessity for his Help. Having thus made Provision for every thing, the Count, for we called him in publick, came as often to see me as I could expect, and continued exceeding kind, as he had always been, one Day conversing together, upon the Subject of my being with Child, I told him how all things were in order, but that I had a strange Apprehension that I should die with that Child: He smiled. So all the Ladies say, my Dear, says he, when they are with Child. Well, however, my Lord, said I, it is but just, that Care should be taken, that what you have bestowed in your Excess of Bodiness
 did
 2
 upon

upon me, should not be lost, and upon this I pulled a paper out of my Bosom folded up, but not sealed, and I read it to him: Wherein I had left Order, that all the plate and Jewels, and fine Furniture, which his Highness had given me, should be restored to him by my Woman and the Keys be immediately delivered to his Gentleman, in Case of Disaster.

Then I recommended my Woman, *Amy*, to his Favour for a Hundred Pistoles on Condition she gave the Keys up, as above, to his Gentleman, and his Gentleman's Receipt for them; when he saw this, My dear Child, said he, and took me in his Arms, What, have you been making your Will, and disposing your Effects? Pray who do you make your universal Heir? So far as to do Justice to your Highness, in Case of Mortality, I have, my Lord, said I, and who should I dispose the valuable Things to, which I have had from your Hand, as Pledges of your Favour, and Testimonies of your Bounty, but to the Giver of them? If the Child should live, your Highness will, I don't question, act like yourself in that part, and I shall have the utmost Satisfaction, that it will be well used by your Direction.

I could see he took this very well: I have forsaken all the Ladies in *Paris*, says he, for you; and I have lived every Day since I knew you, to see that you know how to merit all that a Man of Honour can do for you; be easie, Child, I hope you shall not die; and all you have is your own, to do what with it you please.

I was then within about two Months of my Time, and that soon wore off; when I found my Time was come, it fell out very happily, that he was in the House, and I entreated he would stay a few Hours, which he agreed to; they called his Highness to come into the Room, if he pleased, as I had offered, and as I desired him, and I sent Word, I would make as few Cries as possible, to prevent disturbing him; he came into the Room once, and called to me, to be of good Courage, it would be soon over, and then he withdrew again; and in about half an Hour more, *Amy* carried him the News, that I was delivered, and had brought him a charming Boy; he gave her ten Pistoles for her News, stay'd till they had adjusted things about, and then came into the Room again; cheer'd me, and spoke kindly to me, and looked on the Child, then withdrew, and came again the next Day to visit me.

Since

Since this, and when I have looked back upon these things with Eyes unpossessed with Crime, when the wicked part has appeared in its clearer Light, and I have seen it in its own natural Colours; when no more blinded with the glittering Appearances, which at that Time deluded me, and, as in like Cases, if I may guess at others by myself, too much possess'd the Mind; I say, since this, I have often wondered, with what Pleasure, or Satisfaction, the Prince could look upon the poor Innocent Infant; which, though his own, and that he might that Way have some Attachment in his Affections to it, yet must afterwards be a Remembrancer to him of his most early Crime; and which was worse, must bear upon itself, unmerited, an eternal Mark of Infamy, which should be spoken of, upon all Occasions, to its Reproach, from the Folly of its Father, and Wickedness of its Mother.

Great Men are, indeed, delivered from the Burthen of their Natural Children, or Bastards, as to their Maintenance: This is the main Affliction in other Cases, where there is not Substance sufficient, without breaking into the Fortunes of the Family; in those Cases, either a Man's Legitimate Children suffer, which is very unnatural; or the unfortunate Mother of that illegitimate Birth, has a dreadful Affliction, either of being turned off with her Child, and be left to starve, &c. or of seeing the poor Infant pack'd off with a piece of Money, to some of those She-Butchers who take Children off of their Hands, as 'tis called, that is to say, starve them, and, in a Word, murder them.

Great Men, I say, are delivered from this Burthen, because they are always furnished to supply the Expence of their Out-of-the-Way Offspring, by making little Assignments on the Bank of Lyons, or the Town-house of Paris, and settling those Sums, to be received for the Maintenance of such Expence as they see Cause.

Thus, in the Case of this Child of mine, while he and I conversed, there was no need to make any Appointment, as an Appenage, or Maintenance for the Child, or its Nurse; for he supplied me more than sufficient for all those Things; but afterwards, when Time, and a particular Circumstance, put an End to our conversing together, as such Things always meet with a Period, and generally break off abruptly; I say, after that, I found he appointed the Children a settled Allowance, by an Assignment of annual Rent

Rent, upon the Bank of *Lyons*, which was sufficient for bringing them handsomely, though privately, up in the World; and that not in a Manner unworthy of their Father's Blood, though I came to be sunk and forgotten in the Case; nor did the Children ever know any thing of their Mother to this Day, other than as you may have an Account hereafter.

But to look back to the particular Observation I was making, which, I hope, may be of Use to those who read my Story; I say, it was something wonderful to me, to see this Person so exceedingly delighted at the Birth of this Child, and so pleased with it; for he would sit and look at it, and with an Air of Seriousness sometimes, a great while together; and particularly, I observed, he loved to look at it when it was asleep.

It was, indeed, a lovely, charming Child, and had a certain Vivacity in its Countenance, that is, far from being common to all Children so young; and he would often say to me, that he believed there was something extraordinary in the Child, and he did not doubt but he would come to be a Great Man.

I could never hear him say so, but though secretly it pleased me, yet it so closely touched me another Way, that I could not refrain Sighing, and sometimes Tears; and one Time in particular, it so affected me, that I could not conceal it from him; but when he saw Tears run down my Face, there was no concealing the Occasion from him; he was too importunate to be deny'd, in a thing of that Moment; so I frankly answered, It sensibly affects me, my Lord, *said I*, that whatever the Merit of this little Creature may be, he must always have a Bend on his Arms; the Disaster of his Birth will be always, not a Blot only to his Honour, but a Bar to his Fortunes in the World; our Affection will be ever his Affliction, and his Mother's Crime be the Son's Reproach; the Blot can never be wiped out by the most glorious Actions; nay, if it lives to raise a Family, *said I*, the Infamy must descend even to its innocent Posterity.

He took the Thought, and sometimes told me afterwards, that it made a deeper Impression on him, than he discovered at that Time; but for the present he put it off, with telling me, these Things could not be helped; that they served as a Spur to the Spirits of brave Men, inspired them with the Principles of Gallantry, and

prompted them to brave Actions; that though it might be true, that the mention of Illegitimacy might attend the Name, yet, that personal Virtue, placed a Man of Honour above the Reproach of his Birth; that as he had no Share in the Offence, he would have no Concern at the Blot; when having by his own Merit placed himself out of the Reach of Scandal, his Fame should drown the Memory of his Beginning.

That as it was usual for Men of Quality to make such little Escapes, so the Number of their Natural Children were so great, and they generally took such Care of their Education, that some of the greatest Men in the World had a Bend in their Coat of Arms, and that it was of no Consequence to them, especially when their Fame began to rise upon the Basis of their acquired Merit; and upon this, he began to reckon up to me some of the greatest Families in *France*, and in *England* also.

This carried off our Discourse for a Time; but I went farther with him once, removing the Discourse from the Part attending our Children, to the Reproach which those Children would be apt to throw upon us, their Originals; and when speaking a little too feelingly on the Subject, he began to receive the Impression a little deeper than I wish'd he had done; at last he told me, I had almost acted the Confessor to him; that I might, perhaps, preach a more dangerous Doctrine to him, than we should either of us like, or than I was aware of; for, my Dear, *says he*, if once we come to talk of Repentance, we must talk of parting.

If Tears were in my Eyes before, they flowed too fast now to be restrained, and I gave him but too much Satisfaction by my Looks, that I had yet no Reflections upon my Mind, strong enough to go that Length; and that I could no more think of Parting, than he could.

He said a great many kind things, which were Great, like himself, and extenuating our Crime, intimated to me, that he could no more part with me, than I could with him; so we both, as I may say, even against our Light, and against our Conviction, concluded to **SIN ON**; indeed, his Affection to the Child was one great Tye to him, for he was extremely fond of it.

This Child lived to be a considerable Man: He was first, an Officer of the Guard *du Corps* of *France*; and afterwards Colonel of

a Regiment of Dragons in Italy; and on many extraordinary Occasions, shewed that he was not unworthy such a Father, but many ways deserving a legitimate Birth and a better Mother: Of which hereafter.

I think I may say now that I lived indeed like a Queen; or if you will have me confess that my Condition had still the Reproach of a Whore, I may say I was sure the Queen of Whores; for no Woman was ever more valued, or more caressed by a Person of such Quality, only in the Station of a Mistress; I had indeed one Deficiency which Women in such Circumstances seldom are chargeable with; which is, I crav'd nothing of him; I never asked him for any thing in my Life; nor suffered myself to be made use of, as is too much the custom of Mistresses, to ask Favours for others; his Bounty always prevented me in the first, and my strict concealing myself in the last; which was no less to my Convenience than his.

The only Favour I ever asked of him was for his Gentleman, who he had all along entrusted with the Secret of our Affair, and who had once so much offended him by some Omissions in his Duty, that he found it very hard to make his peace; he came and laid his Case before my Woman Amy, and begged her to speak to me to intercede for him; which I did, and on my Account he was received again and pardoned; for which the grateful Dog requited me, by getting To-bed to his Benefactress Amy, at which I was very angry, but she generously acknowledged it was her Fault as much as his; that she loved the Fellow so much, that she believed if he had not asked her, she should have asked him; I say this pacify'd me, and I only obtained of her that she should not let him know that I knew it.

I might have interspersed this Part of my Story with a great many pleasant Parts and Discourses which happened between my Maid and I, but I omit them on Account of my own Story, which has been so extraordinary; however, I must mention something as to Amy and her Gentleman: I enquired of her upon what Terms they came to be so intimate, but Amy seemed backward to explain herself: I did not care to press her upon a Question of that Nature, knowing that she might answer my Question with a Question, and have said, Why how did I and the Prince come to be so intimate? So I left off farther enquiring into it till after some time, she told it me all freely of her own Accord, which, to cut it short, amount-

ed to no more than this, That like Mistress like Maid; as they had many leisure Hours together below, while they waited respectively, when his Lord and I were together above; I say they could hardly avoid the usual Question one to another, which is, Why might not they do the same Thing below that we did above?

On that Account, indeed, as I said above, I could not find in my Heart to be angry with *Amy*; I was indeed, afraid the Girl would have been with Child too, but that did not happen, and so there was no Hurt done; for *Amy* had been hansell'd before, as well as her Mistress, and by the same Party too, as you have heard.

After I was up again, and my Child provided with a good Nurse and withal, Winter coming on, it was proper to think of coming to *Paris* again, which I did; but as I had now a Coach and Horses, and some Servants to attend me, by my Lord's Allowance, I took the Liberty to have them come to *Paris* sometimes, and so to take a Tour into the Garden of the *Tuilleries*, and the other pleasant Places of the City: It happened one Day, that my Prince (if I may call him so) had a Mind to give me some Diversion, and to take the Air with me; but that he might do it, and not be publicly known, he comes to me in a Coach of the Count de ---, a great Officer of the Court, attended by his Liveries also; so that, in a Word, it was impossible to guess by the Equipage, who I was, or who I belonged to; also, that I might be the more effectually concealed, he ordered me to be taken up at a Mantua-Maker's House, where he sometimes came, whether upon other Amours, or not, was no Business of mine to enquire.

I knew nothing whither he intended to carry me, but when he was in the Coach with me, he told me, he had ordered his Servants to go to Court with me, and he would shew me some of the Beau Monde. I told him I cared not where I went, while I had the Honour to have him with me, so he carried me to the fine Palace of Meudon, where the Dauphin then was, and where he had some particular Intimacy with one of the Dauphin's Domesticks, who procured a Retreat for me in his Lodgings while we stayed there which was three or four Days.

While I was there, the King happened to come thither, from *Versailles*, and making but a short Stay, visited the Dauphiness, who was then living: The Prince was here Incognito, only because

cause of his being with me; and therefore, when he heard that the King was in the Garden, he kept close within the Lodgings; but that Gentleman, in whose Lodgings we were, with his Lady, and several others, went out to see the King, and I had the Honour to be asked to go with them.

After we had seen the King, who did not stay long in the Gardens, we walked up the broad Terrass, and crossing the Hall, towards the great Stair-Case, I had a Sight which confounded me at once, as, I doubt not, it would have done to any Woman in the World: The Horse Guards, or what they call there the *Gens-d'arms*, had upon some Occasion, been either upon Duty, or been Review'd, or something (I did not understand that Part) was the Matter, that occasioned their being there, I know not what; but walking in the Guard-Chamber, and with his Jack-Boots on, and the whole Habit of the Troop, as it is worn, when Horse-Guards are upon Duty, as they call it, at St. *James's-Park*; I say there, to my inexpressible Confusion, I saw Mr.----- my first Husband, the Brewer.

I could not be deceived; I passed so near him, that I almost brush'd him with my Cloaths, and look'd him full in the Face, but having my Fan before my Face, so that he could not know me; however, I knew him perfectly well, and I heard him speak, which was a second Way of knowing him; besides, being, you may be sure, astonish'd and surpriz'd at such a Sight, I turn'd about after I had pass'd him some Steps, and pretending to ask the Lady that was with me some Questions, I stood as if I had view'd the great Hall, the outer Guard-Chamber, and some other Things; but I did it, to take a full View of his Dress, that I might further inform myself.

While I stood thus amusing the Lady that was with me, with Questions, he walked, talking with another Man of the same Cloth, back again, just by me; and to my particular Satisfaction, or Dissatisfaction, take it which way you will, I heard him speak *English*, the other being, it seems, an *Englishman*.

I then asked the Lady some other Questions; Pray, Madam, says *L*, What are these Troopers here? Are they the King's Guards? No, says *she*, they are the *Gensd'arms*; a small Detachment of them, I suppose, attended the King to Day, but they are not his

Majesty's ordinary Guard: Another Lady that was with her, said, No, Madam, it seems that is not the Case; for I heard them saying, the *Gensd'arms* were here to Day by special Order, some of them being to march towards the *Rhine*, and these attend for Orders; but they go back to Morrow to *Orleans*, where they are expected.

This satisfied me in Part, but I found Means after this, to enquire whose particular Troop it was that the Gentlemen that were here belonged to; and with that, I heard, they would all be at *Paris* the Week after.

Two Days after this we returned to *Paris*, when I took Occasion to speak to my Lord, that I heard the *Gens d'Arms* were to be in the City the next Week, and that I should be charm'd with seeing them March, if they came in a Body: He was so obliging in such Things, that I need but just name a thing of that Kind, and it was done; so he ordered his Gentleman (I should now call him *Amy's* Gentleman) to get me a Place in a certain House, where I might see them March.

As he did not appear with me on this Occasion, so I had the Liberty of taking my Woman, *Amy*, with me; and stood where we were very well accommodated for the Observation which I was to make: I told *Amy* what I had seen, and she was as forward to make the Discovery, as I was to have her, and almost as much surpriz'd at the Thing itself; in a Word, the *Gensd'arms* entered the City, as was expected, and made a most glorious Show indeed, being new cloath'd and arm'd, and being to have their Standards blest'd by the Archbishop of *Paris*; on this Occasion they, indeed, looked very gay; and as they marched very leisurely, I had Time to take as critical a View, and make as nice a Search among them, as I pleas'd: Here, in a particular Rank, eminent for one monstrous siz'd Man on the Right, here, I say, I saw my Gentleman again, and a very handsome jolly Fellow he was, as any in the Troop, though not so monstrous large as that great one I speak of, who it seems was, however, a Gentleman of a good Family in *Gascogne*, and was called the *Giant of Gascogne*.

It was a kind of good Fortune to us, among the other Circumstances of it, that something caused the Troops to halt in their March, a little before that particular Rank came right against that

Win-

Window which I stood in, so that then we had Occasion to take our full View of him, at a small Distance, and so, as not to doubt of his being the same Person.

Amy, who thought she might, on many Accounts, venture with more Safety to be particular, than I could, asked her Gentleman, how a particular Man, who she saw there, among the *Gensd'arms*, might be enquired after, and found out; she having seen an *Englishman* riding there, which was supposed to be dead in *England* for several Years before she came out of *London*, and that his Wife had marry'd again. It was a Question the Gentleman did not well understand how to answer; but another Person that stood by told her, if she would tell him the Gentleman's Name, he would endeavour to find him out for her, and ask'd jestingly, if he was her Lover? *Amy* put that off with a Laugh, but still continued her Enquiry, and in such a Manner, as the Gentleman easily perceived she was in earnest; so he left bantering, and asked her in what Part of the Troop he rode; she foolishly told him his Name, which she should not have done; and pointing to the Comet that Troop carried, which was not then quite out of Sight, she let him easily know whereabouts he rode, only she could not name the Captain; however he, gave her such Directions afterwards, that, in short, *Amy*, who was an indefatigable Girl, found him out; it seems he had not changed his Name, not supposing any Enquiry would be made after him here; but, I say, *Amy* found him out, and went boldly to his Quarters, asked for him, and he came out immediately.

I believe I was not more confounded at my first seeing him at *Meudon*, than he was at seeing *Amy*; he started, and turned pale as Death; *Amy* believed, if he had seen her at first, in any convenient Place for so villainous a Purpose, he would have murdered her.

But he started, as I say above, and asked in *English*, with an Admiration, What are you! Sir, says she, don't you know me? Yes, says he, I knew you when you were alive, but what you are now, whether Ghost or Substance, I know not. Be not afraid, Sir, of that, says *Amy*, I am the same *Amy* that I was in your Service, and do not speak to you now for any Hurt, but that I saw you accidentally, Yesterday, ride among the Soldiers, I thought you might be glad to hear from your Friends at *London*. Well *Amy*, says he, than

then (having a little recovered himself) How does every Body do? What! is your Mistress here?

Amy. My Mistress, Sir, alafs! not the Mistress you mean, poor Gentlewoman; you left her in a sad Condition.

Gent. Why that's true, *Amy*, but it could not be help'd; I was in a sad Condition myself.

Amy. I believe so indeed, Sir, or else you had not gone away as you did; for it was a very terrible Condition you left them all in, that I must say.

Gent. What did they do after I was gone?

Amy. Do Sir! very miserably you may be sure; how could it be otherwise?

Gent. Well, that's true indeed; but you may tell me, *Amy*, what became of them, if you please; for though I went so away, it was not because I did not love them all very well, but because I could not bear to see the Poverty that was coming upon them, and which it was not in my Power to help; What could I do?

Amy. Nay, I believe so indeed, and I have heard my Mistress say, many Times, she did not doubt but your Affliction was as great as hers, almost, wherever you were.

Gent. Why did she believe I was alive then?

Amy. Yes, Sir, she always said, she believed you were alive; because she thought she should have heard something of you, if you had been dead.

Gent. Ay, ay, my Perplexity was very great indeed, or else I had never gone away.

Amy. It was very cruel tho', to the poor Lady, Sir, my Mistress; she almost broke her Heart for you at first, for fear of what might befall you, and at last, because she could not hear from you.

Gent. Alas *Amy*! What could I do? Things were driven to the last Extremity before I went; I could have done nothing, but help starve them all, if I had stay'd; and besides, I could not bear to see it.

Amy. You know, Sir, I can say little to what pass'd before; but I am a melancholy Witness to the sad Distresses of my poor Mistress, as long as I stay'd with her, and which would grieve your Heart to hear them.

Here

Here she tells my whole Story, to the Time that the Parish took off one of my Children; and which she perceived very much affected him; and he shook his Head, and said some things very bitter, when he heard of the Cruelty of his own Relations to me.

Gent. Well *Amy*, I have heard enough so far; What did she do afterwards?

Amy. I can't give you any farther Account, Sir; my Mistress would not let me stay with her any longer; she said, she could neither pay me, or subsist me; I told her, I would serve her without any Wages, but I could not live without Victuals, you know; so I was forced to leave her, poor Lady, sore against my Will, and I heard afterwards, that the Landlord seized her Goods, so she was, I suppose, turned out of Doors; for as I went by the Door, about a Month after, I saw the House shut up; and about a Fortnight after that, I found there were Workmen at work, sitting it up, as I suppose, for a new Tenant; but none of the Neighbours could tell me what was become of my poor Mistress, only that they said, she was so poor, that it was next to begging; that some of the neighbouring Gentlefolks had relieved her, or that else she must have starved; then she went on, and told him, that after that, they never heard any more of [me] her Mistress; but that she had been seen once or twice in the City, very shabby, and poor in Cloaths, and it was thought she work'd at her Needle for her Bread: All this the Jade said with so much Cunning, and managed and humoured it so well, and wiped her Eyes, and cry'd so artificially, that he took it all as it was intended he should, and once or twice he saw Tears in his Eyes too: He told her, it was a moving melancholy Story, and it had almost broke his Heart at first; but that he was driven to the last Extremity, and could do nothing but stay and see them starve, which he could not bear the Thoughts of, but should have Pistol'd himself, if any such Thing had happen'd while he was there; that he left [me] his Wife, all the Money he had in the World, but twenty five Pounds, which was as little as he could take with him, to seek his Fortune in the World; he could not doubt but that his Relations, seeing they were all Rich, would have taken the poor Children off, and not let them come to the Parish; and that his Wife was young

and handsome, and, he thought, might Marry again, perhaps to her Advantage; and for that very Reason he never wrote to her, or let her know he was alive, that she might, in a reasonable Term of Years, Marry, and perhaps mend her Fortunes: That he resolved never to claim her, because he should rejoice to hear, that she had settled to her Mind; and that he wished there had been a Law made, to empower a Woman to marry, if her Husband was not heard of in so long a Time; which Time, he thought, should not be above four Years, which was long enough to send Word in, to a Wife or Family, from any Part of the World.

Amy said, she could say nothing to that; but this, that she was satisfied, her Mistress would marry no body, unless she had certain Intelligence that he had been dead, from somebody that saw him buried; but alas! *says Amy*, my Mistress was reduced to such dismal Circumstances, that nobody would be so foolish to think of her, unless it had been somebody to go a begging with her.

Amy then seeing him so perfectly deluded, made a long and lamentable Outcry, how she had been deluded away to marry a poor Footman; for he is no worse, or better, *says she*, though he calls himself a Lord's Gentleman; and here, *says Amy*, he has dragg'd me over into a strange Country, to make a Beggar of me; which, by the way, was all Hypocrisy, but acted so to the Life, as perfectly deceived him, and he gave entire Credit to every Word of it.

Why, *Amy says he*, you are very well dress'd; you don't look as if you were in danger of being a Beggar: Ay, hang him, *says Amy*, they love to have fine Cloaths here, if they have never a Sin--k under them; but I love to have Money in Cash, rather than a Chest full of fine Cloaths; besides Sir, *says she*, most of the Cloaths I have, were given me in the last Place I had, when I went away from my Mistress.

Upon the whole of the Discourse, *Amy* got out of him, what Condition he was in, and how he lived, upon her Promise to him, that if ever she came to *England*, and should see her old Mistress, she should not let her know that he was alive: Alas! Sir, *says Amy*, I may never come to see *England* again, as long as I live; and if I should, it would be ten Thousand to One, whether I shall see my old Mistress; for how should I know which Way to look for her? Or what Part of *England* she may be in; not I, *says*

she,

she, I don't so much as know how to enquire for her; and if I should, *says Amy*, ever be so happy as to see her. I would not do her so much Mischief as to tell her where you were, Sir, unless she was in a Condition to help herself and you too. This farther deluded him, and made him entirely open in his conversing with her. As to his own Circumstances, he told her, she saw him in the highest Preferment he had arrived to, or was ever like to arrive to; for, having no Friends or Acquaintance in *France*. and which was worse, no Money, he never expected to rise; that he could have been made a Lieutenant to a Troop of Light Horse but the Week before, by the Favour of an Officer in the *Gens d'arms*, who was his Friend; but that he must have found eight Thousand Pistoles to have paid for it, to the Gentleman who possessed it, and had Leave given him to sell: But where could I get eight Thousand Pistoles, *says he*, that have never been Master of five Hundred Livres, ready Money, at one Time, since I came into *France*?

O Dear! Sir, *says Amy*, I am very sorry you say so: I fancy if you once got up to some Preferment, you would think of my old Mistress again, and do something for her; poor Lady, *says Amy*, she wants it, to be sure; and then she falls a crying again; 'tis a sad thing, indeed, *says she*, that you should be so hard put to it for Money, when you had got a Friend to recommend you, and should lose it for want of Money. Ay, so it was *Amy*, indeed, *says he*; but what can a Stranger do, that has neither Money or Friends? Here *Amy* puts in again on my Account; Well, *says she*, my poor Mistress has had the Loss, though she knows nothing of it; O dear! how happy would it have been, to be sure, Sir, you would have helped her all you could. Ay, *says he*, *Amy*, so I would, with all my Heart; and even as I am, I would send her some Relief, if I thought she wanted it; only, that then letting her know that I was alive, might do her some Prejudice, in case of her settling, or marrying any body.

Alas! *says Amy*, Marry! Who will marry her in the poor Condition she is in? And so their Discourse ended at that Time.

All this was meer Talk on both Sides, and Words of Course; for on farther Enquiry, *Amy* found, that he had no such Offer of a Lieutenant's Commission, or any thing like it; and that he rambled

bled in his Discourse, from one Thing to another: But of that in its Place.

You may be sure that this Discourse, as *Amy* at first related it, was moving to the last Degree, upon me; and I was once going to have sent him the eight Thousand Pistoles, to purchase the Commission he had spoken of; but as I knew his Character better than any body, I was willing to search a little farther into it; and so I let *Amy* to enquire of some other of the Troop, to see what Character he had; and whether there was any thing in the Story of a Lieutenant's Commission, or no.

But *Amy* soon came to a better Understanding of him; for she presently learnt, that he had a most scoundrel Character; that there was nothing of Weight in any thing he said; but that he was, in short, a meer Sharper; one that would stick at nothing to get Money, and that there was no depending on any thing he said; and that, more especially, about the Lieutenant's Commission, she understood, that there was nothing at all in it; but they told her, how he had often made use of that Sham to borrow Money, in hopes to get him Preferment; that he had reported that he had a Wife, and five Children, in *England*, who he maintained out of his Pay; and by these Shifts had run into Debt in several Places; and upon several Complaints for such things, he had been threatened to be turned out of the *Gensd'arms*; and that, in short, he was not to be believed in any thing he said, or trusted on any Account.

Upon this Information, *Amy* began to cool in her farther meddling with him; and told me, it was not safe for me to attempt doing any Good, unless I resolved to put him upon Suspicious and Enquiries, which might be to my Ruin, in the Condition I was now in.

I was soon confirmed in this Part of his Character, for the next time that *Amy* came to talk with him, he discovered himself more effectually, for while she had put him in Hopes of procuring One to advance the Money for the Lieutenant's Commission for him, upon easie Conditions, dropt the Discourse, then pretended it was too late, and that he could not get it, and then descended to ask poor *Amy* to lend him five Hundred Pistoles.

Amy pretended Poverty, that her Circumstances were but mean, and that she could not raise such a Sum, and this she did to try him

to the utmost; he descended to three Hundred, then to one Hundred, then to fifty, and then to a Pistole, which she lent him, and he never intending to pay it, play'd out of her Sight as much as he could; and thus being satisfied that he was the same worthless Thing he ever had been, I threw off all Thoughts of him; whereas, had he been a Man of any Sense, and of any Principle of Honour, I had it in my Thoughts to retire to *England* again, and send for him over, and have lived honestly with him: But as a *Fool* is the worst of Husbands to do a Woman Good, so a *Fool* is the worst Husband a Woman can do Good to: I would willingly have done him Good, but he was not qualified to receive it, or make the best Use of it; had I sent him ten Thousand Crowns, instead of eight Thousand Livres, and sent it with express Condition, that he should immediately have bought himself the Commission he talked of, with Part of the Money, and have sent some of it to relieve the Necessities of his poor miserable Wife at *London*, and to prevent his Children to be kept by the Parish, it was evident, he would have been still but a private Trooper, and his Wife and Children should still have starved at *London*, or been kept of meer Charity, as, for ought he knew, they then were.

Seeing therefore no Remedy, I was obliged to withdraw my Hand from him, that had been my first Destroyer, and reserve the Assistance that I intended to have given him, for another more desirable Opportunity; all that I had now to do, was to keep myself out of his Sight, which was not very difficult for me to do, considering in what Station he lived.

Amy and I had several Consultations then, upon the main Question, namely, how to be sure never to chop upon him again, by Chance, and to be surprized into a Discovery indeed: *Amy* proposed, that we should always take Care to know where the *Gens d'arms* were quartered, and thereby effectually avoid them; and this was one Way.

But this was not so as to be fully to my Satisfaction; no ordinary Way of enquiring where the *Gens d'arms* were quartered, were sufficient to me; but I found out a Fellow, who was compleatly qualified for the Work of a Spy (for *France* has Plenty of such People) this Man I employ'd to be a constant and particular Attendant upon his Person and Motions; and he was especially employed, and ordered to haunt him as a Ghost; that he should scarce let him be e-

ver out of his Sight; he performed this to a Nicety, and failed not to give me a perfect Journal of all his Motions, from Day to Day; and whether for his Pleasures, or his Business, was always at his Heels.

This was somewhat Expensive, and such a Fellow merited to be well paid; but he did his Business so exquisitely punctual, that this poor Man scarce went out of the House, without my knowing the Way he went, the Company he kept when he was Abroad, and when he stay'd at Home.

By this extraordinary Conduct I made myself safe, and so went out in Publick, or stay'd at Home, as I found he was, or was not, in a Possibility of being at *Paris*, or *Versailles*, or any Place I had Occasion to be at: This, though it was very chargeable, yet as I found it absolutely necessary, so I took no Thought about the Expence of it; for I knew I could not purchase my Safety too dear.

By this Management I found an Opportunity to see what a most insignificant, unthinking Life, the poor indolent Wretch, who by his unactive Temper had been my Ruin, now lived; how he only rose in the Morning, to go to Bed at Night; that saving the necessary Motion of the Troops, which he was obliged to attend, he was a meer motionless Animal, and of no Consequence in the World; that he seemed to be one, who, though he was indeed alive, had no manner of Business in Life, but to stay to be called out of it; he neither kept any Company, minded any Sport, play'd at any Game, or indeed, did any Thing of Moment; but, in short, sauntered about, like one, that it was not two Livres Value whether he was dead or alive; that when he was gone, would leave no Remembrance behind him that ever he was here; that if ever he did any thing in the World to be talked of, it was only to get five Beggars, and starve his Wife: The Journal of his Life, which I had constantly sent me every Week, was the least insignificant of any thing of its Kind that was ever seen; as it had really nothing of Earnest in it, so it would make no Jest to relate it; it was not important enough, so much as to make the Reader merry withal; and for that Reason I omit it.

Yet this *Nothing-doing Wretch* was I obliged to watch and guard against, as against the only Thing that was capable of doing me Hurt in the World, I was to shun him, as we would shun a Spectre,
or

or even the Devil, he was actually in our Way; and it cost me after the Rate of a Hundred and fifty Livres a Month, and very cheap too, to have this Creature constantly kept in View; that is to say, my Spy undertook, never to let him be out of his Sight an Hour, but so as that he could give an Account of him; which was much the easier to be done, considering his Way of Living; for he was sure, that for whole Weeks together, he would be ten Hours of the Day, half asleep on a Bench at the Tavern Door where he quartered, or drunk within the House.

Though this wicked Life he led, sometimes moved me to pity him, and to wonder how so well-bred, Gentlemanly a Man as he once was, could degenerate into such a useless Thing, as he now appeared; yet, at the same Time, it gave me most contemptible Thoughts of him, and made me often say, I was a Warning for all the Ladies of Europe, against marrying of FOOLS; a Man of Sense falls in the World, and gets up again, and a Woman has some Chance for herself; but with a FOOL! once fall, and ever undone; once in the Ditch, and die in the Ditch; once Poor, and sure to starve,

But 'tis Time to have done with him; once I had nothing to hope for, but to see him again; now my only Felicity was, if possible, never to see him, and, above all, to keep him from seeing me; which, as above, I took effectual Care of.

I was now returned to Paris; my little Son of Honour, as I called him, was left at -----, where my last Country Seat then was, and I came to Paris at the Prince's Request; thither he came to me as soon as I arrived, and told me, he came to give me Joy of my Return, and to make his Acknowledgments, for that I had given him a SON: I thought indeed, he had been going to give me a Present, and so he did the next Day, but in what he said then, he only jested with me. He gave me his Company all the Evening, Supp'd with me about Midnight, and did me the Honour, as I then called it, to lodge me in his Arms all the Night, telling me, in jest, that the best Thanks for a Son born, was giving the Pledge for another.

But as I hinted, so it was, the next Morning he laid me down, on my Toilet, a Purse with three Hundred Pistoles: I saw him lay it down, and understood what he meant, but I took no Notice of it, till I came to it (as it were) casually; then I gave a great Cry-out, and fell a scolding in my Way, for he gave me all possible freedom

of Speech, on such Occasions: I told him he was unkind; that he would never give me an Opportunity to ask him for any thing; and that he forced me to Blush, by being too much obliged, and the like; all which I knew was very agreeable to him; for as he was Bountiful beyond Measure, so he was infinitely obliged by my being so backward to ask any Favours; and I was even with him, for I never asked him for any Thing in my Life.

Upon this rallying him, he told me, I had either perfectly studied the Art of Humour, or else, what was the greatest Difficulty to others, was Natural to me; adding, That nothing could be more obliging to a Man of Honour, than not to be sollicitous and craving.

I told him, nothing could be craving upon him; that he left no room for it; that I hoped he did not give, merely to avoid the Trouble of being importund; I told him, he might depend upon it, that I should be reduced very low indeed, before I offered to disturb him that way.

He said, a Man of Honour ought always to know what he ought to do; and as he did nothing but what he knew was reasonable, he gave me Leave to be free with him, if I wanted any Thing; that he had too much Value for me, to deny me any Thing, if I asked; but that it was infinitely agreeable to him to hear me say, that what he did was to my Satisfaction.

We strain'd Compliments thus a great while, and as he had me in his Arms most part of the Time, so upon all my Expressions of his Bounty to me, he put a Stop to me with his Kisses, and would admit me to go no farther.

I should in this Place mention, that this Prince was not a Subject of *France*, though at that Time he resided at *Paris*, and was much at Court, where, I suppose he had, or expected some considerable Employment: But I mention it on this Account; that a few Days after this, he came to me, and told me he was come to bring me not the most welcome News that ever I heard from him in his Life; I looked at him a little surprized, but he returned, Do not be uneasy, it is as unpleasant to me as to you, but I come to consult with you about it, and see if it cannot be made a little easy to us both.

I seemed still more concerned and surprized; at last he said it was, that he believed he should be obliged to go into *Italy*, which though

though otherwise it was very agreeable to him, yet his parting with me, made it a very dull thing but to think of.

I sat mute, as one Thunder-struck; for a good while; and it presently occur'd to me, that I was going to lose him, which, indeed, I could but ill bear the Thoughts of; and as he told me, I turned pale: What's the Matter? *said he hastily*; I have surpriz'd you indeed; and stepping to the Side-Board fills a Dram of Cordial-Water (which was of his own bringing) and comes to me, Be not surprized, *said he*, I'll go no where without you; adding several other Things so kind, as nothing could exceed it.

I might, indeed, turn pale, for I was very much surprized at first, believing that this was, as it often happens in such Cases, only a Project to drop me, and break off an Amour, which he had now carried on so long; and a Thousand Thoughts whirl'd about my Head in the few Moments while I was kept in Suspence (for they were but a few) I say, I was indeed surprized, and might, perhaps, look pale; but I was not in any Danger of Fainting, that I knew of.

However, it not a little pleas'd me, to see him so concerned and anxious about me; but I stopp'd a little, when he put the Cordial to my Mouth, and taking the Glass in my Hand, *I said*, My Lord, your Words are infinitely more of a Cordial to me, than this Citron; for as nothing can be a greater Affliction than to lose you, so nothing can be a greater Satisfaction than the Assurance, that I shall not have that Misfortune.

He made me sit down, and sat down by me, and after saying a Thousand kind Things to me; he turns upon me with a Smile, Why, will you venture yourself to *Italy* with me? *says he*; I stopp'd a while, and then answered, that I wondered he would ask me that Question, for I would go any where in the World, or all over the World, wherever he should desire me, and give me the Felicity of his Company.

Then he enter'd into a long Account of the Occasion of his Journey, and how the King had engag'd him to go, and some other Circumstances, which are not proper to enter into here; it being by no means proper to say any thing that might lead the Reader into the least Guess at the Person.

But to cut short this Part of the Story, and the History of our Journey, and Stay abroad, which would almost fill up a Volume of
 Z itself,

itself, I say, we spent all that Evening in chearful Consultations about the Manner of our Travelling, the Equipage and Figure he should go in, and in what Manner I should go: Several Ways were proposed, but none seemed feasible; till, at last, I told him, I thought it would be so Troublesome, so Expensive, and so Publick, that it would be many Ways inconvenient to him; and though it was a kind of Death to me, to lose him, yet that rather than so very much perplex his Affairs, I would submit to any thing.

At the next Visit I filled his Head with the same Difficulties, and then, at last, came over him with a Proposal, that I would stay in Paris, or where else he should direct; and when I heard of his safe Arrival, would come away by myself, and place myself as near him as I could.

This gave him no Satisfaction at all; nor would he hear any more of it; but if I durst venture myself, as he called it, such a Journey, he would not lose the Satisfaction of my Company; and as for the Expence that was not to be named, neither indeed was there room to name it; for I found that he travelled at the King's Expence, as well for himself as for all his Equipage; being upon a Piece of secret Service of the last Importance.

But after several Debates between ourselves, he came to this Resolution, viz. that he would travel incognito, and so he should avoid all publick Notice, either of himself, or of who went with him; and that then he should not only carry me with him, but have a perfect Leisure of enjoying my agreeable Company, (as he was pleased to call it) all the Way.

This was so obliging that nothing could be more; so upon this Foot he immediately set to Work to prepare things for his Journey; and by his Directions so did I too: But now I had a terrible Difficulty upon me, and which way to get over it I knew not; and that was, in what Manner to take Care of what I had to leave behind me; I was rich, as I have said, very rich, and what to do with it I knew not, nor who to leave in Trust I knew not: I had no-body but Amy in the World, and to travel without Amy was very uncomfortable; or to leave all I had in the World with her, and if she miscarried be ruined at once, was still a frightful Thought; for she might die and whose Hands things might fall into I knew not: This gave me great Uneasiness, and I knew not what to do; for I could not

not mention it to the Prince, lest he should see that I was richer than he thought I was.

But the Prince made all this easy to me ; for in concerting Measures for our Journey, he started the thing himself, and asked me merrily one Evening, who I would trust with all my Wealth in my Absence?

My Wealth, my Lord, said I, except what I owe to your Goodness is but small ; but yet, that little I have, I confess, causes some Thoughtfulness ; because I have no Acquaintance in Paris, that I dare trust with it, nor any-body but my Woman to leave in the House ; and how to do without her upon the road, I do not well know.

As to the Road, be not concerned, says the Prince, I'll provide you servants to your mind ; and as for your Woman, if you can trust her, leave her here, and I'll put you in a way how to secure things, as well as if you were at Home : I bowed, and told him, I could not be put into better Hands than his own, and that therefore I would govern all my Measures by his Directions ; so we talked no more of it that Night.

The next Day he sent me in a great iron Chest, so large, that it was as much as six lusty Fellows could get up the Steps, into the House ; and in this I put indeed all my Wealth ; and for my Safety he ordered a good honest ancient Man and his Wife, to be in the House with her, to keep her Company, and a Maid-Servant and Boy ; so that there was a good Family, and Amy was Madam, the Mistress of the House.

Things being thus secured, we set out Incog. as he called it ; but we had two Coaches and six Horses, two Chaises, and about eight Men-Servants on Horseback, all well armed.

Never was Woman better used in this World, that went upon no other Account than I did ; I had three Women Servants to wait on me, one whereof was an old Madam ----, who thoroughly understood her Business, and managed every thing as if she had been Major-Domo ; so I had no trouble ; they had one Coach to themselves, and the Prince and I in the other ; only that sometimes, where he knew it necessary, I went into their Coach ; and one particular Gentleman of the Retinue rode with him.

I shall say no more of the Journey, than that when we came to those frightful Mountains, the Alps there was no travelling in our Coaches, so he ordered a Horse Litter, but carried by Mules, to be provided for me, and himself went on Horseback; the Coaches went some other way back to Lyons; then we had Coaches hired at Turin, which met us at Susa; so that we were accommodated again, and went by easy Journeys afterwards to Rome, where his Business, whatever it was, called him to stay some time, and from thence to Venice.

He was as good as his Word indeed, for I had the Pleasure of his Company, and in a Word, engrossed his Conversation almost all the Way: He took Delight in shewing me every thing that was to be seen, and particularly in telling me something of the History of every thing he shewed me.

What valuable Pains were here thrown away upon One, who, he was sure, at last, to abandon with Regret! How below himself did a Man of Quality, and of so thousand Accomplishments, behave in all this! 'Tis one of my Reasons for entering into this Part, which otherwise would not be worth relating: Had I been a Daughter, or a Wife, of whom it may be said, that he had a just Concern in their Instruction or Improvement, it had been an admirable Step; but all this to a Whore! To one who he carried with him upon no Account that could be rationally agreeable; and none but to gratify the meanest of humane Frailties: This was the Wonder of it.

But such is the Power of a vicious Inclination; Whoring was, in a Word, his darling Crime; the worst Excursion he made, for he was otherwise, one of the most excellent Persons in the World, no Passions, no furious Excursions, no ostentatious Pride, the most humble, courteous, affable Person in the World, not an oath, not an indecent Word, or the least Blemish in Behaviour, was to be seen in all his Conversation, except as before excepted, and it has given me Occasion for many dark Reflections since, to look back and think, that I should be the Snare of such a Person's Life, that I should influence him to so much Wickedness, and that I should be the Instrument in the Hand of the Devil, to do him so much Prejudice.

We were near two Year upon this grand Tour, as it may be called, during most of which I resided at Rome or at Venice, having only been twice at Florence, and once at Naples: I made some very diverting

diverting and useful Observations in all these Places; and particularly, of the Conduct of the Ladies; for I had Opportunity of conversing very much among them, by the Help of the old Witch that travelled with us; she had been at *Naples*, and at *Venice*, and had lived in the former several Years, where, as I found, she had lived but a loose Life, as indeed, the Women of *Naples* generally do; and, in short, I found she was fully acquainted with all the intriguing Arts of that Part of the World.

Here my Lord bought me a little Female *Turkish* Slave, who being taken at Sea by a *Maltese* Man of War, was brought in there; and of her I learnt the *Turkish* Language, their Way of Dressing, and some *Turkish*, or rather *Moorish* Songs, of which I made use to an Advantage, on an extraordinary Occasion, some Years after, as you shall hear in its Place. I need not say I learnt *Italian* too, for I got pretty well Mistress of that, before I had been there a Year; and as I had Leisure enough, and lov'd the Language, I read all the *Italian* Books I could come at.

I began to be so in Love with *Italy*, especially with *Naples* and *Venice*, that I could have been very well satisfied to have sent for *Amy*, and have taken up my Residence there for Life.

As to *Rome*, I did not like it at all: The Swarms of Ecclesiasticks of all Kinds, on one Side, and the scoundrel Rabbles of the Common People, on the other, make *Rome* the unpleasantest Place in the World to live in; the innumerable Number of Lacqueys, and other Servants, is such, that they used to say, that there are very few of the Common People in *Rome*, but what have been Footmen, or Porters, or Grooms to Cardinals, or Foreign Ambassadors: In a Word, they have an Air of sharpening and cozening, quarrelling and scolding, upon their general Behaviour; and when I was there, the Footmen made such a Broil between two great Families in *Rome*, about which of their Coaches (the Ladies being in the Coaches on either Side) should give Way to 'tother, that there was above thirty People wounded on both Sides, five or six killed outright, and both the Ladies frighted almost to Death.

But I have no Mind to write the History of my Travels on this side of the World, at least, not now; it would be too full of Variety.

I must not, however, omit, that the Prince continued in all this Journey, the most kind obliging Person to me, in the World, and

so constant, that though we were in a Country where 'tis well known all manner of Liberties are taken, I am yet well assured, he neither took the Liberty he knew he might have, or so much as desired it.

I have often thought of this noble Person on that Account; had he been but half so true, so faithful and constant to the best Lady in the World, I mean his Princess; how glorious a Virtue had it been in him? and how free had he been from those just Reflections which touch'd him, on her behalf, when it was too late.

We had some very agreeable Conversations upon this Subject; and once he told me, with a kind of more than ordinary Concern upon his Thoughts, that he was greatly beholden to me for taking this hazardous and difficult Journey; for that I had kept him Honest; I looked up in his Face, and coloured as red as Fire: Well, well, *says he*, do not let that surprize you; I do say you have kept me Honest. My Lord, *said I*, 'tis not for me to explain your Words, but I wish I could turn them my own Way; I hope, *says I*, and believe, we are both as Honest as we can be, in our Circumstances: ay, ay, *says he*, and honestier than I doubt I should have ben, if you had not been with me; I cannot say but if you had not been here, I should have wandered among the gay World here, in *Naples*, and in *Venice* too; for it is not such a Crime here, as it is in other Places; but I protest, *says he*, I have not touch'd a Woman in *Italy* but yourself; and more than that, I have not had so much as any Desire to it; so that, I say, you have kept me Honest.

I was silent, and was glad that he interrupted me, or kept me from speaking, with kissing me, for really I knew not what to say: I was once going to say, if his Lady, the Princess, had been with him, she would, doubtless, have had the same Influence upon his Virtue, with infinitely more Advantage to him; but I considered this might give him Offence; and besides, such things might have been dangerous to the Circumstance I stood in; so it passed off: But I must confess, I saw he was quite another Man, as to Women, than I understood he had always been before; and it was a particular Satisfaction to me, that I was thereby convinced, that what he said was true, and that he was, as I may say, all my own.

I was with Child again in this Journey, and Lay-in at *Venice*; but was not so happy as before; I brought him another Son, and a very fine Boy it was, but it liv'd not above two Months; nor, after the first

first Touches of Affection (which are usual, I believe, to all Mothers) were over, was I sorry the Child did not live, the necessary Difficulties attending it in our travelling, being considered.

After these several Perambulations, my Lord told me, his Business began to close, and we would think of returning to *France*, which I was very glad of, but principally on Account of my Treasure I had there, which, as you have heard, was very considerable: It is true, I had Letters very frequently from my Maid *Amy*, with Accounts, that every thing was very safe, and that was very much to my Satisfaction: However, as the Prince's Negotiations were at an End, and he was obliged to return, I was very glad to go; so we returned from *Venice* to *Turin*, and in the Way, I saw the famous City of *Milan*; from *Turin*, we went over the Mountains again, as before, and our Coaches met us at *Port a Voisin*, between *Chambery* and *Lyons*; and so, by easie Journeys, we arrived safely at *Paris*, having been absent about two Years, wanting about eleven Days, as above.

I found the little Family we left, just as we left them, and *Amy* cry'd for Joy when she saw me, and I almost did the same.

The Prince took his Leave of me the Night before; for as he told me, he knew he should be met upon the Road by several Persons of Quality, and perhaps, by the Princess herself; so we lay at two different Inns that Night, lest some should come quite to the Place, as indeed it happened.

After this I saw him not, for above twenty Days, being taken up in his Family, and also with Business; but he sent me his Gentleman, to tell me the Reason of it, and bid me not be uneasy; and that satisfied me effectually.

In all this Affluence of my good Fortune, I did not forget that I had been Rich and Poor once already, alternately; and that I ought to know, that the Circumstances I was now in, were not to be expected to last always; that I had one Child, and expected another; and if I bred often, it would something impair me in the great Article that supported my Interest, I mean, what he called Beauty; that as that declined, I might expect the Fire would abate, and the Warmth with which I was now so carressed, would cool, and in time, like the other Mistresses of great Men, I might be dropt again; and that,

that, therefore, it was my Business to take Care that I should fall as softly as I could.

I say, I did not forget, therefore, to make as good Provision for myself, as if I had had nothing to have subsisted but what I now gained; whereas I had not less than ten Thousand Pounds, as I said above, which I had amassed, or secured, rather out of the Ruins of my faithful Friend, the Jeweller; and which, he little thinking of what was so near him when he went out, told me, though in a kind of a Jest, was all my own, if he was knock'd o'th' Head; and which, upon that Title, I took Care to preserve.

My greatest Difficulty now was, how to secure my Wealth, and to keep what I had got; for I had greatly added to this Wealth, by the generous Bounty of the Prience -----, and the more, by the private retired Manner of Living, which he rather desired for Privacy, than Parsimony; for he supply'd me for a more magnificent Way of Life than I desired, if it had been proper.

I shall cut short the History of this prosperous Wickedness, with telling you I brought him a third Son, within little more than eleven Months after our Return from *Italy*, that now I lived a little more openly, and went by a particular Name which he gave me Abroad; but which I must omit, viz. the Countess de -----, and had Coaches and Servants; suitable to the Quality he had given me the Appearance of, and which is more than usually happens in such Cases; this held eight Years from the Beginning; during which Time, as I had been very faithful to him, so I must say, as above, that I believe he was so separated to me, that whereas he usually had two or three Women, which he kept privately, he had not in all that Time meddled with any of them, but that I had so perfectly engrossed him, that he dropt them all; not, perhaps, that he saved much by it, for I was a very chargeable Mistress to him, that I must acknowledge; but it was all owing to his particular Affection to me, not to my Extravagance; for, as I said, he never gave me leave to ask him for any thing, but poured in his Favours and Presents faster than I expected, and so fast, that I could not have the Assurance to make the least Mention of desiring more.

Nor do I speak this of my own Guess, I mean, about his Constancy to me, and his quitting all other Women; but the old *Harradan*,

as I may call her, who he made the Guide of our Travelling, and who was a strange old Creature, told me a Thousand Stories of his Gallantry, as she called it, and how, as he had no less than three Mistresses at one Time, and, as I found, all of her procuring, he had of a sudden dropt them all, and that he was entirely lost to both her and them; that they did believe he was fallen into some new Hands, but she could never hear who, or where, till he sent for her to go this Journey; and then the old Hag complimented me upon his Choice, That she did not wonder I had so engrossed him; so much Beauty, &c. and there she stopt.

Upon the whole, I found by her, what was, you may be sure, to my particular Satisfaction, viz. that, as above, I had him all my own.

But the highest Tide has its Ebb; and in all things of this Kind, there is a Reflux which sometimes also is more impetuously violent than the first Aggression: My Prince was a Man of a vast Fortune, though no Sovereign, and therefore there was no Probability that the Expence of keeping a Mistress could be injurious to him, as to his Estate; he had also several Employments, both out of France, as well as in it; for, as above, I say, he was not a Subject of France, though he lived in that Court: He had a Princess, a Wife, with whom he had lived several Years, and a Woman (so the Voice of Fame reported) the most valuable of her Sex; of Birth equal to him, if not superior, and of Fortune proportionable; but in Beauty, Wit, and a Thousand good Qualities, superior not to most Women, but even to all her Sex; and as to her Virtue, the Character which was most justly her due, was that of, not only the best of Princesses, but even the best of Women.

They lived in the utmost Harmony, as with such a Princess, it was impossible to be otherwise; but yet the Princess was not insensible that her Lord had his *Foibles*; that he did make some Excursions; and particularly, that he had one Favourite Mistress which sometimes engrossed him more than she (the Princess) could wish, or be easily satisfied with: However, he was so good, so generous, so truly kind a Wife, that she never gave him any Uneasiness on this Account; except so much as must arise from his Sense of her bearing the Affront of it with such Patience, and such a profound Respect for him, as was in itself enough to have reformed him, and

did sometimes shock his generous Mind, so as to keep him at home, as I may call it, a great while together; and it was not long before I not only perceived it by his Absence, but really got a Knowledge of the Reason of it, and once or twice he even acknowledged it to me.

It was a Point that lay not in me to manage, I made a kind of Motion once or twice to him, to leave me, and keep himself to her, as he ought by the Laws and Rites of Matrimony to do, and argued the Generosity of the Princess to him, to persuade him; but I was a Hypocrite; for had I prevailed with him really to be honest, I had lost him, which I could not bear the Thoughts of; and he might easily see I was not in Earnest; one time in particular, when I took upon me to talk at this rate, I found when I argued so much for the Virtue and Honour, the Birth, and above all, the generous Usage he found in the Person of the Princess, with Respect to his private Amours, and how it should prevail upon him, &c. I found it began to affect him, and he returned, And do you indeed, says he, persuade me to leave you? Would you have me think you sincere? I looked up in his Face, smiling, Not for any other Favourite, my Lord, said I, that would break my Heart, but for Madam the Princess, said I, and then I could say no more, Tears followed, and I sat silent a while: Well, said he, if ever I do leave you, it shall be on the virtuous Account; it shall be for the Princess, I assure you it shall be for no other Woman; That's enough, my Lord, said I, there I ought to submit; and while I am assured it shall be for no other Mistress, I promise your Highness, I will not repine; or that, if I do, it shall be a silent Grief, it shall not interrupt your Felicity.

All this while I said I knew not what, and said what I was no more able to do, than he was able to leave me; which at that Time he was no more able to do, no, not for the Princess herself.

But another term of Affairs determined this Matter; for the Princess was taken very ill, and in the Opinion of all her Physicians, very dangerously so; in her Sickness she desired to speak with her Lord, and to take her Leave of him: At this grievous Parting, she said so many passionate kind Things to him; lamented that she had left him no Children; she had had three, but they were dead; hinted to him, that it was one of the chief things which gave her Satisfaction in Death, as to this World; that she should leave him room to

have Heirs to his Family, by some Princess that should supply her Place; with all Humility, but with a Christian Earnestness, recommended to him to do Justice to such Princess, whoever it should be, from whom, to be sure, he would expect Justice; that is to say, to keep to her singly, according to the solemnest part of the Marriage Covenant; humbly asked his Highness Pardon if she had any way offended him; and appealing to Heaven, before whose Tribunal she was to appear, that she had never violated her Honour, or her Duty to him; and praying to Jesus, and the Blessed Virgin, for his Highness; and thus with the most moving, and most passionate Expressions of her Affection to him, took her last Leave of him, and died the next Day.

This Discourse from a Princess so valuable in herself, and the Loss of her following so immediately after, made such deep Impressions on him, that he looked back with Detestation upon the former part of his Life; grew melancholly and reserved; changed his Society, and much of the general Conduct of his Life; resolved on a Life regulated most strictly by the Rules of Virtue and Piety; and in a Word was quite another Man.

The first part of his Reformation, was a Storm upon me; for, about ten Day's after the Princess's Funeral, he sent a Message to me by his Gentleman, intimating, though in very civil Terms, and with a short Preamble, or Introduction, that he desired I would not take it ill that he was obliged to let me know, that he could see me no more: His gentleman told me a long Story of the new Regulation of Life his Lord had taken up, and that he had been so afflicted for the Loss of his Princess, that he thought it would either shorten his Life, or he would retire into some Religious House, to end his Days in Solitude.

I need not direct any-body to suppose how I received this News; I was indeed exceedingly surprized at it, and had much ado to support myself when the first part of it was delivered; though the Gentleman delivered his Errand with a great Respect, and with all the Regard to me that he was able, and with a great deal of Ceremony, also telling me how much he was concerned to bring me such a Message.

But when I heard the Particulars of the Story at large, and especially, that of the Lady's Discourse to the Prince, a little before her

her Death, I was fully satisfied; I knew very well he had done nothing but what any Man must do, that had a true Sense upon him of the Justice of the Princess's Discourse to him, and of the Necessity there was of his altering his course of Life, if he intended to be either a Christian, or an honest Man: I say, when I heard this, I was perfectly easy; I confess it was a Circumstance that it might be reasonably expected should have wrought something upon me: I that had so much to reflect upon more than the Prince, that had now no more Temptation of Poverty, or of the powerful Motive which *Amy* used with me, namely, *Comply and Live; Deny and Starve*; I say, I that had no Poverty to introduce Vice, but was grown not only well supply'd, but Rich, and not only Rich, but very Rich; and in a Word, richer than I knew how to think of; for the Truth of it was, that thinking of it sometimes almost distracted me, for want of knowing how to dispose of it, and for fear of losing it all again by some Cheat or Trick, not knowing any body that I could commit the Trust of it to.

Besides I should add at the close of this Affair, that the Prince did not, as I may say, turn me off rudely, and with Disgust; but with all the Decency and Goodness peculiar to himself, and that could consist with a Man reformed, and struck with the Sense of his having abused so good a Lady as his late Princess had been; nor did he send me away empty, but did every thing like himself; and in particular ordered his Gentleman to pay the Rent of the House, and all the Expence of his two Sons; and to tell me how they were taken Care of, and where; and also, that I might, at all Times, inspect the Usage they had, and if I disliked any Thing, it should be rectified; and having thus finished every Thing, he retired into *Lorrain*, or somewhere that Way, where he had an Estate, and I never heard of him more, I mean, not as a Mistress.

Now I was at Liberty to go to any Part of the World, and take Care of my Money myself: The first thing that I resolv'd to do, was to go directly to *England*, for there, I thought, being among my Countryfolks (for I esteemed myself an *Englishwoman*, though I was born in *France*) but there, I say, I thought I could better manage things than in *France*, at least, that I would be in less Danger of being circumvented and deceived; but how to get away with such

a Treasure as I had with me, was a difficult Point, and what I was greatly at a Loss about.

There was a *Dutch Merchant* in *Paris*, that was a Person of great Reputation for a Man of Substance, and of Honesty, but I had no Manner of Acquaintance with him, nor did I know how to get acquainted with him, so as to discover my Circumstances to him; but at last I employed my Maid *Amy*, such I must be allowed to call her, notwithstanding what has been said of her, because she was in the Place of a Maid-Servant; I say, I employ'd my Maid *Amy* to go to him, and she got a Recommendation to him from somebody else, I knew not who; so that she got access to him well enough.

But now was my Case as bad as before; for when I came to him, what could I do? I had Money and Jewels to a vast Value, and I might leave all these with him; that I might indeed, do; but so I might with several other Merchants in *Paris*, who would give me Bills for it, payable at *London*, but then I ran a Hazard of my Money; and I had no-body at *London* to send the Bill to, and so to stay till I had an Account that they were accepted; for I had not one Friend in *London* that I could have Recourse to, so that, indeed, I knew not what to do.

In this Case I had no Remedy, but that I must trust somebody; so I sent *Amy* to this *Dutch Merchant*, as I said above; he was a little surpriz'd when *Amy* came to him, and talked to him of remitting a Sum of about 12000 Pistoles to *England*, and began to think she came to put some Cheat upon him; but when he found that *Amy* was but a Servant, and that I came to him myself, the Case was altered presently.

When I came to him myself, I presently saw such a Plainness in his Dealing, and such Honesty in his Countenance, that I made no Scruple to tell him my whole Story, viz. That I was a Widow; that I had some Jewels to dispose of, and also some Money, which I had a Mind to send to *England*, and to follow there myself; but being but a Woman, and having no Correspondence in *London*, or any where else, I knew not what to do, or how to secure my valuable Effects.

He dealt very candidly with me, but advis'd me, when he knew my Case so particularly, to take Bills upon *Amsterdam*, and to go

that way to *England*; for that I might lodge my Treasure in the Bank there, in the most secure Manner in the World, and that there he could recommend me to a Man who perfectly understood Jewels, and would deal honestly with me in the disposing of them.

I thanked him, but scrupled very much the travelling so far in a strange Country, and especially with such a Treasure about me; that whether known, or concealed, I did not know how to venture with it: Then he told me he would try to dispose of them there, and convert them into Money, and so get me Bills for the whole; and in a few Days he brought a *Jew* to me, who pretended to buy the Jewels.

As soon as the *Jew* saw the Jewels, I saw my Folly, and it was ten thousand to one but ruined, and perhaps put to Death in as cruel a Manner as possible; and I was put in such a Fright by it, that I was once upon the point of flying for my Life, and leaving the Jewels and the Money too in the Hands of the Dutchman, without any Bills or any thing else; the Case was thus:

As soon as the *Jew* saw the Jewels, he fell a jabbering in Dutch or Portuguese to the Merchant, and I could presently perceive that they were in some great Surprise, both of them; the *Jew* held up his Hands, looked at me with some Horror, then talked Dutch, and put himself into a thousand Postures, twisting his Body, and ringing his Face this and that Way in his Discourse; stamping with his Feet, and throwing abroad his Hands, as if he was not in a Rage only, but in a mere Fury; then he would turn and give a Look at me like the Devil; I thought I never saw any thing so frightful in my Life.

At length I put in a Word; Sir, says I to the Dutch Merchant, what is all this Discourse to my Business? What is this Gentleman in all these Passions about? I wish, if he would treat with me, he would speak, that I might understand him; or if you have Business of your own between you, that is to be done first, let me withdraw, and I will come again when you have done your Business, and are at leisure.

No no Madam, says the Dutchman, very kindly, you must not go, all our Discourse is about you, and your Jewels, and you shall hear it presently, it concerns you very much, I assure you: Concern
me,

me, says I, what can it concern me so much, as to put this Gentleman into such Agonies? And what makes him give me such Devil's Looks as he does? Why he looks as if he would devour me.

The Jew understood me presently, continuing in a kind of Rage, and spoke in French, Yes, Madam, it does concern you very much, very much, repeating the Words, shaking his Head, and then turning to the Dutchman, Sir, says he, pray tell her what is the Case; no, says the Merchant, not yet, let us talk a little farther of it by ourselves; upon which they withdrew into another room, where still they talked very high, but in a Language I did not understand: I began to be a little surprized at what the Jew had said, you may be sure, and eager to know what he meant, and was very impatient till the Dutch Merchant came back, and that so impatient, that I called one of his Servants to let him know, I desired to speak with him; when he came in, I asked his pardon for being so impatient, but told him, I could not be easy, till he had told me what the Meaning of this was: Why Madam, says the Dutch Merchant, in short, that they were the very parcel of Jewels which the English Jeweller had about him, who was robbed going to Versailles, about eight Years ago, to show them the Prince d'---, and that it was for these very jewels that the poor Gentleman was murdered; and he is in all this Agony to make me ask you, how you came by them; and he says you ought to be charged with the Robbery and Murder, and put to the Question, to discover who were the Persons that did it, that they might be brought to justice: While he said this, the Jew came impudently back into the Room, without calling, which something surprized me again.

The Dutch Merchant spoke pretty good English, and he knew that the Jew did not understand English at all; so he told me the latter part when the Jew came into the Room, in English; at which I smiled, which put the Jew into his mad Fit again, and shaking his Head, he seemed as if he threatened me for laughing; saying in French, this was an Affair I should have little Reason to laugh at, and the like, at which I laughed again, and flouted him, letting him see that I scorned him; and turning to the Dutch Merchant, Sir, says I, that those jewels were belonging to Mr. ---, the English Jeweller, naming his Name readily, in that, says I, this Person

followed

is

is right, but that I should be questioned how I came to have them, is a Token of his Ignorance; which however he might have managed with a little more good Manners, till I had told him who I am; and both he and you will be more easy in that part, when I should tell you that I am the unhappy Widow of that Mr. ———, who was so barbarously murdered going to Versailles; and that he was not robbed of those jewels, but of others; Mr. ——— having left those behind him with me, lest he should be robbed; had I come other-ways by them, I should not expose them to Sale here where the Thing were done, but would have carried them at a further Distance.

This was an agreeable Surprize to the Dutch Merchant, who being an honest Man himself, believed every thing I said, which indeed was really true, except the Deficiency of my Marriage, I spoke with such an unconcerned Easiness, that it might be seen I had no Guilt upon me.

The Jew was confounded when he heard that I was the Jeweller's Wife; but as I had raised his Passion with saying, he looked at me with a Devil's Face, he studied Mischief in his Heart, and answered, That should not serve my Turn, so called the Dutchman out again, when he told him, that he resolved to prosecute this Matter further.

There was one kind Chance in this Affair, which indeed was my Deliverance, and that was, that the Fool could not restrain his Passion, but must let it fly to the Dutch Merchant; to whom, when they withdrew a second time, he told that he would bring a Process against me for the Murder, and that it should cost me dear for using him at that Rate; and away he went, desiring the Dutch Merchant to tell him when I would be there again: Had he suspected that the Dutchman would have communicated the Particulars to me, he would never have been so foolish as to have mentioned that particular part to him.

But the Malice of his Thoughts anticipated him, and the Dutch Merchant was so good as to give me an Account of his Design, which indeed was wicked enough in its Nature; but to me it would have been worse than otherwise it would to another; for upon Examination I could not have proved myself to be the Wife of the

Jeweller

Jeweller, so the Suspicion might have been carried on with the better Face; and then I should also have brought all his Relations in *England* upon me; who finding by the Proceedings, that I was not his Wife, but a Mistress, or in *English*, a *Whore*, would immediately have laid Claim to the Jewels, as I had owned them to be his.

This Thought immediately rushed into my Head, as soon as the *Dutch Merchant* had told me what wicked Things were in the Head of that cursed *Jew*; and the Villain (for so I must call him) convinced the *Dutch Merchant* that he was in earnest, by an Expression which shewed the rest of the Design, and that was a Plot to get the rest of the Jewels into his Hand.

When first he hinted to the *Dutchman*, that the Jewels were such a Man's, meaning my Husband's, he made wonderful Explanations on account of their having been concealed so long: Where must they have lain? and What was the Woman that brought them? And that she, meaning me, ought to be immediately apprehended, and put into the Hands of Justice; and this was the Time that, as I said, he made such horrid Gestures, and looked at me so like a Devil. The Merchant hearing him talk at that rate, and seeing him in earnest, said to him, Hold your Tongue a little, this is a thing of Consequence; if it be so, let you and I go into the next Room and consider of it there; and so they withdrew and left me.

Here, as before, I was uneasy, and called him out, and having heard how it was, gave him that Answer, *That I was his Wife, or Widow*; which the malicious *Jew* said, should not serve my turn; and then it was, that the *Dutchman* called him out again; and in this time of his withdrawing, the Merchant finding, as above, that he was really in earnest, counterfeited a little to be of his Mind, and entered into Proposals with him for the thing itself.

In this they agreed, to go to an Advocate, or Council, for Direction how to proceed, and to meet again the next Day, against which Time the Merchant was to appoint me to come again with the Jewels, in order to sell them. No, says the Merchant, I will go farther with her than so; I will desire her to leave the Jewels with me, to shew to another Person, in order to get the better Price for them. That's right, says the *Jew*, and I'll engage she shall never be Mistress of them again; they shall either be seiz'd by us, says

he, in the King's Name, or she shall be glad to give them up to us, to prevent her being put to the Torture.

The Merchant said *Yes* to every thing he offered, and they agreed to meet the next Morning about it, and I was to be persuaded to leave the Jewels with him, and come to them the next Day, at four a Clock, in order to make a good Bargain for them; and on these Conditions they parted; but the honest *Dutchman*, fill'd with Indignation at the barbarous Design, came directly to me, and told me the whole Story; and now *Madam*, says he *you are to consider immediately what you have to do.*

I told him, if I was sure to have Justice, I would not fear all that such a Rogue could do to me; but how such Things were carried on in *France* I knew not, I told him, the greatest Difficulty would be to prove our Marriage, for that it was done in *England*, and in a remote Part of *England* too, and which was worse, it would be hard to produce avthentick Vouchers of it, because we were married in Private: *But as to the Death of your Husband*, *Madam*, *What can be said to that?* said he, *Nay*, said I, *What can they say to it?* In *England*, added I, if they would offer such an Injury to any one, they must prove the Fact, or give just Reason for their Suspicions; that my Husband was murdered, that every one knows; but that he was robbed, or of what, or how much, that none knows, no not myself; and why was I not questioned for it then? I have lived in *Paris* ever since, lived publickly, and no Man yet had the Impudence to suggest such a Thing of me.

I am fully satisfied of that, says the Merchant; but as this is a Rogue, who will stick at nothing, what can we say? and who knows what he may swear? Suppose he should swear, that he knows your Husband had those particular Jewels with him the Morning when he went out, and that he shewed them to him, to consider their Value, and what Price he should ask the Prince de ----- for them. *Nay*, by the same Rule, said I, he may swear, that I murdered my Husband, if he finds it for his Turn. That's true, said he; and if he should, I do not see what could save you; but, added he, I have found out his more immediate Design; his Design is to have you carried to the *Chatellette*, that the Suspicion may appear just; and then get the Jewels out of your Hands, if possible, then, at

last, to drop the Prosecution, on your consenting to quit the Jewels to him; and how you will do to avoid this, is the Question which I would have you consider of.

My Misfortune, Sir, *said I*, is, that I have no Time to consider, and I have no Person to consider with, or advise about it; I find, that Innocence may be oppressed by such an impudent Fellow as this; he that does not value a Perjury, has any Man's Life at his Mercy; but Sir, *said I*, is the Justice such here, that while I may be in the Hands of the Publick, and under Prosecution, he may get hold of my Effects, and get my Jewels into his Hands?

I don't know, *says he*, what may be done in that Case; but if the Court of Justice should get hold of them, I do not know but you may find it as Difficult to get them out of their Hands again, and at least, it may cost you half as much as they are worth; so I think it would be a much better Way, to prevent their coming at them at all.

But what Course can I take to do that, *says I*, now they have got Notice that I have them? If they get me into their Hands, they will oblige me to produce them, or perhaps sentence me to Prison till I do.

Nay, *says he*, as this Brute says too, put you to the Question, that is, to the Torture, on Pretence of making you confess who were the Murderers of your Husband.

Confess! *said I*, How can I confess what I know nothing of?

If they come to have you to the Rack, *said he*, they will make you confess you did it yourself, whether you did it or no, and then you are cast.

The very Word Rack frighted me to Death almost and I had no Spirit left in me. Did it myself! *said I*; that's impossible!

No, Madam, *says he*, 'tis far from impossible; the most innocent People in the World have been forced to confess themselves Guilty of what they never heard of, much less had any Hand in.

What then must I do? *said I*, What would you advise me to?

Why, *says he*, I would advise you to be gone; you intended to go away in four or five Days, and you may as well go in two Days; and if you can do so, I shall manage it so that he shall not suspect your being gone, for several Days after. Then he told me how the Rogue would have me ordered to bring the Jewels the next Day,
for

for Sale, and that then he would have me apprehended; how he had made the Jew believe he would join with him in his Design; and that he [the Merchant] would get the Jewels into his Hands: Now, says the Merchant, I shall give you Bills for the Money you desired, immediately, and such as shall not fail of being paid; take your Jewels with you, and go this very Evening to St. Germain's *co. Lay*; I'll send a Man thither with you, and from thence he shall guide you to Morrow to Roan, where there lies a Ship of mine, just ready to sail for Rotterdam; you shall have your Passage in that Ship on my Account, and I will send Orders for him to sail as soon as you are on Board, and a Letter to my Friend at Rotterdam to Entertain and take Care of you.

This was too kind an Offer for me, as Things stood, not to be accepted; and be thankful for; and as to going away, I had prepared every thing for parting; so that I had but little to do, but to go back, take two or three Boxes and Bundles, and such things, and my Maid *Ann*, and be gone.

Then the Merchant told me the Measures he had resolved to take to delude the Jew, while I made my Escape, which were very well contrived indeed: First, said he, when he comes to Morrow, I shall tell him, that I proposed to you to leave the Jewels with me, as we agreed; but that you said, you would come and bring them in the Afternoon, so that we must stay for you till four o' Clock; but then, at that Time, I will show a Letter from you, as if just come in, wherein you shall excuse your not coming, for that some Company came to visit you, and prevented you; but that you desire me to take Care that the Gentleman be ready to buy your Jewels, and that you will come to Morrow, at the same Hour, without fail.

When to Morrow is come, we shall wait at the Time; but you not appearing, I shall seem most dissatisfied, and wonder what can be the Reason; and so we shall agree to go the next Day to get out a Process against you; but the next Day, in the Morning, I'll send to give him Notice that you have been at my House, but he not being there, have made another Appointment, and that I desire to speak with him; when he comes I'll tell him, you appear perfectly blind, as to your Danger, and that you appeared much disappointed that he did not come, though you could not meet the Night before, and obliged me to have him here to Morrow at three

a Clock; when to Morrow comes, says he, you shall send word that you are taken so ill, that you cannot come out for that Day; but that you will not fail the next Day; and the next Day you shall neither come or send, nor let us ever hear any more of you; for by that time you shall be in *Holland*, if you please.

I could not but approve all his Measures, seeing they were so well contriv'd, and in so friendly a Manner, for my Benefit; and as he seemed to be so very sincere, I resolv'd to put my life in his Hands: Immediately I went to my Lodgings, and sent away *Amy* with such Bundles as I had prepar'd for my Travelling; I also sent several Parcels of my fine Furniture to the Merchant's House, to be laid up for me, and bringing the Key of the Lodgings with me, I came back to his House: Here we finish'd our Matters of Money; and I delivered into his Hands seven Thousand eight Hundred Pistoles in Bills and Money; a Copy of an Assignment on the Town-House of *Paris*, for 4000 Pistoles, at 3 per Cent. Interest, attested; and a Procuration for receiving the Interest half-yearly; but the Original I kept myself.

I could have trusted all I had with him, for he was perfectly honest, and had not the least View of doing me any Wrong; indeed, after it was so apparent that he had, as it were, sav'd my Life, or at least, save me from being expos'd and ruin'd; I say, after this, how could I doubt him in any thing?

When I came to him, he had every thing ready as I wanted, and as he had propos'd; as to my Money, he gave me first of all an accepted Bill, payable at *Rotterdam*, for 4000 Pistoles, and drawn from *Genoa* upon a Merchant at *Rotterdam*, payable to a Merchant at *Paris*, and endors'd by him to my Merchant; this he assur'd me would be punctually paid, and so it was to a Day; the rest I had in other Bills of Exchange, drawn by himself upon other Merchants in *Holland*: Having secur'd my Jewels too, as well as I could he sent me away the same Evening in a Friend's Coach, which he had procur'd for me, to *St. Germain's*, and the next Morning to *Roan*; he also sent a Servant of his own, on Horseback, with me, who provided every thing for me, and who carried his Orders to the Captain of the Ship, which lay about three Miles below *Roan*, in the River, and, by his Directions I went immediately on Board: The third Day after I was on Board, the Ship went away, and we

were out at Sea the next Day after that ; and thus I took my Leave of *France*, and got clear of an ugly Business, which, had it gone on, might have ruin'd me, and sent me back as Naked to *England*, as I was a little before I left it.

And now *Amy* and I were at Leisure to look upon the Mischiefs that we had escap'd ; and had I had any Religion, or any Sence of a Supreme Power managing, directing, and governing in both Causes and Events in this World, such a Case as this would have given any-body room to have been very thankful to the Power who had not only put such a Treasure into my Hand, but given me such an Escape from the Ruin that threaten'd me ; but I had none of those things about me ; I had indeed, a grateful Sence upon my Mind of the generous Friendship of my Deliverer, the *Dutch Merchant* ; by whom I was so faithfully serv'd, and by whom, as far as relates to second Causes, I was preserv'd from destruction.

I say, I had a grateful Sence upon my Mind, of his Kindness and Faithfulness to me, and I resolv'd to shew him some Testimony of it, as soon as I came to the End of my Rambles, for I was yet but in a State of Uncertainty, and sometimes that gave me a little Uneasiness too ; I had Paper indeed, for my Money, and he had shew'd himself very good to me, in conveying me away, as above : But I had not seen the End of things yet ; for unless the Bills were paid, I might still be a great Loser by my *Dutchman*, and he might, perhaps, have contriv'd all that Affair of the *Jew*, to put me into a Fright, and get me to run away, and that, as if it were to save my Life ; that if the Bills should be refus'd, I was cheated, with a Witness, and the like ; but these were but Surmises, and indeed, were perfectly without Cause ; for the honest Man acted as honest Men always do ; with an upright and disinterested Principle ; and with a Sincerity not often to be found in the World ; what gain he made by the Exchange, was just, and was nothing but what was his Due, and was in the Way of his Business ; but otherwise he made no Advantage of me at all.

When I pass'd in the Ship between *Dover* and *Calais*, and saw beloved *England* once more under my View ; *England*, which I counted my Native Country, being the Place I was bred up in, tho' not born there ; a strange kind of Joy possess'd my Mind, and I had such a longing Desire to be there, that I would have given the

Master

Master of the Ship twenty Pistoles to have stood over, and set me on shore in the *Downs*; and when he told me he could not do it, that is, that he durst not do it, if I would have given him an hundred Pistoles, I secretly wish'd, that a Storm would rise, that might drive the Ship over to the Coast of *England*, whether they would or not, that I might be set on Shore any where upon *English* Ground.

This wicked Wish had not been out of my Thoughts above two or three Hours, but the Master steering away to the North, as was his Course to do, we lost Sight of Land on that Side, and only had the *Flemish* Shore in View on our Right-hand, or, as the Seamen call it, the Starboard-Side; and then with the Loss of the Sight, the Wish for Landing in *England*, abated; and I consider'd how foolish it was to wish myself out of the Way of my Business; that if I had been on Shore in *England*, I must go back to *Holland*, on account of my Bills, which were so considerable, and I having no Correspondence there, that I could not have manag'd it, without going myself: But we had not been out of Sight of *England* many Hours, before the Weather began to change, the Winds whistl'd, and made a Noise, and the Seamen said to one another, that it would Blow hard at Night: It was then about two Hours before Sun-set, and we were pass'd by *Dunkirk*, and I think they said we were in Sight of *Ostend*; but then the Wind grew high, and the Sea swell'd, and all things look'd terrible, especially to us, that understood nothing but just what we saw before us; in short, Night came on, and very dark it was, the Wind freshen'd, and blew harder and harder, and about two Hours within Night, it blew a terrible Storm.

I was not quite a Stranger to the Sea; having come from *Rochelle* to *England*, when I was a Child and gone from *London*, by the River *Thames*, to *France* afterward, as I have said: But I began to be alarm'd a little with the terrible Clamour of the Men over my Head, for I had never been in a Storm, and so had never seen the like, or heard it; and once, offering to look out at the Door of the Steerage, as they call it, it struck me with such Horror, the darkness, the fierceness of the Wind, the dreadful height of the Waves, and the Hurry the *Dutch* Sailors were in, whose Language I did not understand one Word of; neither when they curs'd, or when they pray'd;

pray'd; I say, all these things together, filled me with Terror, and in short, I began to be very much frightened.

When I was come back into the great Cabbin, there sat *Amy*, who was very Sea-sick, and I had a little before given her a Sup of Cordial-Waters, to help her Stomach: When *Amy* saw me come back, and sit down without speaking, for so I did, she looked two or three Times at me, at last she came running to me, Dear Madam! *said she*, What is the Matter? What makes you look so Pale? Why, you are not well: What is the Matter? I said nothing still, but held up my Hands two or three Times. *Amy* doubled her Importunities; upon that, I said no more, but *Step to the Steerage-Door, and look out as I did*; so she went away immediately, and looked too, as I had bidden her; but the poor Girl came back again in the greatest Amazement and Horror, that ever I saw any poor Creature in, wringing her Hands, and crying out she was undone! she should be drowned! they were all lost! Thus she ran about the Cabbin like a mad Thing, and as perfectly out of her Senses, as any one in such a Case could be supposed to be.

I was frightened, myself; but when I saw the Girl in such a terrible Agony, it brought me a little to myself, and I began to talk to her, and put her into a little Hope; I told her, there was many a Ship in a Storm that was not cast away; and I hoped we should not be drowned now; that it was very true, indeed, the Storm was very dreadful, but I did not see that the Seamen were so much concerned as we were; and so I talked to her as well as I could, though my Heart was full enough of it, as well as *Amy's*, and Death began to stare in my Face, ay, and something else too, that is to say, Conscience, and my Mind was very much disturbed, but I had no body to comfort me.

But *Amy* being in so much worse a Condition, that is to say, so much more terrified at the Storm than I was, I had something to do to comfort her; she was, as I have said, like one distracted, and went raving about the Cabbin, crying out, she was undone! undone! she should be drowned, and the like; and at last, the Ship giving a Jerk, by the Force, I suppose, of some violent Wave, it threw poor *Amy* quite down, for she was weak enough before, with being Sea-sick, and as it threw her forward, the poor Girl struck her Head against the Bulk-head, as the Seamen call it, of the Cabbin,

bin, and laid her as dead as a Stone, upon the Floor, or Deck, that is to say, she was so to all Appearance.

I cry'd out for Help; but it had been all one to have cry'd out a Top of a Mountain, where no body had been within five Miles of me; for the Seamen were so engaged, and made so much Noise, that no body heard me, or came near me; I opened the great Cabin Door, and looked into the Steerage, to cry for Help, but there, to encrease my Fright, was two Seamen on their Knees, at Prayers, and only one Man who steer'd, and he made a groaning Noise too, which I took to be saying his Prayers, but it seems it was answering to those above, when they called to him, to tell him which Way to steer.

Here was no Help for me, or for poor *Amy*, and there she lay still so, and in such a Condition, that I did not know whether she was dead or alive; in this Fright I went to her, and lifted her a little way up, setting her on the Deck, with her Back to the Bulkhead, and I got a little Bottle out of my Pocket, and I held it to her Nose, and rubbed her Temples, and what else I could do, but still *Amy* shewed no Signs of Life, till I felt her Pulse, but could hardly distinguish her to be alive; however, after a great while, she began to revive, and in about half an Hour she came to herself, but remembered nothing at first of what had happened to her, for a good while more.

When she recovered more fully, she asked me Where she was? I told her, she was in the Ship yet, but God knows how long it might be: Why, Madam, *says she*, is not the Storm over? No, no, *says I*, *Amy*, *Why, Madam*, *says she*, *it was calm just now* (meaning when she was in the swooning Fit, occasioned by her Fall) *Calm*, *Amy*, *says I*, *'tis far from Calm; it may be it will be Calm by-and-by, when we are all drown'd, and gone to HEAVEN.*

HEAVEN! Madam, *says she*, What makes you talk so? HEAVEN! I go to HEAVEN! No, no, if I am damn'd, I am damn'd; Don't you know what a wicked Creature I have been? I have been a Whore to two Men, and have lived a wretched abominable Life of Vice and Wickedness for fourteen Years; O Madam, *you know it, and GOD knows it; and now I am to die; to be drowned; O! What will become of me? I am undone for Ever! ay, Madam, for*

Ever ! to all Eternity ! O I am lost ! I am lost ! If I am drown'd, I am lost for Ever !

All these, you will easily suppose, must be so many Stabs into the very Soul of one in my own Case ; it immediately occur'd to me, *Poor Amy ! What art thou, that I am not ?* What hast thou been, that I have not been ? Nay, I am guilty of my own Sin, and thine too : Then it came into my Remembrance, that I had not only been the same with *Amy*, but that I had been the Devil's Instrument to make her wicked ; that I had stripp'd her, and prostituted her to the very Man that I had been Naught with myself ; that she had but followed me ; I had been her wicked Example ; and I had led her into all ; and that as we had sinned together, now we were likely to sink together.

All this repeated itself to my Thoughts at that very Moment ; and every one of *Amy's* Cries sounded this in my Ears : I am the wicked Cause of it all ; I have been thy Ruin *Amy*, I have brought thee to this, and now thou art to suffer for the Sin I have enticed thee to ; and if Thou art lost for Ever, what must I be ? What must be my Portion ?

It is true, this Difference was between us, that I said all these things within myself, and sigh'd and mourn'd immediately ; but *Amy*, as her Temper was more violent, spoke aloud, and cry'd, and call'd out aloud, like one in an Agony.

I had but small Encouragement to give her, and indeed could say but very little : but I got her to compose herself a little, and not let any of the Ship understand what she meant, or what she said ; but even in her greatest Composure, she continued to express herself with the utmost Dread and Terror, on account of the wicked Life she had lived ; and crying out, she should be damn'd, and the like ; which was very terrible to me, who knew what Condition I was in myself.

Upon these serious Considerations, I was very Penitent too, for my former Sins, and cry'd out, though softly, two or three times, Lord have Mercy upon me ; to this I added abundance of Resolutions, of what a Life I would live, if it should please God but to spare my Life but this one Time ; how I would live a single and a virtuous Life, and spend a great deal of what I had thus wickedly got, in Acts of Charity, and doing Good.

Under

Under these dreadful Apprehensions, I look'd back on the Life I had led, with the utmost Contempt and Abhorrence; I blush'd, and wonder'd at myself, how I could act thus; how I could divest myself of Modesty and Honour, and prostitute myself for Gain; and I thought, if ever it should please God to spare me this one time from Death, it would not be possible that I should be the same Creature again.

Amy went farther; she pray'd, she resolv'd, she vow'd to lead a new Life, if God would spare her but this time: It now began to be Day-light, for the Storm had held all Night-long, and it was some Comfort to see the Light of another Day, which indeed, none of us expected; but the Sea went Mountains high, and the Noise of the Water was as frightful to us, as the Sight of the Waves; nor was any Land to be seen; nor did the Seamen know whereabouts they were; at last, to our great Joy, they made Land, which was in *England*, and on the Coast of *Smffolk*; and the Ship being in the utmost Distress, they ran for the Shore, at all Hazards, and with great Difficulty, got into *Harwich*, where they were safe, as to the Danger of Death; but the Ship was so full of Water, and so much damag'd, that if they had not laid her on Shore the same Day, she would have sunk before Night, according to the Opinion of the Seamen, and of the Workmen on Shore too, who were hir'd to assist them in stopping their Leaks.

Amy was reviv'd as soon as she heard they had espy'd Land, and went out upon the Deck, but she soon came in again to me, O Madam, says she, there's the Land indeed, to be seen, it looks like a Ridge of Clouds, and may be all a Cloud, for ought I know, but if it be Land, 'tis a great Way off; and the Sea is in a Combustion, we shall all perish before we can reach it; 'tis the dreadfullest Sight, to look at the Waves, that ever was seen; why, they are as high as Mountains; we shall certainly be all swallow'd up, for all the Land is so near.

I had conceiv'd some Hope, that if they saw Land, we should be deliver'd; and I told her, she did not understand things of that Nature; that she might be sure, if they saw Land, they would go directly towards it, and would make into some Harbour; but it was, as *Amy* said, a frightful Distance to it: The Land look'd like Clouds, and the Sea went as high as Mountains, so that no Hope appeared

appeared in the seeing the Land; but we were in fear of foundring before we could reach it; this made *Amy* so desponding still; but as the Wind, which blew from the *East*, or that Way, drove us furiously towards the Land; so when, about half an Hour after, I stept to the Steerage-door, and looked out, I saw the Land much nearer than *Amy* represented it; so I went in, and encouraged *Amy* again, and indeed, was encouraged myself.

In about an Hour, or something more, we see, to our infinite Satisfaction, the open Harbour of *Harwich*, and the Vessel standing directly towards it, and in a few Minutes more, the Ship was in smooth Water, to our inexpressible Comfort; and thus I had, tho' against my Will, and contrary to my true Interest, that I wish'd for, to be driven away to *England*, tho' it was by a Storm.

Nor did this Incident do either *Amy* or me much Service; for the Danger being over, the Fears of Death vanish'd with it; ay, and our Fear of what was beyond Death also; our Sence of the Life we had liv'd, went off, and with our return to Life, our wicked Taste of Life return'd, and we were both the same as before, if not worse: So certain is it, that the Repentance which is brought about by the meer Apprehensions of Death, wears off as those Apprehensions wear off; and Death-bed Repentance, or Storm Repentance, which is much the same, is seldom true.

However, I do not tell you, that this was all at once, neither; the Fright we had at Sea lasted a little while afterwards, at least, the Impression was not quite blown off, as soon as the Storm; especially poor *Amy*, as soon as she set her Foot on Shore, she fell flat upon the Ground, and kiss'd it, and gave God thanks for her Deliverance from the Sea; and turning to me when she got up, I hope, Madam, says she, you will never go upon the Sea again.

I know not what ail'd me, not I; but *Amy* was much more penitent at Sea, and much more sensible of her Deliverance when she Landed, and was safe, than I was; I was in a kind of Stupidity, I know not well what to call it; I had a Mind full of Horror in the time of the Storm, and saw Death before me, as plainly as *Amy*, but my Thoughts got no Vent, as *Amy's* did; I had a silent sullen kind of Grief, which could not break out either in Words or Tears, and which was, therefore, much the worse to bear.

I had a Terror upon me for my wicked Life past, and firmly believed I was going to the Bottom, launching into Death, where I was to give an Account of all my past Actions; and in this State, and on that Account, I looked back upon my Wickedness with Abhorrence, as I have said above; but I had no Sense of Repentance, from the true Repentance; I saw nothing of the Corruption of Nature, the Sin of my Life, as an Offence against God; as a thing odious to the Holiness of his Being; as abusing his Mercy, and despising his Goodness; in short, I had no thorough effectual Repentance, no Sight of my Sins in their proper Shape; no View of a Redeemer, or Hope in him: I had only such a Repentance as a Criminal has at the Place of Execution, who is sorry, not that he has committed the Crime, as it is a Crime, but sorry *that he is to be Hang'd for it.*

It is true, *Amy's* Repentance wore off too, as well as mine, but not so soon; however, we were both very grave for a Time.

As soon as we could get a Boat from the Town, we went on Shore, and immediately went to a Publick-House in the Town of *Harmich*; where we were to consider seriously of what was to be done, and whether we should go up to *London*, or stay till the Ship was refitted, which, they said, would be a Fortnight, and then go for *Holland*, as we intended, and as Business required.

Reason directed that I should go to *Holland*, for there I had all my Money to receive, and there I had Persons of good Reputation and Character to apply to, having Letters to them from the honest *Dutch* Merchant at *Paris*, and they might, perhaps, give me a Recommendation again to Merchants in *London*, and so I should get Acquaintance with some People of Figure, which was what I loved; whereas now I knew not one Creature in the whole City of *London*, or any where else, that I could go and make myself known to: Upon these Considerations I resolved to go to *Holland*, whatever came on it.

But *Amy* cry'd and trembled, and was ready to fall into fits, when I did but mention going upon the Sea again, and begged of me not to go, or if I would go, that I would leave her behind, though I was to send her a begging; the People in the Inn laugh'd at her, and jested with her; asked her if she had any Sins to confess, that she was ashamed should be heard; and that she was troubled with an

evil Conscience; told her, if she came to Sea, and to be in a Storm, if she had lain with her Master, she would certainly tell her Mistress of it; and that it was a common thing, for poor Maids to confess all the young Men they had lain with; that there was one poor Girl that went over with her Mistress, whose Husband was a -----, in -----, in the City of London, who confessed, in the Terror of a Storm, that she had lain with her Master, and all the Apprentices, so often, and in such and such Places, and made the poor Mistress, when she returned to London, fly at her Husband, and make such a Stir, as was indeed the Ruin of the whole Family. *Amy* could bear all that well enough; for though she had indeed lain with her Master, it was with her Mistress's Knowledge and Consent, and which was worse, was her Mistress's own doing, *I record it to the Reproach of my own Vice*, and to expose the Excesses of such Wickedness, as they deserve to be exposed.

I thought *Amy's* Fear would have been over by that time the Ship would be gotten ready; but I found the Girl was rather worse and worse; and when I came to the Point, that we must go on Board, or lose the Passage, *Amy* was so terrified that she fell into Fits, so the Ship went away without us.

But my going being absolutely necessary, as above, I was obliged to go in the Packet-Boat some Time after, and leave *Amy* behind at *Harwich*, but with Directions to go to *London*, and stay there to receive Letters and Orders from me what to do. Now I was become, from a Lady of Pleasure, a Woman of Business, and of great Business too, I assure you.

I got me a Servant at *Harwich* to go over with me, who had been at *Rotterdam*, knew the Place, and spoke the Language, which was a great Help to me, and so I went. I had a very quick Passage, and pleasant Weather, and coming to *Rotterdam*, soon found out the Merchant to whom I was recommended, who received me with extraordinary Respect; and first he acknowledged the accepted Bill four thousand Pistoles, which he afterwards paid punctually; other Bills that I had also payable at *Amsterdam*, he procured to be received for me; and whereas one of the Bills for a Thousand two Hundred Crowns was protested at *Amsterdam*, he paid it me himself, for the Honour of the Endorser, as he called it, which was my Friend, the Merchant at *Paris*.

There

There I entered into a Negotiation, by his Means, for my Jewels, and he brought me several Jewellers to look on them, and particularly, one to Value them, and to tell me what every Particular was worth. This was a Man who had great Skill in Jewels, but did not Trade at that Time; and he was desired by the Gentleman that I was with, to see that I might not be imposed upon.

All this Work took me up near half a Year, and by managing my Business thus myself, and having large Sums to do with, I became as expert in it, as any She-Merchant of them all; I had Credit in the Bank for a large Sum of Money, and Bills and Notes for much more.

After I had been here about three Months, my Maid *Amy* writes me Word, that she had received a Letter from her Friend, as she called him, that, *by the way*, was the Prince's Gentleman, that had been *Amy's* extraordinary Friend indeed; for *Amy* own'd to me, he had lain with her a hundred Times; that is to say, as often as he pleased; and in the eight Years which that Affair lasted, it might be a great deal oftner. This was what she called her Friend, who she corresponded with upon this particular Subject; and among other Things, sent her this particular News, that my extraordinary Friend, my real Husband, who rode in the *Gensd'arms*, was dead; that he was killed in a *Rencontre*, as they call it, or accidental Scuffle among the Troopers; and so the Jade congratulated me upon my being now a real Free-Woman; and now, Madam, *says she*, at the End of her Letter, you have nothing to do but to come hither, and set up a Coach, and a good Equipage; and if Beauty and a good Fortune won't make you a Dutchess, nothing will. *But I had not fixed my Measures yet*; I had no Inclination to be a Wife again, I had such bad Luck with my first Husband, I hated the Thoughts of it; I found, that a Wife is treated with Indifference, a Mistress with a strong Passion; a Wife is looked upon as but an Upper-Servant, a Mistress is a Sovereign; a Wife must give up all she has, every Reserve she makes for herself, be thought hard of, and be upbraided with her very *Pin-Money*; whereas a Mistress makes the Saying true, *what the Man has* is hers, and *what she has* is her own; the Wife bears a thousand Insults, and is forced to sit still and bear it, or part and be undone; a Mistress insulted, helps herself immediately, and takes another.

These

These were my wicked Arguments for Whoring, for I never set against them the Difference another Way, I may say every other Way; *how that, First*, A Wife appears boldly and honourably with her Husband; lives at Home, and possesses his House, his Servants, his Equipages, and has a Right to them all, and to call them her own; entertains his Friends, owns his Children, and has the Return of Duty and Affection from them, as they are here her own, and claims among his Estate, by the Custom of *England*, if he dies and leaves her a Widow.

The Whore sculks about in Lodgings; is visited in the Dark; disowned upon all Occasions, before God and Man; is maintained indeed, for a Time; but is certainly condemned to be abandoned at last, and left to the Miseries of Fate, and her own just Disaster. If she has any Children, her Endeavour is to get rid of them, and not maintain them; and if she lives, she is certain to see them all hate her, and be ashamed of her; while the Vice rages, and the Man is in the Devil's Hand, *she has him*; and while she has him she makes *a Prey of him*; but if he happens to fall Sick, if any Disaster befalls him, the Cause of all lies upon her; he is sure to lay all his Misfortunes at her Door; and if once he comes to Repentance, or makes but one Step towards a Reformation, he begins with her, leaves her, uses her as she deserves, hates her, abhors her, and *sees her no more*; and that with this never-failing Addition, namely, That the more sincere and unfeigned his Repentance is, the more earnestly he looks up; and the more effectually he looks in, the more his Aversion to her encreases; and he Curses her from the very bottom of his Soul; nay, it must be from a kind of Excess of Charity, if he so much as wishes God may forgive her.

The opposite Circumstances of a *Wife* and a *Whore* are such, and so many, and I have since seen the Difference with such Eyes, as I could dwell upon the Subject a great while; but my Business is History; I had a long Scene of Folly yet to run over; perhaps the Moral of all my Story may bring me back again to this Part, and if it does, I shall speak of it fully.

While I continued in *Holland*, I received several Letters from my Friend (so I had good Reason to call him) the Merchant in *Paris*, in which he gave me a farther Account of the Conduct of that Rogue the *Jew*, and how he acted after I was gone; how Impatient

tient he was while the said Merchant kept him in suspense, expecting me to come again; and how he raged when he found I came no more.

It seems, after he found I did not come, he found out, by his unwearied Enquiry, where I had lived; and that I had been kept as a Mistress by some great Person; but he could never learn by who, except that he learnt the Colour of his Livery; in pursuit of this Enquiry, he guessed at the right Person, but could not make it out, or offer any Proof of it; but he found out the Prince's Gentleman, and talked so saucily to him of it, that the Gentleman treated him, as the French call it, *au Coup de Batton*; that is to say, Caned him very severely, as he deserved; and that not satisfying him, or curing his Insolence, he was met one Night late, upon the *Pont Neuf* in *Paris*, by two Men, who muffled him up in a great Cloak, carried him into a more private Place, and cut off both his Ears, telling him, *It was for talking impudently of his Superiors*; adding, that he should take Care to govern his Tongue better, and behave with more Manners, or the next Time they would cut his Tongue out of his Head.

This put a Check to his Sauciness that Way; but he comes back to the Merchant, and threatened to begin a Process against him, for corresponding with me, and being accessory to the Murther of the Jeweller, &c.

The Merchant found by his Discourse, that he supposed I was protected by the said Prince *de* ———, nay, the Rogue said, he was sure I was in his Lodgings at *Versailles*; for he never had so much as the least Intimation of the Way I was really gone; but that I was there he was certain, and certain that the Merchant was privy to it. The Merchant bade him Defiance; however, he gave him a great deal of Charge, and had like to have brought him in for a Party to my Escape, in which Case, he would have been obliged to have produced me, and that in the Penalty of some capital Sum of Money.

But the Merchant was too many for him another Way; for he brought an Information against him for a Cheat; wherein, laying down the whole Fact, how he intended falsely to accuse the Widow of the Jeweller, for the supposed Murther of her Husband; that he did it purely to get the Jewels from her; and that he offered to

bring him [*the Merchant*] in to be Confederate with him, and to share the Jewels between them; proving also, his Design to get the Jewels into his Hands, and then to have dropped the Prosecution, upon Condition of my quitting the Jewels to him; upon this Charge he got him laid by the Heels; so he was sent to the *Concergerie*, that is to say to *Bridewell*, and the Merchant cleared. He got out of Gaol in a little while, though not without the help of Money; and continued seizing the Merchant a long while, and at last he threatened to assassinate and murder him; so the Merchant, who having buried his Wife about two Months before, was now a single Man, and not knowing what such a Villain might do, thought fit to quit *Paris*, and came away to *Holland* also.

It is most certain, that speaking of Originals, I was the Source and Spring of all that Trouble and Vexation to this honest Gentleman; and as it was afterwards in my Power to have made him full Satisfaction, and did not, I cannot say but I added Ingratitude to all the rest of my Follies; but of that I shall give a fuller Account presently.

I was surprized one Morning, when being at the Merchant's House who he had recommended me to at *Rotterdam*, and being busy in his Compting-House, managing my Bills and preparing to write a Letter to him to *Paris*, I heard a Noise of Horses at the Door; which is not very common in a City where every body passes by Water; but he had, it seems, ferry'd over the *Maex* from *Williamstad*; and so came to the very Door; and I looking towards the Door, upon hearing the Horses, saw a Gentleman alight and come in at the Gate, I knew nothing, and expected nothing to be sure, of the Person; but, as I say, was surprized, and indeed more than ordinarily surprized, when coming nearer to me, I saw it was my Merchant of *Paris*, my Benefactor, and indeed my Deliverer.

I confess, it was an agreeable Surprise to me, and I was exceeding glad to see him, who was so honourable, and so kind to me, and who indeed had saved my Life. As soon as he saw me, he run to me, took me in his Arms, and kissed me, with a Freedom he never offered to take with me before; *Dear Madam* -----, says he, *I am glad to see you safe in this Country; if you had stay'd two Days longer in Paris, you had been undone.* I was so glad to see him, that

that I could not speak a good while, and I burst into Tears, without speaking a Word for a Minute; but I recovered that Disorder, and said, *The more, Sir, is my Obligation to you, that saved my Life;* and added, *I am glad to see you here, that I may consider how to ballance an Account, to which I am so much your Debtor.*

You and I will adjust that Matter easily, *says he*, now we are so near together; pray Where do you Lodge, *says he.*

In a very honest good House, *said I*, where that Gentleman, your Friend, recommended me; pointing to the Merchant in whose House we then were.

And where you may Lodge too, Sir, *says the Gentleman*, if it suits with your Business, and your other Conveniency,

With all my Heart, *says he*; then Madam, *adds he*, turning to me, I shall be near you, and have Time to tell you a Story which will be very long, and yet many Ways very pleasant to you; how troublesome that devilish Fellow, the Jew, has been to me on your Account; and what a hellish Snare he had laid for you, if he could have found you.

I shall have Leisure too, Sir, *said I*, to tell you all my Adventures since that; which have not been a few, I assure you.

In short, he took up his Lodgings in the same House where I lodged, and the Room he lay in, opened as he was wishing it should, just opposite to my Lodging-Room; so we could almost call out of Bed to one another, and I was not at all shy of him on that Score, for I believed him perfectly honest, and so indeed he was; and if he had not, that Article was at present no Part of my Concern.

It was not till two or three Days, and after his first Hurries of Business were over, that we began to enter into the History of our Affairs on every Side, but when it began, it took up all our Conversation for almost a Fortnight: *First*, I gave him a particular Account of every thing that happened Material upon my Voyage, and how we were driven into *Harwich* by a very terrible Storm; how I had left my Woman behind me, so frightened with the Danger she had been in, that she durst not venture to set her Foot into a Ship again any more; and that I had not come myself, if the Bills I had of him had not been payable in *Holland*; but that Money, he might see, would make a Woman go any where.

He seemed to laugh at all our womanish Fears upon the Occasion
of

of a Storm; telling me, it was nothing but what was very ordinary in those Seas; but that they had Harbours on every Coast, so near, that they were seldom in Danger of being lost indeed; for, *says he*, if they cannot fetch one Coast, they can always stand away for another, and run afore it, *as he call'd it*, for one Side or other. But when I came to tell him what a crazy Ship it was, and how, even when they got into *Hartwich*, and into smooth Water, they were fain to run the Ship on Shore, or she would have sunk in the very Harbour; and when I told him, that when I looked out at the Cabbin-Door, I saw the *Dutchmen*, one upon his Knees here, and another there, at their Prayers, then indeed, he acknowledged I had Reason to be alarmed; but smiling, *he added*, But you, *Madam*, *says he*, are so good a Lady, and so Pious, you would but have gone to Heaven a little sooner, the Difference had not been much to you.

I confess, when he said this, it made all the Blood turn in my Veins, and I thought I should have fainted; poor Gentleman! thought I, you know little of me; What would I give to be really what you really think me to be? He perceived the Disorder, but said nothing till I spoke; when shaking my Head, O Sir! said I, *Death in any Shape has some Terror in it*; but in the frightful Figure of a Storm at Sea, and a sinking Ship, it comes with a double, a trebble, and indeed, an inexpressible Horror; and if I were that Saint you think me to be, which, God knows, I am not, 'tis still very dismal; I desire to die in a Calm, if I can: He said a great many good things and very prettily order'd his Discourse, between serious Reflection and Compliment; but I had too much Guilt to relish it as it was meant, so I turn'd it off to something else, and talk'd of the Necessity I had on me to come to *Holland*; but I wish'd myself safe on shore in *England* again.

He told me, he was glad I had such an Obligation upon me to come over into *Holland*, however; but hinted, that he was so interest in my Welfare; and besides, had such farther Designs upon me, that if I had not happily been found in *Holland*, he was resolv'd to have gone to *England* to see me; and that it was one of the principal Reasons of his leaving *Paris*.

I told him, I was extremely oblig'd to him for so far interesting himself in my Affairs; but that I had been so far his Debtor before, that

that I knew not how any thing could encrease the Debt; for I ow'd my Life to him already, and I could not be in Debt for any thing more valuable than that.

He answer'd in the most obliging Manner possible, that he wou'd put it in my power to pay that Debt, and all the Obligations besides, that ever he had, or should be able to lay upon me.

I began to understand him now, and to see plainly, that he resolv'd to make Love to me; but I would by no means seem to take the Hint, and besides I knew that he had a Wife with him in Paris; and I had, *just then, at least*, no Gust to any more intriguing; however, he surpriz'd me into a sudden Notice of the thing a little while after, by saying something in his Discourse, that he did *as he said*, in his Wife's Days; I started at that Word; *What mean you by that*; Sir, said I; *Have not you a Wife at Paris*? No, Madam, indeed, *said he*, my Wife died the Beginning of September last; which, it seems, was but a little after I came away.

We liv'd in the same House all this while; and as we lodg'd not far off of one another Opportunities were not wanting of a near an Acquaintance; nor have such Opportunities the least Agency in vicious Minds, to bring to pass even what they might not intend, at first.

However, tho' he courted so much at a distance, yet his Pretensions were very honourable; and as I had before found him a most disinterested Friend, and perfectly honest in his dealings, even when I trusted him with all I had; so now I found him strictly virtuous, till I made him otherwise myself, even almost, whether he wou'd or no; as you shall hear.

It was not long after our former Discourse, when he repeated what he had insinuated before, namely, that he had yet a design to lay before me, which, if I wou'd agree to his Proposals, wou'd more than Ballance all Accounts between us: I told him I cou'd not reasonably deny him any thing; and *except one thing, which I hop'd and believ'd he wou'd not think of*, I should think myself very ungrateful if I did not do every thing for him that lay in my Power. He told me, what he should desire of me, would be fully in my Power to grant, or else he shou'd be very unfriendly to offer it, and still, all this while, he declin'd making the Proposal, *as he call'd it*, and so, for that time, we ended our Discourse, turning it off to other things; so that, in short, I began to think he might have met with

some Misfortune in his Business, and might have come away from Paris in some Discredit; or had had some Blow on his Affairs in general; and as really I had Kindness enough to have parted with a good Sum to have help'd him, and was in gratitude, bound to have done so, *he having so effectually sav'd to me all I had*; so I resolv'd to make him the offer, the first time I had an Opportunity, which two or three Days after, offer'd itself, very much to my Satisfaction.

He had told me at large, *though on several Occasions*, the Treatment he had met with from the Jew, and what Expence he had put him to; how at length he had cast him, *as above*, and had recovered good Damage of him, but that the Rogue was unable to make him any considerable Reparation; he had told me also, how the Prince d'-----'s Gentleman had resent'd his Treatment of his Master, and how he had caused him to be used upon the *Pont Neuf*, &c. *as I have mentioned above*, which I laugh'd at most heartily.

It is pity, *said I*, that I should sit here, and make that Gentleman no amends; if you would direct me, Sir, *said I*, how to do it, I would make him a handsome Present, and acknowledge the Justice he had done to me, as well as to the Prince his Master. He said he would do what I directed in it; so I told him I would send him five hundred Crowns; *that's too much*, said he, *for you are but half interested in the Usage of the Jew*; it was on his Master's Account he corrected him, not on yours. Well however, we were oblig'd to do nothing in it, for neither of us knew how to direct a Letter to him, or to direct any body to him; so I told him, I would leave it till I came to England, for that my Woman Amy corresponded with him, and that he had made love to her.

Well, but Sir, *said I*, as in requital for his generous Concern for me, I am careful to think of him; it is but just, that what Expence you have been oblig'd to be at, which was all on my Account, should be repaid you; and therefore, *said I*, let me see --- and *there I paus'd*, and began to reckon up what I had observ'd from his Discourse, it had cost him in the several Disputes and Hearings, which he had with that Dog of a Jew, and I cast them up at something above two thousand one hundred and thirty Crowns; so I pulled out some Bills which I had upon a Merchant in Amsterdam, and a particular Account in Bank, and was looking on them, in order to give them to him.

When

When he seeing evidently what I was going about, interrupted me with some Warmth, and told me, he would have nothing of me on that Account, or with any such View; that it had been his Misfortune first to bring that ugly Rogue to me, which, though it was with a good Design, yet he would punish himself with the Expence he had been at, for his being so unlucky to me; that I could not think so hard of him, as to suppose he would take Money of me, a Widow, for serving me, and doing Acts of Kindness to me in a strange Country, and in Distress too, but he said he would repeat what he had said before, that he kept me for a deeper Reckoning, and that, as he had told me, he would put me in a Posture to Even all that Favour, as I called it, at once, so we should talk it over another time, and ballance all together.

Now I expected it would come out, but still he put it off as before, from whence I concluded it could not be matter of Love, for that those things are not usually delayed in such a Manner, and therefore it must be matter of Money; upon which Thought I broke the Silence, and told him, that as he knew I had, by Obligation more Kindness for him, than to deny any Favour to him that I could grant, and that he seemed backward to mention his Case; I begged Leave of him to give me Leave to ask him, whether any thing lay upon his Mind, with Respect to his Business and Effects in the World? That if it did, he knew what I had in the World, as well as I did; and that if he wanted Money, I would let him have any Sum for his Occasion, as far as five or six thousand Pistoles, and he should pay me as his own Affairs would permit; and that, if he never paid me, I would assure him that I would never give him any Trouble for it.

He rose up with Ceremony, and gave me Thanks, in Terms that sufficiently told me, he had been bred among People more polite, and more courteous, than is esteemed the ordinary Usage of the Dutch, and after his Compliment was over, he came nearer to me, and told me, that he was obliged to assure me, tho' with repeated Acknowledgements of my kind Offer, that he was not in any Want of Money; that he had met with no Uneasiness in any of his Affairs, no not in any Kind whatever, except that of the Loss of his Wife, and one of his Children, which indeed had troubled him much; but that this was no Part of what he had to offer to me, and by granting which

which I should ballance all Obligations; but that in short it was that seeing Providence had (as it were for that purpose) took his Wife from him, I would make up the Loss to him; and with that he held me fast in his Arms, and kissing me, would not give me Leave to say No, and hardly to breath.

At length, having got room to speak, I told him, that, as I had said before, I could deny him but one Thing in the World; I was very sorry he should propose *that Thing only* that I could not grant.

I could not but smile however, to myself, that he should make so many Circles, and round-about Motions, to come at a Discourse which had no such Rarity at the Bottom of it, if he had known all: But there was another Reason why I resolved not to have him, when, at the same Time, if he had courted me in a Manner less Honest or Virtuous, I believe I should not have denied him; but I shall come to that Part presently.

He was, as I have said, long a bringing it out, but when he had brought it out, he pursued it with such Importunities, as would admit of no Denial, *at least he intended they should not*; but I resisted them obstinately, and yet with Expressions of the utmost Kindness and Respect for him that could be imagined; often telling him, there was nothing else in the World that I could deny him, and shewing him all the Respect, and upon all Occasions treating him with Intimacy and Freedom, as if he had been my Brother.

He tried all the Ways imaginable to bring his Design to pass, but I was inflexible; at last he thought of a Way, which, he flattered himself would not fail; nor would he have been mistaken perhaps, in any other Woman in the World, but me; this was, to try if he could take me at an Advantage, and get to bed to me; and then, *as was most rational to think*, I should willingly enough marry him afterwards.

We were so intimate together, that nothing but Man and Wife could, or at least ought to be, more; but still our Freedom kept within the Bounds of Modesty and Decency. But one Evening, above all the rest, we were very merry, and I fancy'd he pushed the Mirth to watch for his Advantage; and I resolved that I would, at least, feign to be as merry as he; and that, if he offered any thing, he should have his Will easily enough.

About One a Clock in the Morning, for so long we sat up together

ther, I said, *Come, 'tis One a Clock, I must go to bed.* Well, says he, *I'll go with you.* No, no, says I, *go to your own Chamber.* He said he would go to bed with me. Nay, says I, *if you will, I don't know what to say; if I can't help it, you must.* However, I got from him, left him, and went into my Chamber, but did not shut the Door; and as he could easily see that I was undressing myself, he slept to his own Room, which was but on the same Floor, and in a few Minutes undresses himself also, and returns to my Door in his Gown and Slippers.

I thought he had been gone indeed, and so that he had been in Jest; and by the Way, thought either he had no mind to the Thing, or that he never intended it; so I shut my Door, that is latch'd it, for I seldom lock'd or bolted it, and went to bed; I had not been in bed a Minute, but he comes in his Gown to the Door, and opens it a little Way, but not enough to come in, or look in, and says softly, *What! are you really gone to bed?* Yes, yes, says I, *get you gone.* No indeed, says he, *I shall not be gone, you gave me Leave before to come to bed, and you shan't say get you gone now.* So he comes into my Room, and then turns about and fastens the Door, and immediately comes to the Bed-side to me: I pretended to scold and struggle, and bid him be gone with more Warmth than before; but it was all one; he had not a Rag of Cloaths on, but his Gown and Slippers, and Shirt; so he throws off his Gown, and throws open the Bed, and came in at once.

I made a seeming Resistance, but it was no more indeed; for, as above, I resolv'd from the Beginning, he should Lye with me if he would, and for the rest, I left it to come after.

Well, he lay with me that Night, and the two next, and very merry we were all the three Days between; but the third Night he began to be a little more Grave: Now my Dear, says he, though I have pushed this Matter farther than ever I intended, or than, I believe, you expected from me, who never made any Pretences to you but what were very Honest; yet to heal it all up, and let you see how sincerely I meant at first, and how honest I will ever be to you, I am ready to marry you still, and desire you to let it be done to Morrow Morning; and I will give you the same fair Conditions of Marriage as I would have done before.

This, it must be owned, was a Testimony that he was very honest;

nest, and that he loved me sincerely; but I construed it quite another Way, namely, that he aimed at the Money: But how surprized did he look! and how was he confounded, when he found me receive his Proposal with Coldness and Indifference! and still tell him, that it was the *only thing* I could not grant!

He was astonished! What, not take me now! *says he*, when I have been a-bed with you? I answered coldly, though respectfully still, *It is true*, to my Shame be it spoken, *says I*, *that you have taken me by Surprise, and have had your Will of me; but I hope you will not take it ill that I cannot consent to marry, for all that; If I am with Chi'd*, said I, *Care must be taken to manage that as you shall Direct; I hope you won't expose me, for my having exposed myself to you, but I cannot go any farther;* and at that Point I stood, and would hear of no Matrimony by any Means.

Now because this may seem a little odd, I shall state the Matter clearly, as I understood it myself; I knew that while I was a Mistress, it is customary for the Person kept to receive from them that kept; but if I should be a Wife, all I had then was given up to the Husband, and I was thenceforth to be under his Authority only; and as had Money enough, and needed not fear being what they call *A cast-off Mistress*; so I had no need to give him twenty Thousand Pounds to marry me, which had been buying my Lodging too dear a great deal.

Thus his Project of coming to bed to me, was a Bite upon himself, while he intended it for a Bite upon me; and he was no nearer his Aim of marrying me, than he was before; all his Arguments he could urge upon the Subject of Matrimony, were at an End, for I positively declined marrying him; and as he had refused the Thousand Pistoles which I had offered him, in Compensation for his Expences and Loss at *Paris*, with the *Jew*, and had done it upon the Hopes he had of marrying me; so when he found his Way difficult still, he was amazed, and, I had some Reason to believe, repented that he had refused the Money.

But thus it is when Men run into wicked Measures, to bring their Designs about; I that was infinitely obliged to him before, began to talk to him, as if I had ballanced Accompts with him now; and that the Favour of Lying with a Whore was equal, not to the Thousand Pistoles only, but to all the Debt I owed him, for saving my Life, and all my Effects.

But he drew himself into it, and though it was a dear Bargain, yet it was a Bargain of his own making; he could not say I had trick'd him into it; but as he projected and drew me in to lye with him, depending that it was a sure Game in order to a Marriage, so I granted him the Favour, as he called it, to ballance the Accompt of Favours received from him, and keep the Thousand Pistoles with a good Grace.

He was extremely disappinted in this Article, and knew not how to manage for a great while; and as I dare say, if he had not expected to have made it an Earnest for marrying me, he would never have attempted me the other Way; so, I believed, if it had not been for the Money, which he knew I had, he would never have desired to marry me after he had lain with me: For, where is the Man that cares to marry a Whore, though of his own making? And as I knew him to be no Fool, so I did him no Wrong, when I supposed that, but for the Money, he would not have had any Thoughts of me that Way; especially after my yielding as I had done; in which it is to be remembered, that I made no Capitulation for marrying him, when I yielded to him, but let him do just what he pleased, without any previous Bargain.

Well, hitherto we went upon Guessees at one another's Designs; but as he continued to importune me to marry, though he had lain with me, and still did lie with me as often as he pleased, and I refused to marry him, though I let him lie with me whenever he desired it; I say, as these two Circumstances made up our Conversation, it could not continue long thus, but we must come to an Explanation.

One Morning, in the middle of our unlawful Freedoms, that is to say, when we were in Bed together; he sigh'd, and told me, he desired my Leave to ask me one Question, and that I would give him an Answer to it with the same ingenuous Freedom and Honesty, that I had used to treat him with; I told him I would: Why then his Question was, why I would not marry him, seeing I allowed him all the Freedom of a Husband? Or, says he, *my Dear, since you have been so kind as to take me to your Bed, why will you not make me your Own, and take me for good and all, that we may enjoy our selves, without any Reproach to one another.*

I told him, that as I had confessed it was the only Thing I could

not comply with him in, so it was the only Thing in all my Actions, that I could not give him a Reason for; that it was true, I had let him come to bed to me, which was supposed to be the greatest Favour a Woman could grant; but it was evident, and he might see it, that as I was sensible of the Obligation I was under to him, for saving me from the worst Circumstance it was possible for me to be brought to, I could deny him nothing; and if I had had any greater Favour to yield him, I should have done it, *that of Matrimony only excepted*, and he could not but see that I loved him to an extraordinary Degree, in every part of my Behaviour to him; but that as to marrying, which was giving up my Liberty, it was what once he knew I had done, and he had seen how it had hurried me up and down in the World, and what it had exposed me to; that I had an Aversion to it, and desired he would not insist upon it; he might easily see I had no Aversion to him; and that if I was with Child by him, he shou'd see a Testimony of my Kindness to the Father, for that I would settle all I had in the World upon the Child.

He was mute a good while; at last, *says he*, Come, my Dear, you are the first Woman in the World that ever lay with a Man, and then refused to Marry him, and therefore there must be some other Reason for your Refusal; and I have therefore one other Request, and that is, if I guess at the true Reason, and remove the Objection, will you then yield to me? I told him, if he removed the Objection, I must needs comply, for I should certainly do every thing that I had no Objection against.

Why then my Dear, it must be, that either you are already engaged, and married to some other Man, or you are not willing to dispose of your Money to me, and expect to advance yourself higher with your Fortune; now, if it be the first of these, my Mouth will be stopped, and I have no more to say; but if it be the last, I am prepared effectually to remove the Objection, and answer all you can say on that Subject.

I took him up short at the first of these; telling him he must have these Thoughts of me indeed, to think that I could yield to him in such a Manner as I had done, and continue it with so much Freedom, as he found I did; if I had a Husband, or were engaged to any other Man; and that he might depend upon it, that was not my Case, or any part of my Case.

Why

Why then, said he, as to the other, I have an Offer to make to you, that shall take off the Objection, *viz.* That I will not touch one Pistole of your Estate, more, than shall be with your own voluntary Consent; neither now, or at any other time, but you shall settle it as you please, for your life, and upon who you please after your Death; that I should see he was able to maintain me without it, and that it was not for that, that he followed me from *Paris*.

I was indeed surprized at that Part of his Offer, and he might easily perceive it; it was not only what I did not expect, but it was what I knew not what Answer to make to. He had indeed removed my principal Objection, nay all my Objections, and it was not possible for me to give my Answer; for if upon so generous an Offer I should agree with him, I then did as good as confess, that it was upon the Account of my Money that I refused him; and that tho' I could give up my Virtue, and expose myself, yet I would not give up my Money, which though it was true, yet was really too gross for me to acknowledge, and I could not pretend to marry him upon that Principle neither; then as to having him, and make over all my Estate out of his Hands, so as not to give him the Management of what I had, I thought it would not only be a little Gothick and Inhumane, but would be always a Foundation of Unkindness between us, and render us suspected one to another; so that, upon the whole I was obliged to give a new Turn to it, and talk upon a kind of an elevated Strain, which really was not in my Thoughts at first, at all, for I own, as above, the divesting myself of my Estate, and putting my Money out of my Hand, was the Sum of the Matter, that made me refuse to marry; but I say I gave it a new Turn, upon this Occasion, as follows:

I told him, I had, perhaps, differing Notions of Matrimony, from what the received Custom had given us of it; that I thought a Woman was a free Agent, as well as a Man, and was born free, and could she manage herself suitably, might enjoy that Liberty to as much Purpose as the Men do; that the Laws of Matrimony were indeed otherwise, and Mankind at this time acted quite upon other Principles; and those such, that a Woman gave herself entirely away from herself in Marriage, and capitulated only to be, at best, an *Upper Servant*, and from the time she took the Man, she was no better or worse than the servant among the *Israelites*, who had his

ears, bor'd, *that is*, nailed to the Door-Post; who by that Act gave himself up to be a Servant during Life.

That the very Nature of the Marriage-Contract was, in short, nothing but giving up Liberty, Estate, Authority, and every thing to the Man, and the Woman was indeed, a meer Woman, ever after, that is to say, a Slave.

He replied, that though in some Respects it was as I had said, yet I ought to consider, that as an equivalent to this, the Man had all the Care of Things devolved upon him; that the Weight of Business lay upon his Shoulders, and as he had the Trust, so he had the Toil of Life upon him, his was the Labour, his the Anxiety of Living; that the Woman had nothing to do, but to eat the Fat and drink the Sweet; to sit still and look round her, be waited on and made much of; be served, and loved, and made easy; *especially if the Husband acted as became him*; and that, in general, the Labour of the Man was appointed to make the Woman live quiet and unconcerned in the World; that they had the Name of Subjection, without the thing, and if in inferior Families they had the Drudgery of the House, and Care of the Provisions upon them, yet they had indeed much the easier part; for in general, the Women had only the Care of managing, that is, spending what their Husbands get; and that a Woman had the Name of Subjection indeed, but that they generally commanded not the Men only, but all they had; managed all for themselves, and where the Man did his Duty, the Woman's Life was all Ease and Tranquility; and that she had nothing to do, but to be easy, and to make all that were about her both easy and merry.

I returned, that while a Woman was single, she was a Masculine in her politick Capacity; that she had then the full Command of what she had, and the full Direction of what she did; that she was a Man in her separated Capacity, to all Intents and Purposes that a Man could be so to himself; that she was controuled by none, because accountable to none, and was in Subjection to none; so I sung these two Lines of Mr. ---- s.

*Oh! 'tis pleasant to be free,
The sweetest Miss is Liberty.*

I added,

I added, that whoever the Woman was, that had an Estate, and would give it up to be the Slave of a great Man, that Woman was a Fool, and must be fit for nothing but a Beggar; that it was my Opinion, a Woman was as fit to govern and enjoy her own Estate, without a Man, as a Man was without a Woman; and that, if she had a Mind to gratify herself as to Sexes, she might entertain a Man as a Man does a Mistress; that while she was thus single, she was her own, and if she gave away that Power, she merited to be as miserable as it was possible that any Creature could be.

All he could say, could not answer the Force of this as to Argument; only this, that the other Way was the ordinary Method that the World was guided by; that he had Reason to expect I should be content with that that all the World was contented with; that he was of the Opinion, that a sincere Affection between a Man and his Wife, answered all the Objections that I had made about the being a Slave, a Servant, and the like; and where there was a mutual Love, there could be no Bondage; but that there was but one Interest, one Aim, one Design, and all conspir'd to make both very happy.

My, said I, *that is the Thing I complain of*; the Pretence of Affection takes from a Woman every thing that can be called herself; she is to have no Interest, Aim, and View of the Husband; she is to be the passive Creature you spoke of, *said I*, she is to lead a Life of perfect Indolence, and living by Faith (not in God, but) her Husband, she sinks or swims, as he is either Fool or wise Man, Unhappy or Prosperous: and in the Middle of what she thinks is her Happiness and Prosperity, she is engulfed in Misery and Beggary, which she had not the least Notice, Knowledge, or Suspicion of: How often have I seen a Woman living in all the Splendor that a plentiful Fortune ought to allow her: With her Coaches and Equipages; her Family and rich Furniture; her Attendants and Friends; her Visitors, and good Company, all about her: To-day, To-morrow surprized with a Disaster, turned out of all by a Commission of Bankrupt; stripped to the Cloaths on her Back; her Jointure, *suppose she had it*, is sacrificed to the Creditors, so long as her Husband lived, and she turned into the Street, and left to live on the Charity of her Friends, *if she has any*, or follow the Monach her Husband, into the *Mon*, and live there on the Wreck of his Fortunes,

still he is forced to run away from her, even there; and then she sees her Children starve, herself Miserable, breaks her Heart, and cries herself to Death. This, *says I*, is the State of many a Lady that has had ten Thousand Pounds to her Portion.

He did not know how feelingly I spoke this, and what Extremities I had gone through of this Kind; how near I was to the very last Article above, *viz. crying myself to Death*; and how I really starved for almost two Years together.

But he shook his Head, and said, Where had I lived? And what dreadful Families had I lived among, that had frightened me into such terrible Apprehensions of Things? That these Things indeed might happen, where Men run into hazardous Things in Trade, and without Prudence, or due Consideration, launched their Fortunes in a Degree beyond their Strength, grasping at Adventures beyond their Stocks, *and the like*; but that, as he was stated in the World, if I would embark with him, he had a Fortune equal with mine; that together we should have no Occasion of engaging in Business any more; but that in any Part of the World where I had a Mind to live, whether *England, France, Holland*, or where I would, we might settle, and live as happily as the World could make any one live; that if I desired the Management of our Estate, when put together, if I would not trust him with mine, he would trust him with his; that we would be upon one Bottom, and I should steer. *Ay, says I*, you will allow me to steer, *that is*, hold the Helm, but you will command the Ship, *as they call it*; that is as at Sea, a Boy serves to stand at the Helm, but he that gives him the Orders is Pilot.

He laughed at my Simile: No, *says he*, you shall be Pilot then, you shall command the Ship. *Ay, says I*, as long as you please, but you can take the Helm out of my Hand when you please, and bid me go spin. It is not you, *says I*, that I suspect, but the Laws of Matrimony puts the Power into your Hands, bids you do it, commands you to command; and bids me, forsooth, to obey; you that are now upon even Terms with me, and I with you, *says I*, are the next Hour set up upon the Throne, and the humble Wife placed at your Footstool; all the rest, all that you call Oneness of Interest, mutual Affection, *and the like*, is Curtesie and Kindness then, and a Woman is indeed, infinitely obliged where she meets with it; but cannot help herself where it fails.

Well, he did not give it over yet, but came to the serious Part; and there he thought he should be too many for me; he first hinted, that Marriage was decreed by Heaven; that it was the fix'd State of Life, which God had appointed for Man's Felicity, and for establishing a legal Posterity; that there cou'd be no legal Claim of Estates by Inheritance, but by Children born in Wedlock; that all the rest was sunk under Scandal and Illegitimacy; and very well he talk ed upon the Subject, indeed,

But it wou'd not do, I took him short there. Look you, Sir, said I, you have an advantage over me there indeed, in my particular Case; but it wou'd not be generous to make use of it, I readily grant, that it were better for me to have marry'd you than to admit you to the Liberty I have given you; but I cou'd not reconcile my Judgment to Marriage, for the Reasons above, and had Kindness enough for you, and Obligation too much on me, to resist you, I suffer'd your Rudeness, and gave up my Virtue; but I have two things before me to heal up that breach of Honour without that desperate one of Marriage; and those are, Repentance for what is past, and putting an End to it for Time to come.

He seem'd to be concerned, to think that I should take him in that Manner; he assured me that I misunderstood him; that he had more Manners, as well as more Kindness for me; and more Justice than to reproach me with what he had been the Aggressor in, and had surprized me into; That what he spoke, referred to my Words above; that the Woman, if she thought fit, might entertain a Man as the Man did a Mistress; and that I seem'd to mention that Way of Living as justifiable, and setting it as a lawful Thing, and in the Place of Matrimony.

Well, we strain'd some Compliments upon those Points, not worth repeating; and I added, I suppos'd when he got to Bed to me, he thought himself sure of me, and indeed, in the ordinary Course of things after he lain with me, he ought to think so; but that, upon the same foot of Argument which I had discours'd with him upon, it was just the Contrary; and when a Woman had been Weak enough to yield up the last Point before Wedlock, it wou'd be adding one Weakness to another, to take the Man afterwards; to pin down the Shame of it upon herself all Days of her Life, and bind herself to live all her Time with the only Man that cou'd upbraid her with it.

that in yielding at first, she must be a Fool; but to take the Man, is to be sure to be call'd Fool; that to resist a Man is to act with Courage and Vigour, and to cast off the Reproach, which in Course of things, drops out of Knowledge, and dies; the Man goes one way, and the Woman another, as Fate, and the Circumstances of Living direct; and if they keep one another's Council, the Folly is heard no more of; but to take the Man, says I, is the most preposterous Thing in Nature, and (serving your Presence) is to besoul one's self, and live always in the Smell of it; No, no, added I, after a Man has lain with me as a Mistress, he ought never to lie with me as a Wife; that's not only preserving the Crime in Memory, but it is recording it in the Family; if the Woman marries the Man afterwards, she bears the Reproach of it to the last Hour; if her Husband is not one of a hundred Thousand, he sometime or other upbraids her with it; if he has Children, they fail not one way or other, to hear of it; if the Children are virtuous, they do the Mother the Justice to hate her for it; if they are wicked, they give her the Mortification of doing the like, and giving her for the Example: On the other hand, if the Man and the Woman part, there is an End of the Crime, and an End of the Clamour; Time wears out the Memory of it; or a Woman may remove but a few Streets, and she soon outlives it, and hears no more of it.

He was confounded at this Discourse, and told me, he could not say but I was right in the Main; that as to that Part relating to managing Estates, it was arguing *à la Cavalier*; it was in some sense, right, if the Woman were able to carry it on so, but that in general, the Sex were not capable of it; their Heads were not turn'd for it, and they had better choose a Person capable, and honest, that knew how to do them Justice, as Women, as well as to love them; and that then the Trouble was all taken off of their Hands.

I told him, it was a dear Way of purchasing their Ease; for very often when the trouble was taken off of their Hands, so was their Money too; and that I thought it was far safer for the Sex not to be afraid of the Trouble, but to be really afraid of their Money; that if no body was trusted, no body would be deceiv'd; and the Staff in their own Hands, was the best Security in the World.

He reply'd, that I had started a new thing in the World; that however I might support it by subtil reasoning, yet it was a way of
 arguing

arguing that was contrary to the general Practice, and that he confess'd he was much disappointed in it; that had he known I would have made such a Use of it, he would never have attempted what he did, which he had no wicked Design in, resolving to make me Reparation, and that he was very sure he should never upbraid me with in hereafter, and had so good an Opinion of me, as to believe I did not suspect him; but seeing I was positive in refusing him, notwithstanding what had pass'd, he had nothing to do but to secure me from Reproach, by going back again to *Paris*, that so according to my own way of arguing, it might die out of Memory, and I might ever meet with it again to my Disadvantage.

I was not pleas'd with this Part at all, for I had no mind to let him go neither; and yet I had no mind to give him such hold of me as he would have had; and thus I was in a kind of suspense, irresolute, and doubtful what Course to take.

I was in the House with him, as I have observ'd and I saw evidently that he was preparing to go back to *Paris*; which was, as I understood afterwards, to pay for some Wines which he had given Order to have bought for him. at *Troyes* in *Champagne*; and I knew not what Course to take; and besides that, I was very loth to part with him; I found also that I was with Child by him, which was what I had not yet told him of; and sometimes I thought not to tell him of it at all; but I was in a strange Place, and had no Acquaintance, though I had a great deal of Substance, which indeed having no Friends there, was the more dangerous to me.

This oblig'd me to take him one Morning, when I saw him, as I thought, a little anxious about his going, and irresolute; says I to him, I fancy you can hardly find in your Heart to leave me now; The more unkind is it in you, said he, severely unkind, to refuse a Man that knows not how to part with you.

I am so far from being unkind to you, said I, that I will go over all the World with you, if you desired me, except to *Paris*, where you know I cannot go.

It is pity so much Love, said he, on both Sides, should ever separate.

Why then, said I, do you go away from me?

Because, said he, you won't take me.

But if I won't take you, said I, you may take me any where but to Paris.

He was very loth to go any where, he said, without me; but he must go to Paris, or to the *Past Indies*.

I told him I did not use to court, but I durst venture myself to the *East Indies* with him, if there was any immediate Necessity of his going.

He told me, God be thanked, he was in no Necessity of going any where, but that he had a very tempting Invitation to go to the *Indies*.

I answered, I would say nothing to that; but that I desired he would go any where but to Paris; because there he knew I must not go.

He said he had no Remedy, but to go where I could not go; for he could not bear to see me, if he must not have me.

I told him, that was the unkindest Thing he could say of me, and that I ought to take it very ill, seeing I knew how very well to oblige him to stay, without yielding to what he knew I could not yield to,

This amazed him, and he told me, I was pleased to be mysterious; but that he was sure it was in no body's Power to hinder him going, if he resolved upon it, except me; who had influence enough upon him to make him do any thing.

Yes, I told him, I cou'd hinder him, because I knew he cou'd no more do an unkind thing by me, than he cou'd do an unjust one; and to put him out of his Pain; I told him I was with Child.

He came to me, and taking me in his Arms, and kissing me a Thousand times almost, said, Why wou'd I be so unkind, not to tell him that before.

I told him, 'twas hard, that, to have him stay, I shou'd be forc'd do as Criminals do to avoid the Gallows, plead my Bel'y; and that I thought I had given him Testimonies enough of an Affection equal to that of a Wife; if I had not only lain with him, been with Child by him, shewn myself unwilling to part with him, but offered to go to the *East-Indies* with him; and except one Thing that I could not grant, what could he ask more?

He stood mute a good while; but afterwards told me, he had a great deal more to say, if I could assure him, that I would not take

ill whatever Freedom he might use me with in his Discourse. I told him, he might use any Freedom in Words with me; for a Woman who had given Leave to such other Freedoms, as I had done, had left herself no room to take any thing ill, let it be what it would.

Why then, *he said*, I hope you believe, Madam, I was born a *Christian*, and that I have some Sense of Sacred Things upon my Mind; when I first broke in upon my own Virtue, and assaulted yours, when I surprized, and as it were forced you to that which neither you intended, or I designed, but a few Hours before, it was upon a Presumption that you would certainly marry me, if once I could go that Length with you; and it was with an honest Resolution to make you my Wife.

But I have been surprized with such a Denial, that no Woman in such Circumstances ever gave to a Man; for certainly it was never known, that any Woman refused to marry a Man that had first lain with her, much less a Man that had gotten her with Child; but you go upon different Notions from all the World; and though you reason upon it so strongly, that a Man knows hardly what to answer, yet I must own, there is something in it shocking to Nature, and something very unkind to yourself; but above all, it is unkind to the Child that is yet unborn; who, if we marry, will come into the World with Advantage enough, but if not, is ruined before it is born, must bear the eternal Reproach of what it is not guilty of, must be branded from its Cradle with a Mark of Infamy, be loaded with the Crimes and Follies of its Parents, and suffer for Sins that it never committed: This I take to be very hard, and indeed cruel to the poor Infant not yet born, who you cannot think of with any Patience, if you have the common Affection of a Mother, and not do that for it which should at once place it on a Level with the rest of the World, and not leave it to curse its Parents for what also we ought to be ashamed of: I cannot, therefore, *says he*, but beg and intreat you, as you are a Christian, and a Mother, not to let the innocent Lamb you go with, be ruined before it is born, and leave it to curse and reproach us hereafter, for what may be so very easily avoided.

Then dear Madam, *said he*, with a World of Teaderness (and I thought I saw Tears in his Eyes) allow me to repeat it, that I am a Christian, and consequently I do not allow what I have rashly, and

without due Consideration done; and therefore though I did, with a View I have mentioned, one unjustifiable Action, I cannot say that I could satisfy myself to live in a continual Practice of what, in Judgment, we must both condemn; and though I love you above all the Women in the World, and have done enough to convince you of it, by resolving to marry you after what has passed between us, and by offering to quit all Pretensions to any Part of your Estate, so that I should, as it were, take a Wife after I had lain with her, and without a Farthing Portion; which, as my Circumstances are, I need not do; I say, notwithstanding my Affection to you, which is inexpressible, yet I cannot give up Soul as well as Body, the Interest of this World, and the Hopes of another; and you cannot call this my Disrespect to you.

If ever any Man in the World was truly Valuable for the strictest honesty of Intention, *this was the Man*; and if ever Woman in her Senses rejected a Man of Merit, on so trivial and frivolous a Pretence, *I was the Woman*; but surely it was the most preposterous thing that ever Woman did.

He would have taken me as a Wife, but would not entertain me as a Whore; was ever Woman angry with any Gentleman on that Head? And was ever Woman so stupid to choose to be a Whore, where she might have been an honest Wife? But Insinuations are next to being possessed of the Devil; I was inflexible, and pretended to argue upon the Point of a Woman's Liberty, as before; but he took me short, and with more Warmth than he had yet used with me, though with the utmost Respect, reply'd, Dear Madam, you argue for Liberty at the same Time that you restrain yourself from that Liberty which God and Nature has directed you to take; and to supply the Deficiency, propose a vicious Liberty, which is neither Honourable or Religious; will you propose Liberty at the Expence of Modesty?

I returned, that he mistook me; I did not propose it; I only said, that those that could not be content without concerning the Sexes in that Affair, might do so indeed, might entertain a Man as Men do a Mistress, if they thought fit, but he did not hear me say I would do so; and though, by what had passed, he might well censure me in that Part, yet he should find, for the future, that I should freely converse with him without any Inclination that Way.

He told me, he would not promise that for himself, and thought he ought not to trust himself with the Opportunity; for that, as he had failed already, he was loth to *lead himself into the Temptation* of offending again, and that this was the true Reason of his resolving to go back to *Paris*; not that he could willingly leave me, and would be very far from wanting my Invitation; but if he could not stay upon Terms that became him, either as an honest Man, or a Christian, What could he do? And he hoped, *he said*, I could not blame him, that he was unwilling any thing that was to call him Father, should upbraid him with leaving him in the World to be called Bastard; adding, that he was astonished to think how I could satisfy myself to be so cruel to an innocent Infant not yet born; professed he could neither bear the Thoughts of, much less bear to see it, and hoped I would not take it ill that he could not stay to see me delivered, for that very Reason.

I saw he spoke this with a disturbed Mind, and that it was with some Difficulty that he restrained his Passion; so I declined any farther Discourse upon it; only said, I hoped he would consider of it; *O Madam!* said he, *Do not bid me consider, 'tis for you to consider*; and with that he went out of the Room in a strange kind of Confusion, as was easy to be seen in his Countenance.

If I had not been one of the foolishlest, as well as wickedest Creatures upon Earth, I could never have acted thus; I had one of the honestest completest Gentlemen upon Earth at my Hand; he had in one Sense saved my Life, but he had saved that Life from Ruin in a most remarkable Manner; he loved me even to Distraction, and had come from *Paris* to *Rotterdam* on purpose to seek me; he had offered me Marriage, even after I was with Child by him, and had offered to quit all his Pretensions to my Estate, and give it up to my own Management, having a plentiful Estate of his own. Here I might have settled myself out of the Reach even of Disaster itself; his Estate and mine, would have purchased even then above two Thousand Pounds a Year, and I might have lived like a Queen; and which was above all, I had an Opportunity to have quitted a Life of Crime and Debauchery, which I had been given up to for several Years, and to have sat down in Plenty and Honour, and to have set myself apart to the Great Work, which I have since seen so much Necessity of, and Occasion for; I mean that of Repentance.

But

But my Measure of Wickednesses was not yet full; I continued obstinate against Marimony, and yet I could not bear the Thoughts of his going away neither; as to the Child, I was not very anxious about it; I told him, I would promise him that it should never come to him to upbraid him with its being illegitimate; that if it was a Boy, I would breed it up like the Son of a Gentleman, and use it well for his sake; and after a little more such Talk as this, and seeing him resolved to go, I retired, but could not help letting him see the Tears run down my Cheeks; he came to me and kissed me, entreated me, conjur'd me by the Kindness he had shewn me in my Distress; by the Justice he had done me in my Bills and Money Affairs; by the Respect which made him refuse a Thousand Pistoles from me for his Expences with that Traytor the Jew; by the Pledge of our Misfortunes; *so he called it*, which I carry'd with me; and by all that the sincerest Affection could propose to do, that I would not drive him away.

But it would not do; I was stupid and senseless, deaf to all his Importunities, and continued so to the last; so we parted, only desiring me to promise that I would write him Word when I was Delivered, and how he might give an Answer; and this I engaged my Word I would do; and upon his desiring to be informed which Way I intended to dispose of myself, I told him, I resolved to go directly to *England*, and to *London*, where I proposed to Lye-in; but since he resolved to leave me, I told him, I supposed it would be of no Consequence to him, what became of me.

He lay in his Lodgings that Night, but went away early in the Morning, leaving me a Letter, in which he repeated all he had said; recommended the Care of the Child, and desired of me, that as he had remitted to me the Offer of a Thousand Pistoles, which I would have given him for the Recompence of his Charges and Trouble with the Jew, and had given it me back, so he desired I would allow him to oblige me to set apart that Thousand Pistoles, with its Produce, for the Child, and for its Education; pressing me to secure that little Portion for the abandoned Orphan, when I should think fit, *as he was sure I would*, to throw away the Rest upon something as worthless as my sincere Friend at *Paris*; he concluded with moving me to reflect with the same Regret as he did, on our Follies we had committed together; ask'd me Forgiveness for being the Aggres-

for in the Fact ; and forgave me every thing, *he said*, but the Cruelty of refusing him, which he owned he could not forgive me so heartily as he should do, because he was satisfied it was an Injury to myself, would be an Introduction to my Ruin, and that I would seriously repent of it ; he foretold some fatal things, which, *he said*, he was well assured I should fall into ; and that, at last I would be ruined by a bad Husband ; bid me be the more wary, that I might render him a false Prophet ; but to remember, that if ever I came into Distress, I had a fast Friend at *Paris*, who would not upbraid me with the unkind Things past, but would be always ready to return Good for Evil.

This Letter stunn'd me ; I could not think it possible for any one, that had not dealt with the Devil, to write such a Letter ; for he spoke of some particular Things which afterwards were to befall me, with such an Assurance, that it frightened me before hand ; and when those Things did come to pass, I was persuaded he had some more than humane Knowledge ; in a Word, his Advices to me to repent were very Affectionate ; his Warnings of Evil to happen to me were very Kind ; and his Promise of Assistance, if I wanted him, were so Generous, that I have seldom seen the like ; and though I did not at first set much by that Part, because I looked upon them as what might not happen, and as what was improbable to happen at that Time ; yet all the rest of his Letter was so moving, that it left me very Melancholly, and I cry'd four and twenty Hours after, almost without ceasing, about it ; and yet, even all this while, whatever it was that bewitch'd me, I had not one serious Wish that I had taken him ; I wished heartily indeed, that I could have kept him with me ; but I had a mortal Aversion to marrying him, or indeed any body else ; but formed a Thousand wild Notions in my Head, that I was yet gay enough, and young, and handsome enough to please a Man of Quality ; and that I would try my Fortune at *London*, come of it what would.

Thus blinded by my own Vanity, I threw away the only Opportunity I then had, to have effectually settled my Fortunes, and secured them for this World ; and I am a Memorial to all that shall read my Story, a standing Monument of the Madness and Distraction which Pride and Infatuation from Hell runs us into ; how ill

our Passions guide us ; and how dangerously we act, when we follow the Dictates of an ambitious Mind.

I was rich, beautiful, and agreeable, and not yet old ; I had known something of the Influence I had had upon the Fancies of Men, even of the highest Rank ; I had not forgot that the Prince de — had said with an Extasy, that I was the finest Woman in France ; I knew I could make a Figure at London, and how well I could grace that Figure ; I was not at a Loss how to behave, and having already been adored by Princes, I thought of nothing less than of being Mistress to the King himself. But I go back to my immediate Circumstances at that Time.

I got over the Absence of my honest Merchant but slowly at first ; it was with infinite Regret that I let him go at all ; and when I read the Letter he left, I was quite confounded ; as soon as he was out of Call, and irrecoverable, I would have given half what I had in the World for him back again ; my Notions of Things changed in an instant, and I called myself a thousand Fools, for casting myself upon a Life of Scandal and Hazard ; when after the Shipwreck of Virtue, Honour and Principle, and sailing at the utmost Risque in the stormy Seas of Crime, and abominable Levity, I had a safe Harbour presented, and no Heart to cast Anchor in it.

His Predictions terrify'd me ; his Promises of Kindness if I came to Distress, melted me into Tears, but frightened me with the Apprehensions of ever coming into such Distress, and filled my Head with a thousand Anxieties and Thoughts, how it should possibly be for me, who had now such a Fortune, to sink again into Misery.

Then the dreadful Scene of my Life, when I was left with my five Children, &c. as I have related, represented itself again to me, and I sat considering what Measures I might take to bring myself to such a State of Desolation again, and how I should act to avoid it.

But these things wore off gradually ; as to my Friend the Merchant, he was gone, and gone irrecoverably, for I durst not follow him to Paris, for the Reasons mentioned above. Again, I was afraid to write to him to return, lest he should have refused, as I verily believed he would ; so I sat and cry'd intollerably for some Days, nay, I may say for some Weeks ; but I say, it wore off gradually ; and as I had a pretty deal of Business for managing my Effects, the

Hurry

Hurry of that particular Part served to divert my Thoughts, and in part to wear out the Impressions which had been made upon my Mind.

I had sold my Jewels, all but the fine Diamond Ring, which my Gentleman the Jeweller used to wear; and this, at proper Times, I wore myself; as also the Diamond Necklace, which the Prince had given me, and a Pair of extraordinary Ear-Rings, worth about a hundred Pistoles; the other, which was a fine Casket, he left me at his going to *Versailles*, and a small Case with some Rubies and Emeralds, &c. I say, I sold them at the *Hague* for seven Thousand six Hundred Pistoles; I had received all the Bills which the Merchant had helped me to at *Paris*, and with the Money I brought with me, they made up thirteen Thousand nine Hundred Pistoles more; so that I had in ready Money, and in Account at the Bank at *Amsterdam*, above one and twenty Thousand Pistoles, besides Jewels; and how to get this Treasure to *England* was now my next Care.

The Business I had had now with a great many People, for receiving such large Sums of Money, and selling Jewels of such considerable Value, gave me Opportunity to know and converse with several of the best Merchants of the Place, so that I wanted no Direction now, how to get my Money remitted to *England*; applying therefore to several Merchants, that I might neither risque it all on the Credit of one Merchant, nor suffer any single Man to know the Quantity of Money I had; I say, applying myself to several Merchants, I got Bills of Exchange, payable in *London*, for all my Money; the first Bills I took with me; the second Bills I left in Trust (in case of any Disaster at Sea) in the Hands of the first Merchant, him to whom I was recommended by my Friend from *Paris*.

Having thus spent nine Months in *Holland*, refused the best Offer ever Woman in my Circumstances had, parted unkindly, and indeed barbarously with the best Friend, and honestest Man in the World, got all my Money in my Pocket, and a Bastard in my Belly, I took Shipping at the *Briel*, in the Packet-Boat, and arrived safe at *Harwich*, where my Woman, *Amy* was come, by my Direction, to meet me.

I would willingly have given ten Thousand Pounds of my Money, to have been rid of the Burthen I had in my Belly, as above; but

but it cou'd not be ; so I was oblig'd to bear with that Part, and get rid of it by the ordinary Method of Patience, and a hard Travel.

I was above the contemptible Usage that Women in my Circumstances oftentimes meet with ; I had consider'd all that before-hand ; and having sent *Amy* before-hand, and remitted her Money to do it, she had taken me a very handsome House, in ----- Street, near *Charing-Cross* ; had hir'd me two Maids, and a Footman, who she had put in a good Livery, and having hir'd a Glass Coach and four Horses, she came with them and the Man Servant, to *Harwich*, to meet me, and had been there near a Week before I came ; so I had nothing to do, but to go away to *London*, to my own House, where I arriv'd in very good Health, and where I pass'd for a *French Lady*, by the Title of -----

My first Business was, to get all my Bills accepted ; which, to cut the Story short, was all both accepted, and currently paid ; and I then resolv'd to take me a Country Lodging somewhere near the Town, to be *Incognito*, till I was brought to bed ; which appearing in such a Figure, and having such an Epuipage, I easily manag'd, without any body's offering the usual Insults of Parish Enquiries : I did not appear in my new House for some time ; and afterwards I thought fit, for particular reasons, to quit that House, and not come to it at all, but take handsome large Apartments in the *Pallmall*, in a House, out of which was a private Door into the King's Garden, by the Permission of the chief Gardener, who had liv'd in the House.

I had now all my Effects secur'd ; but my Money being my great Concern at that time, I found it a Difficulty how to dispose of it, so as to bring me in an annual Interest ; however, in some time I got a substantial false Mortgage for 14,000 Pound, by the Assistance of the famous *Sir Robert Clayton*, for which, I had an Estate of 1,800 Pounds a Year bound to me ; and had 700 Pounds *per Annam* Interest for it.

This, with some other securities, made me a very handsome Estate, of above a thousand Pounds a Year ; enough, one wou'd think, to keep any Woman in *England* from being a Whore-

I lay in at -----, about four Miles from *London*, and brought a fine Boy into the World ; and according to my Promise, sent an Account

Account of it to my Friend at *Paris*, the Father of it ; and in my Letter, told him how sorry I was for his going away, and did as good as intimate, that if he would come once more to see me, I should use him better than I had done. He gave me a very kind and obliging Answer, but took not the least Notice of what I had said of *his coming Over*, so I found my Interest lost there for ever : He gave me Joy of the Child, and hinted, that he hop'd I would make good what he had begg'd for the poor Infant, as I had promis'd ; and I sent him word again, that I would fulfil his Order to a Tittle ; and such a Fool, and so weak I was in this last Letter, notwithstanding what I have said of his not taking Notice of my Invitation, as to ask his Pardon almost, for the Usage I gave him at *Rotterdam*, and stoop'd so low, as to expostulate with him for not taking Notice of my inviting him to come to me again, as I had done ; and which was still more, went so far, as to make a second sort of an Offer to him, telling him almost in plain Words, that if he wou'd come over now, I wou'd have him ; but he never gaye me the least Reply to it at all, which was as absolute a Denial to me, as he was ever able to give ; so I sat down, I cannot say contented, but vex'd heartily that I had made the Offer at all ; for he had, as I may say, his full Revenge of me, in scorning to answer, and to let me twice ask that of him which he with so much Importunity begg'd of me before.

I was now up again, and soon came to my City Lodging, in the *Pallmall* ; and here I began to make a Figure suitable to my Estate, which was very great ; and I shall give you an Account of my Equipage in a few Words, and of my self too.

I paid 60*l.* a Year for my new Apartments, for I took them by the Year ; but then, they were handsome Lodgings indeed, and very richly furnish'd ; I kept my own Servants to clean and look after them ; found my own Kitchen Ware, and Firing ; my Equipage was handsome, but not very great : I had a Coach, a Coachman, a Footman, my Woman, *Amy*, who I now dress'd like a Gentlewoman, and made her my Companion, and three Maids ; and thus I liv'd for a time : I dress'd to the height of every Mode ; went extremely rich in Cloaths ; and as for Jewels, I wanted none ; I gave a very good Livery lac'd with Silver, and as rich as any body below the Nobility, cou'd be seen with : And thus

thus I appeared, leaving the world to guess who or what I was without offering to put myself forward.

I walked sometimes in the *Mall* with my Woman *Amy*, but kept no Company, and made no Acquaintances, only made as gay a Show as I was able to do, and that upon all Occasions: I found, however, the World was not altogether so unconcerned about me, as I seemed to be about them; and first, I understood that the Neighbours began to be mighty inquisitive about me: as who I was? and what my circumstances were?

Amy was the only Person that could answer their Curiosity, or give any Account of me, and she a rattling Woman, and a true Gossip, took Care to do that with all the Art that she was Mistress of; she let them know, that I was the Widow of a Person of Quality in France; that I was very rich, that I came over hither to look after an Estate that fell to me by some of my Relations who died here; that I was worth 40000 *l.* all in my own Hands, and the like.

This was all wrong in *Amy*, and in me too, though we did not see it first; for this recommended me indeed, to those sort of Gentlemen they call Fortune Hunters, and who always besieged Ladies as they called it, on Purpose to take them Prisoners, as I called it; that is to say, to marry the Women, and have the spending of their Money. But if I was wrong in refusing the honourable Proposals of the Dutch Merchant, who offered me the Disposal of my whole Estate, and had as much of his own to maintain me with; I was right now in refusing those Offers which came generally from Gentlemen of good Families and good Estates, but who living to the Extent of them were always needy and necessitous, and wanted a Sum of Money to make themselves easy, as they call it, that is to say, to pay off Incumbrances, Sisters Portions, and the like; and then the Woman is Prisoner for Life, and must live as they please to give her Leave; this Life I had seen into clearly enough, and therefore was not to be caught that way; however, as I said, the Reputation of my Money brought several of those sort of Gentry about me, and they found Means by one Stratagem or other to get access to my Ladyship; but in short I answered them all well enough; that I lived single and was happy; that as I had no Occasion to change my Condition for an Estate, so I did not see that by
the

the best Offer that any of them could make me, I could mend my Fortune; that I might be honoured with Titles indeed, and in time rank on publick Occasions with the Peereſſes; I mention that becauſe one that offered at me was the eldeſt Son of a Peer: But that I was as well without the Title, as long as I had the Eſtate; and while I had 2000 l. a Year of my own I was happier than I could be in being Priſoner of State to a Nobleman; for I took the Ladies of that Rank to be little better.

As I have mentioned Sir Robert Clayton, with whom I had the good Fortune to be acquainted, on Account of the Mortgage which he helped me to, it is neceſſary to take Notice, that I had much Advantage in my ordinary Affairs by his Advice, and therefore I call it my good Fortune; for as he paid me ſo conſiderable an annual Income as 700 l. per Annum, ſo I am to acknowledge myſelf much a Debtor, not only to the Juſtice of his Dealings with me, but to the Prudence and Conduct which he guided me to by his Advice, for the Management of my Eſtate; and as he found I was not inclined to marry, he frequently took Occaſion to hint how ſoon I might raiſe my Fortune to a prodigious Height, if I would but order my Family-Oeconomy ſo far within my Revenue, as to lay up every Year ſomething to add to the Capital,

I was convinced of the Truth of what he ſaid, and agreed to the Advantages of it; you are to take it as you go, that Sir Robert ſuppoſed by my own Diſcourſe, and eſpecially by my Woman Amy, that I had 2000 l. a Year Income; he judged, as he ſaid, by my way of living, that I could not ſpend above one Thouſand; and ſo, he added, I might prudently lay by 1000 l. every Year, to add to the Capital; and by adding every Year the additional Intereſt or Income of the Money to the Capital, he proved to me, that in ten Year I ſhould double the thouſand l. per Annum, that I laid by; and he drew me out a Table, as he called it, of the Encreaſe, for me to judge by; and by which he ſaid, if the Gentlemen of England would but act ſo, every Family of them would encreaſe their Fortunes to a great Degree, juſt as Merchants do by Trade; whereas now, ſays Sir Robert, by the Humour of living up to the Extent of their Fortunes; and rather beyond, the Gentlemen, nay, and the Nobility too, are, almoſt all of them, Borrowers, and all in neceſſitous Circumſtances.

As Sir Robert frequently visited me, and was, if I may say so from his own Mouth, very well pleased with my Way of conversing with him, for he knew nothing, nor so much as guessed at what I had been; I say, as he came often to see me, for he always entertained me with this Scheme of Frugality; and one Time he brought another Paper, wherein he shewed me, much to the same Purpose as the former, to what Degree I should encrease my Estate, if I would come into his Method of contracting my Expences; and by this Scheme of his it appeared, that laying up a Thousand Pounds a Year, and every Year adding the Interest to it, I should in twelve Years time have in Bank, One and twenty Thousand, and fifty eight Pounds; after which, I might lay up two Thousand Pounds every Year.

I objected, that I was a young Woman; that I had been used to live plentifully, and with a good Appearance; and that I knew not how to be a Miser.

He told me, if I thought I had enough it was well; but if I desired to have more, this was the Way; that in another twelve Years I should be too rich, so that I should not know what to do therewith.

Ay Sir, says I, you are contriving how to make me a rich old Woman, but that won't answer my End; I had rather have 20,000 *l.* now, than 60,000 *l.* when I am fifty Year old.

Then, Madam, says he, I suppose your Honour has no Children?

None, Sir Robert, said I, but what are provided for; so I left him in the dark, as much as I found him: However, I consider'd his Scheme very well, tho' I said no more to him at that time, and I resolv'd, tho' I would make a very good Figure, I say, I resolv'd to abate a little of my Expence, and draw in, live closer, and save something, if not so much as he propos'd to me: It was near the End of the Year that Sir Robert made this Proposal to me, and when the Year was up, I went to his House in the City, and there I told him, I came to thank him for his Scheme of Frugality; that I had been studying much upon it; and tho' I had not been able to mortify myself so much as to lay up a thousand Pounds a Year; yet, as I had not come to him for my Interest half-yearly, as was usual, I was now come to let him know, that I had resolv'd to lay

lay up that seven Hundred Pound a Year, and never use a Penny of it; desiring him to help me to put it out to Advantage.

Sir Robert, a Man thorowly versed in Arts of improving Money, but thorowly honest, *said to me*, Madam, I am glad you approve of the Method I propos'd to you; but you have begun wrong; for you should have come for your Interest at the Half-Year, and then you had had the Money to put out; now you have lost half a Year's Interest of three Hundred and fifty Pounds, which is nine Pounds, for I had but five *per Cent.* upon the Mortgage.

Well, well, Sir, *says I*, Can you put this out for me now?

Let it lie, Madam, *says he*, till the next Year, and then I'll put out your fourteen hundred Pounds together, and in the mean Time I'll pay you your Interest for the seven hundred Pounds; so he gave me his Bill for the Money, which he told me should be no less than six Pounds *per Cent.* Sir Robert Clayton's Bill was what no body would refuse; so I thanked him, and let it lie; and next Year I did the same; and the third Year Sir Robert got me a good Mortgage for two Thousand two Hundred Pounds, at six *per Cent* Interest. So I had one Hundred thirty two Pounds a Year added to my Income; which was a very satisfying Article.

But I return to my History: As I have said, I found that my Measures were all wrong, the Posture I set in, expos'd me to innumerable Visitors of the Kind I have mentioned above; I was cry'd up for a vast Fortune, and one that Sir Robert Clayton managed for; and Sir Robert Clayton was courted for me, as much as I was for myself: But I had given Sir Robert his Cue; I had told him my Opinion of Matrimony, in just the same Terms as I had done my Merchant, and he came into it presentty; he own'd that my Observation was just, and that, if I valued my Liberty, as I knew my Fortune, and that it was in my own Hands, I was to blame to give it away to any one.

But Sir Robert knew nothing of my Design, that I aim'd at being a kept Mistress and to have a handsome Maintenance; and that I was still for getting Money, and laying it up too, as much as he could desire me, only by a worse Way.

However, Sir Robert came seriously to me one Day, and told me, he had an Offer of Matrimony to make to me, that was beyond all that he had heard had offer'd themselves, and this was a Merchant.

Sir *Robert* and I agreed exactly in our Notions of a Merchant; Sir *Robert* said, and I found it to be rue, that a true-bred Merchant is the best Gentleman in the Nation; that in Knowledge, in Manners, in Judgment of Things, the Merchant out-did many of the Nobility; that having once master'd the World, and being above the Demand of Business, though no real Estate, they were then superior to most Gentlemen, even in Estate; that a Merchant in flush Business, and a capital Stock, is able to spend more Money than a Gentleman of five Thousand Pounds a Year Estate; that while a Merchant spent, he only spent what he got, and not that; and that he laid up great Sums every Year,

That an Estate is a Pond; but that a Trade is a Spring; that if the first is once mortgaged, it seldom gets clear, but embarrall'd the Person for ever; but the Merchant had his Estate continually flowing; and upon this, he named me Merchants who lived in more real Splendor, and spent more Money than most of the Noblemen in *England* could singly expend, and that they still grew immensely Rich.

He went on to tell me, that even the Tradesmen in *London*, speaking of the better Sort of Trades, could spend more Money in their Families, and yet give better Fortunes to their Children, than, generally speaking, the Gentry of *England* from a Thousand a Year downward, could do, and yet grow rich too.

The Upshot of all this was, to recommend to me, rather the bestowing my Fortune upon some eminent Merchant, who lived already in the first Figure of a Merchant, and who not being in Want or Scarcity of Money, but having a flourishing Business, and a flowing Cash, would at the first Word, settle all my Fortune on myself and Children, and maintain me like a Queen.

This was certainly right; and had I taken his Advice, I had been really happy; but my Heart was bent upon an Independency of Fortune; and I told him, I knew no State of Matrimony but what was, at best, a State of Inferiority, if not of Bondage; that I had no Notion of it; that I lived a Life of absolute Liberty now, was free as I was born, and having a plentiful Fortune, I did not understand what Coherence the Words *Honour* and *Obeys* had with the Liberty of a *Free Woman*; that I knew no Reason the Men had to engross the whole Liberty of the Race, and make the Women,

not-

notwithstanding any disparity of Fortune, be subject to the Laws of Marriage, of their own making; that it was my Misfortune to be a Woman, but I was resolv'd it should not be made worse by the Sex; and seeing Liberty seem'd to be the Mens Property, I would be a *Man-Woman*; for as I was born free, I would die so.

Sir Robert smil'd, and told me, I talk'd a kind of *Amazonian* Language; that he found few Women of my Mind, or that if they were, they wanted Resolution to go on with it; that notwithstanding all my Notions, which he could not but say had once some Weight in them, yet he understood I had broke in upon them, and had been marry'd. I answer'd, I had so, and he did not bear me say, that I had any Encouragement from what was past, to make a second Venture; that I was got well out of the Toil, and if I came in again, I should have no body to blame but myself.

Sir Robert laugh'd heartily at me, but gave over offering any more Arguments, only told me, he had point'd me out for some of the best Merchants in *London*, but since I forbade him, he would give me no farther Disturbance of that Kind; he applauded my Way of managing my Money, and told me, I should soon be monstrous Rich; but he neither knew, or mistrusted, that with all this Wealth, I was yet a Whore, and was not yet averse to adding to my Estate at the farther Expence of my Virtue.

But to go on with my Story as to my Way of living; I found, as above, that my living as I did would not answer; that it only brought the *Fortune-Hunters* and Bites about me, as I have said before, to make a Prey of me and my Money; and in short, I was harrass'd with Lovers, *Beaus*, and *Fops* of Quality, in abundance; but it would not do, I aim'd at other Things, and was possess'd with so vain an Opinion of my own Beauty, that nothing less than the King himself was in my Eye; and this Vanity was rais'd by some Words let fall by a Person I convers'd with, who was, perhaps, likely enough to have brought such a thing to pass, had it been sooner; but that Game began to be pretty well over at Court. However, the having mention'd such a Thing, it seems a little too publickly, it brought abundance of People about me, upon a wicked Account too.

And now I began to act in a new Sphere; the Court was exceeding Gay and Fine, though fuller of Men than of Women, the Queen

not affecting to appear in publick; on the other Hand, it is no Slander upon the Courtiers to say, they were as wicked as any body in Reason could desire them. The King had several Mistresses, who were very fine, and there was a glorious Show on that Side indeed. If the Sovereign gave himself a Loose, it could not be expected the rest of the Court should be all Saints; so far was it from that, that I would not make it worse than it was, that a Woman that had any thing agreeable in her Appearance, could never want Followers.

I soon found myself thronged with Admirers, and I received Visits from some Persons of very great Figure, who always introduced themselves by the Help of an old Lady or two, who were now become my Intimates; and one of them, I understood afterwards, was sent to work on Purpose to get into my Favour, in order to introduce what followed.

The Conversation I had was generally Courtly, but Civil; at length some Gentlemen proposed to Play, and made what they call'd a Party; this it seems was a Contrivance of one of my Female hangers on, for, as I said, I had two of them, who thought this was the Way to introduce People as often as she pleased, and so indeed it was: They play'd high, and stay'd late, but begg'd my Pardon, only asked Leave to make an Appointinent for the next Night; I was as gay, and as well pleased as any of them, and one Night told one of the Gentlemen, my Lord -----, that seeing they were doing me the Honour of diverting themselves at my Apartment, and desired to be there some Times, I did not keep a Gaming-Table, but I would give them a little Ball the next Day, if they pleased; which they accepted very willingly.

Accordingly in the Evening the Gentlemen began to come, where I let them see, that I understood very well what such Things meant, I had a large Dining-Room in my Apartments, with five other Rooms on the same Floor, all which I made Drawing-Rooms for the Occasion, having all the Beds taken down for the Day; in three of these I had Tables placed, covered with Wine and Sweet-Meats; the fourth had a green Table for Play, and the fifth was my own Room, where I sat, and where I received all the Company that came to pay their Compliments to me. I was dressed, you may be sure, to all the Advantage possible, and had all the Jewels on, that I was Mistress of. My Lord -----, to whom I made the Invitation, sent me a

Sett of fine Musick from the Play-House, and the Ladies danced, and we began to be very Merry; when about eleven a Clock I had Notice given me, that there were some Gentlemen coming in Masquerade.

I seemed a little surprized, and began to apprehend some Disturbance; when my Lord ——— perceiving it, spoke to me to be easy, for that there was a Party of the Guards at the Door, which should be ready to prevent any Rudeness; and another Gentleman gave me a Hint, as if the King was among the Masks; I coloured as red as Blood could make a Face look, and expressed a great Surprize; however, there was no going back; so I kept my Station in my Drawing-Room, but with the Folding-Doors wide open.

A-while after the Masks came in, and began with a Dance *à la Conique*, performing wonderfully indeed. While they were dancing I withdrew, and left a Lady to answer for me, that I would return immediately; in less than half an Hour I returned, dressed in the Habit of a *Turkish Princess*; the Habit I got at *Leghorn*, when my *Foreign Prince* bought me a *Turkish Slave*, as I have said, the *Maltese* Man of War had, it seems, taken a *Turkish Vessel* going from *Constantinople* to *Alexandria*, in which were some Ladies bound for *Grand Cairo* in *Egypt*; and as the Ladies were made Slaves, so their fine Cloaths were thus exposed; and with this *Turkish Slave*, I bought the rich Cloaths too: The Dress was extraordinary fine indeed, I had bought it as a Curiosity, having never seen the like; the Robe was a fine *Persian*, or *India Damask*; the Ground White, and the Flowers Blue and Gold, and the Train held five Yards; the Dress under it was a Vest of the same, embroidered with Gold, and set with some Pearl in the Work, and some *Turquois Stones*; to the Vest was a Girdle five or six Inches wide, after the *Turkish Mode*; and on both Ends where it joined, or hooked, I was set with Diamonds for eight Inches either Way, only they were not true Diamonds; but no body knew that but myself.

The Turban, or Head-Dress, had a Pinnacle on the Top, but not above five Inches, with a Piece of loose *Sarcenet* ranging from it; and on the Front, just over the Forehead, was a good Jewel, which I had added to it.

This Habit, as above, cost me about sixty Pistoles in *Italy*, but cost much more in the Country from whence it came, and little did

I think, when I bought it, that I should put it to such a Use as this; though I had dressed myself in it many Times, by the Help of my little *Turk*, and afterwards between *Amey* and I, only to see how I looked in it. I had sent her up before, to get it ready, and when I came up, I had nothing to do but slip it on, and was down in my Drawing-Room in a little more than a Quarter of an Hour; when I came there the Room was full of Company, but I ordered the folding-Doors to be shut for a Moment or two, till I had received the Compliments of the Ladies that were in the Room, and had given them a full View of my Dress.

But my Lord, who happened to be in the Room, slipped out at another Door, and brought back with him one of the Masks, a tall well-shaped Person, but who had no Name, being all Mask'd, nor would it have been allowed to ask any Person's Name on such an Occasion; the Person spoke in *French* to me, that it was the finest Dress he had ever seen; and asked me, if he should have the Honour to dance with me? I bow'd, as giving my Consent, but said, As I had been a *Mahometan*, I could not dance after the Manner of this Country; I supposed their Musick would not play a *la Moresque*. He answered merrily, I had a Christian's Face, and he'd venture it, that I could dance like a Christian; adding, that so much Beauty could not be *Mahometan*. Immediately the Folding-Doors were flung open, and he led me into the Room. The Company were under the greatest Surprise imaginable; the very Musick stopped a while to gaze; for the Dress was indeed exceedingly surprizing, perfectly new, very agreeable, and wonderful rich.

The Gentleman, whoever he was, for I never knew, led me only a Courant, and then asked me, if I had a Mind to dance an Antick, that is to say, whether I would dance the Antick as they had danced in Masquerade, or any thing by myself. I told him, any thing else rather, if he pleased; so we danced only two *French* Dances, and he led me to the Drawing-Room Door, when he retired to the rest of the Masks. When he left me at the Drawing-Room Door, I did not go in, as he thought I would have done, but turned about, and show'd myself to the whole Room, and calling my Woman to me, gave her some Directions to the Musick, by which the Company presently understood that I would give them a Dance by myself; immediately all the House rose up, and paid me a kind of a Compliment,

by

by removing back every Way to make me Room, for the Place was exceeding full; the Musick did not at first hit the Tune that I directed, which was a *French Tune*, so I was forced to send my Woman to them again, standing all this while at my Drawing-Room Door; but as soon as my Woman spoke to them again, they play'd it right; and I, to let them see it was so, stepped forward to the Middle of the Room; then they began it again, and I danced by myself a Figure which I learned in *France*, when the Prince de — desired I would dance for his Diversion; it was indeed a very fine Figure, invented by a famous Master at *Paris*, for a Lady or a Gentleman to dance single; but being perfectly new, it pleased the Company exceedingly, and they all thought it had been *Turkish*; nay, one Gentleman had the Folly to expose himself so much, as to say, *and I think swore too*, that he had seen it danced at *Constantinople*; which was ridiculous enough.

At the finishing the Dance, the Company clapped, and almost shouted; and one of the Gentlemen cried out *Roxana! Roxana!* by —, with an Oath; upon which foolish Accident I had the Name of *Roxana* presently fixed upon me all over the Court End of the Town, as effectually as if I had been Christen'd *Roxana*. I had, it seems, the Feliciry of pleasing every body that Night, to an Extreme; and my Ball, but especially my Dress, was the Chat of the Town for that Week, and so the Name *Roxana* was the Toast at, and about the Court; no other Health was to be named with it.

Now things began to work as I would have them, and I began to be very Popular, as much as I could desire. The Ball held till (as well as I was pleas'd with the Show) I was sick of the Night; the Gentlemen masked went off about three a Clock in the Morning; the other Gentlemen sat down to Play, the Musick held it out, and some of the Ladies were dancing at six in the Morning.

But I was mighty eager to know who it was danced with me? Some of the Lords went so far as to tell me, I was very much honoured in my Company; one of them spoke so broad, as almost to say it was the King, but I was convinced afterwards it was not; and another reply'd, if he had been His Majesty, he should have thought it no Dishonour to lead up *Roxana*, but to this Hour I never knew positively who it was; and by this Behaviour I thought he was too young,

young, his Majesty being at that Time in an Age that might be discovered from a young Person, even in his Dancing.

Be that as it would, I had five hundred Guineas sent me the next Morning, and the Messenger was ordered to tell me, that the Persons who sent it, desired a Ball again at my Lodgings on the next *Tuesday*, but that they would have my Leave to give the Entertainment themselves. I was mighty well pleased with this, to be sure, but very inquisitive to know who the Money came from; but the Messenger was silent as Death, as to that Point; and bowing always at my Enquiries, begged me to ask no Questions which he could not give an obliging Answer to.

I forgot to mention that the Gentlemen that play'd gave a hundred Guineas to the Box, *as they called it*, and at the End of their Play, they asked my Gentlewoman of the Bed-Chamber, as they called her (*Mrs. Amy*, forsooth) and gave it her; and gave twenty Guineas more among the Servants.

This magnificent Doings equally both pleased and surprized me, and I hardly knew where I was; but especially, that Notion of the King being the Person that danced with me, puffed me up to that Degree, that I not only did not know any body else, but indeed, was very far from knowing myself.

I had now the next *Tuesday* to provide for the like Company; but alas! it was all taken out of my Hand; three Gentlemen, who yet were, it seems, but Servants, came on the *Saturday*, and bringing sufficient Testimonies that they were right, for one was the same who brought the five hundred Guineas; I say, three of them came, and brought Bottles of all Sorts of Wines, and Hampers of Sweet-Meats to such a Quantity, it appeared they designed to hold the Trade on more than once, and that they would furnish every thing to a Profusion.

However, as I found a Deficiency in two Things, I made Provision of about twelve Dozen of fine Damask Napkins, with Table-Cloaths of the same, sufficient to cover all the Tables, with three Table-Cloaths upon every Table, and Side-Boards in Proportion; also I bought a handsome Quantity of Plate, necessary to have served all the Side-boards; but the Gentlemen would not suffer any of it to be used; telling me, they had bought fine *China* Dishes and Plates for

for the whole Service; and that in such publick Places they could not be answerable for the Plate; so it was set all up in a large Glass-Cupboard in the Room I sat in, where it made a very good Show indeed.

On *Tuesday* there came such an Appearance of Gentlemen and Ladies, that my Apartments were by no means able to receive them; and those who in particular appeared as Principals, gave Order below, to let no more Company come up; the Street was full of Coaches with Coronets, and fine Glass-Chairs; and in short, it was impossible to receive the Company; I kept my little Room, as before, and the Dancers filled the great Room; all the Drawing-Rooms also were filled; and three Rooms below Stairs, which were not mine.

It was very well that there was a strong Party of the Guards brought to keep the Door, for without that there had been such a promiscuous Crowd, and some of them scandalous too, that we should have been all Disorder and Confusion; but the three Head-Servants managed all that, and had a Word to admit all the Company by.

It was uncertain to me, and is to this Day, who it was that danc'd with me the *Wednesday* before, when the Ball was my own; but that the King was at this Assembly, was out of Question with me, by Circumstances that I suppose I could not be deceived in; and particularly, that there were five Persons who were not masked, three of whom had blue Garters, and they appeared not to me till I came out to dance.

This Meeting was managed just as the first, though with much more Magnificence, because of the Company; I placed myself (exceedingly rich in Cloaths and Jewels) in the Middle of my little Room, as before, and made my Compliment to all the Company as they pass'd me, as I did before; but my Lord -----, who had spoken openly to me the first Night, came to me, and unmasking, told me the Company had ordered him to tell me, they hoped they should see me in the Dress I had appeared in the first Day, which had been so acceptable, that it had been the Occasion of this new Meeting; and Madam, says he, there are some in this Assembly, who it is worth your while to oblige.

I bow'd to my Lord -----, and immediately withdrew. While I was above, a dressing in my new Habit, two Ladies, perfectly un-

known to me, were conveyed into my Apartment below, by the Order of a Noble Person, who, with his Family, had been in *Persia*; and here indeed I thought I should have been out-done, or perhaps baulked.

One of these Ladies was dressed most exquisitely fine indeed, in the Habit of a Virgin Lady of Quality in *Georgia*, and the other in the same Habit of *Armenia*, with each of them a Woman-Slave to attend them.

The Ladies had their Petticoats short, to their Ancles, but pleated all round, and before them short Aprons, but of the finest Point that could be seen; their Gowns were made with long Antick Sleeves hanging down behind, and a Train let down; they had no Jewels; but their Heads and Breasts were dressed up with Flowers, and they both came in veil'd.

Their Slaves were bare-headed; but their long black Hair was breeded in Locks hanging down behind, to their Waites, and tied up with Ribbands; they were dressed exceeding rich, and were as beautiful as their Mistresses; for none of them had any Masks on. They waited in my Room till I came down, and all paid their Respects to me after the *Persian* Manner, and sat down on a *Saffra*, that is to say, almost cross-legged on a Couch made up of Cushions laid on the Ground.

This was admirably fine, and I was indeed startled at it; they made their Compliments to me in *French*, and I reply'd in the same Language; when the Doors were opened, they walked into the Dancing-Room, and danced such a Dance, as indeed no body there had ever seen, and to an Instrument like a Guitar, with a small low-sounding Trumpet, which indeed was very fine, and which my Lord ---- had provided.

They danced three Times all alone, for no body indeed could Dance with them. The Novelty pleased, truly; but yet there was something wild and *Bizarre* in it, because they really acted to the Life the barbarous Country they came from; but as I have had the *French* Behaviour under the *Mohometan* Dress, it was every way as new, and pleased much better indeed.

As soon as they had shewn their *Georgian* and *Armenian* Shapes, and danced, as I have said, three Times, they withdrew, paid their

Compliment to me (for I was Queen of the Day) and went off to undress.

Some Gentlemen then danced with Ladies all in Masks, and when they stopped, no body rose up to dance, but all called out *Roxana*, *Roxana*; in the Interval, my Lord ----- had brought another masked Person into my Room, who I knew not, only I could discern it was not the same Person that led me out before. This noble Person (for I afterwards understood it was the Duke of -----) after a short Compliment, led me out into the middle of the Room.

I was dressed in the same Vest and Girdle as before; but the Robe had a Mantle over it, which is usual in the *Turkish* Habit, and it was of Crimson and Green; the Green was brocaded with Gold; and my *Tybiadi*, or *Head-Dress*, varied a little from that I had before, as it stood higher, and had some Jewels about the rising Part; which made it look like a Turban crowned.

I had no Mask, neither did I Paint; and yet I had the Day of all the Ladies that appeared at the Ball; I mean, of those that appeared with Faces on; as for those masked, nothing could be said of them, no doubt there might be many finer than I was; it must be confessed, that the Habit was entirely advantageous to me, and every body looked at me with a kind of Pleasure, which gave me great Advantage too.

After I had danced with that noble Person, I did not offer to dance my myself, as I had before; but they all called out *Roxana* again; and two of the Gentlemen came into the Drawing-Room, to intreat me to give them the *Turkish* Dance, which I yielded to readily; so I came out and danced just as at first.

While I was dancing, I perceived five Persons standing all together, and among them one only with his Hat on; it was an immediate Hint to me who it was, and had at first almost put me into some Disorder; but I went on, received the Applause of the House, as before, and retired into my own Room; when I was there, the five Gentlemen came cross the Room to my Side, and coming in, followed by a Throng of great Persons, the Person with his Hat on said, *Madam Roxana, you perform to Admiration.* I was prepared, and offered to kneel to kiss his Hand, but he declined it, and saluted me, and passing back again through the great Room, went away.

I do not say here who this was, but I say, I came afterwards to know something more plainly; I would have withdrawn, and disrobed, being somewhat too thin in that Dress, unlaced, and open-breasted, as if I had been in my Shift; but it could not be, and I was obliged to dance afterwards with six or eight Gentlemen, most, if not all of them, of the first Rank; and I was told afterwards, that one of them was the Duke of *M——th*.

About two or three a Clock in the Morning, the Company began to decrease, the Number of Women especially, dropped away Home, some and some at a Time;— and the Gentlemen went down Stairs, where they unmasked, and went to Play.

Amy waited at the Room where they Play'd, sat up all Night to attend them; and in the Morning, when they broke up, they swept the Box into her Lap, when she counted out to me sixty two Guineas and a Half; and the other Servants got very well too. *Amy* came to me when they were all gone, *Law --- Madam, says Amy,* with a long gaping Cry, *What shall I do with all this Money?* And indeed, the poor Creature was half mad with Joy.

I was now in my Element; I was as much talked of as any body could desire, and I did not doubt but something or other would come of it; but the Report of my being so rich, rather was a baulk to my View than any thing else; for the Gentlemen that would, perhaps, have been troublesome enough otherwise, seemed to be kept off; for *Roxana* was too high for them.

There is a Scene which came in here, which I must cover from humane Eyes or Ears; for three Years and about a Month, *Roxana* lived retired, having been obliged to make an Excursion, in a Manner, and with a Person, which Duty, and private Vows, obliges her not to reveal, at least not yet.

At the End of this Time I appeared again; but I must add, that as I had in this Time of Retreat, made *Hay*, &c. --- so I did not come Abroad again with the same Lustre, or shine with so much Advantage as before; for as some People had got at least, a Suspicion of where I had been, and who had had me all the while, it began to be Publick, that *Roxana* was, in short, a meer *Roxana*, neither better nor worse; and not that Woman of Honour and Virtue as was at first supposed.

You

no You are now to suppose me about seven Years come to Town, and that I had not only suffered the old Revenue, which I hinted was managed by Sir Robert Clayton, to grow, as was mentioned before; but I had laid up an incredible Wealth, the Time considered; and had I yet had the least Thought of reforming, I had all the Opportunity to do it with Advantage, that ever Woman had; for the common Vice of all Whores, I mean Money, was out of the Question, nay, even Avarice itself seemed to be gluttied; for, including what I had saved in reserving the Interest of fourteen Thousand Pounds, which, as above, I had left to grow; and including some very good Presents I had made me, in meer Compliment, upon these shining masquerading Meetings, which I held up for about two Years, and what I made of three Years of the most glorious Retreat, *as I call it*, that ever Woman had, I had fully doubled my first Substance, and had near five Thousand Pounds in Money, which I kept at home; besides abundance of Plate, and Jewels, which I had either given me, or bought to set myself out for Publick Days.

In a Word, I had now five and thirty Thousand Pounds Estate; and as I found Ways to live without wasting either Principal or Interest, I laid up two Thousand Pounds every Year, at least, out of the meer Interest, adding it to the Principal; and thus I went on.

After the End of what I call my Retreat, and out of which I brought a great deal of Money, I appeared again, but I seemed like an old Piece of Plate that had been hoarded up some Years, and comes out tarnished and discoloured; so I came out blown, and looked like a *cast off Mistress*, nor indeed, was I any better; though I was not at all impaired in Beauty, except that I was a little fatter than I was formerly, and always granting that I was four Years older.

However, I preserved the Youth of my Temper; was always bright, pleasant in Company, and agreeable to every body, or else every body flattered me; and in this Condition I came Abroad to the World again; and though I was not so popular as before, and indeed did not seek it, because I knew it could not be; yet I was far from being without Company, and that of the greatest Quality, of *Subjects I mean*, who frequently visited me, and sometimes we had Meetings for Mirth, and Play, at my Apartments, where I failed not to divert them in the most agreeable Manner possible.

Nor could any of them make the least particular Application to me, from the Notion they had of my excessive Wealth, which, as they thought, plac'd me above the meanness of a Maintenance; and so left no room to come easily about me.

But at last I was very handsomely attack'd by a Person of Honour, and (which recommended him particularly to me) a Person of very great Estate; he made a long Introduction to me upon the Subject of my Wealth: Ignorant Creature! *said I to my self,* considering him as a Lord; was there ever Woman in the World that could stoop to the Baseness of being a Whore, and was above taking the Reward of her Vice! No, no, depend upon it, if your Lordship obtains any thing of me, you must pay for it; and the Notion of my being so rich, serves only to make it cost you the dearer, seeing you cannot offer a small Matter to a Woman of two thousand Pound a Year Estate.

After that he had harangu'd upon that Subject a good while, and had assur'd me he had no Design upon me; that he did not come to make a Prize of me, or to pick my Pocket; which (by the way) I was in no fear of, for I took too much Care of my Money, to part with any of that way; he then turn'd his Discourse to the Subject of Love; a Point so ridiculous to me, without the main thing, I mean the Money, that I had no Patience to hear him make so long a Story of it.

I receiv'd him civilly, and let him see I could bear to hear a wicked Proposal, without being affronted, and yet I was not to be brought into it too easily: He visited me a long while, and in short, courted me as closely and assiduously, as if he had been wooing me to Matrimony; he made me several valuable Presents, which I suffer'd my self to be prevail'd with to accept, but not without great Difficulty.

Gradually I suffer'd also his other Importunities, and when he made a Proposal of a Compliment, or Appointment to me, for a Settlement, *he said,* That tho' I was rich, yet there was not the less due from him, to acknowledge the Favours he receiv'd; and that if I was to be his, I should not live at my own Expence, *cost what it would:* I told him, I was far from being Extravagant, and yet I did not live at the Expence of less than 500 l. a Year out of my own Pocket; that however, I was not covetous

of settled Allowances, for I look'd upon that as a *Golden Chain*, something like Matrimony; that tho, I knew not how to be true to a Man of Honour, as I knew his Lordship to be, yet I had a kind of Aversion to the Bonds; and tho' I was not so rich as the World talk'd me up to be, yet I was not so poor as to bind myself to Hardships, for a Pension.

He told me, he expected to make my Life perfectly easie, and intended it so; that he knew of no Bondage there could be in a private Engagement between us; that the Bonds of Honour he knew I would be ty'd by, and think them no Burthen; and for other Obligations, he scorn'd to expect any thing from me, but what he knew, as a Woman of Honour, I could grant; then, as to Maintenance, he told me, he would soon shew me that he valued me infinitely above 500 *l.* a Year; and upon this foot we began.

I seem'd kinder to him after this Discourse; and as Time and private Conversation made us very intimate, we began to come nearer to the main Article, namely, the 500 *l.* a Year, he offer'd that at first word; and to acknowledge it as an infinite Favour to have it be accepted of; and I, that thought it was too much by all the Money, suffer'd my self to be master'd, or prevail'd with, to yield, even on but a bare Engagement upon Parole.

When he had obtain'd his End that way, I told him my Mind; Now you see, my Lord, said I, how weakly I have acted, namely, to yield to you without any Capitulation, or any thing secur'd to me, but that which may cease to allow, when you please; if I am the less valued for such a Confidence, I shall be injur'd in a manner that I will not deserve.

He told me, that he would make it evident to me, that he did not seek me by way of Bargain, as such things were often done; that as I had treated him with a generous Confidence, so I should find I was in the Hands of a Man of Honour, and one that knew how to value the Obligation; and upon this, he pull'd out a Goldsmith's Bill for 300 *l.* which, putting into my hand, he said he gaye me as a Pledge, that I should not be a Loser by my not having made a Bargain with him.

This was engaging indeed, and gaye me a good Idea of our future Correspondence; and in short, as I could not refrain treating

treating him with more Kindness than I had done before, so one thing begetting another, I gave him several Testimonies that I was entirely his own, by Inclination, as well as by the common Obligation of a Mistress; and this pleased him exceedingly.

Soon after this private Engagement, I began to consider, whether it were not more suitable to the Manner of Life I now led, to be a little less publick; and I told my Lord, it would rid me of the Importunities of others, and of continual Visits from a sort of People who he knew of, and who, by the way, having now got the Notion of me which I really deserved, began to talk of the old Game, Love and Gallantry, and to offer at what was rude enough, things as nauseous to me now, as if I had been married, and as virtuous as other People. The Visits of these People began indeed to be uneasy to me, and particularly, as they were very tedious and impertinent; nor could my Lord ----- be pleased with them at all, if they had gone on. It would be diverting to set down here, in what Manner I repulsed those sort of People; how in some I resented it as an Affront, and told them, that I was sorry they should oblige me to vindicate myself from the Scandal of such Suggestions, by telling them, that *I could see them no more*, and by desiring them not to give themselves the Trouble of visiting me, who, though I was not willing to be uncivil, yet thought myself obliged never to receive any Visit from any Gentleman, after he had made such Proposals as those to me. But these Things would be too tedious to bring in here; it was on this Account I proposed to his Lordship my taking new Lodgings for Privacy; besides I considered, that as I might live very handsomely, and yet not so publickly, so I needed not spend so much Money, by a great deal; and if I made five hundred Pounds a Year of this generous Person, it was more than I had occasion to spend, by a great deal.

My Lord came readily into this Proposal, and went farther than I expected; for he found out a Lodging for me in a very handsome House, where yet he was not known; I suppose he had employ'd somebody to find it out for him; and where he had a convenient Way to come into the Garden, by a Door that opened into the Park; a Thing very rarely allow'd in those Times.

By this Key he could always come in at what Time of Night or Day he pleased; and as we had also a little Door in the lower Part

of the House, which was always left upon a Lock, and his was the Master-Key, so if it was at twelve, one, or two a Clock at Night, he could come directly into my Bed-Chamber. *N. B.* I was not afraid I should be found a Bed with any body else, for, in a Word, I conversed with no body at all.

It happened pleasantly enough one Night; his Lordship had stay'd late, and I not expecting him that Night had taken *Amy* to Bed with me, and when my Lord came into the Chamber, we were both fast asleep, I think it was near three a Clock when he came in, and a little merry, but not at all fuddled, or what they call in Drink; and he came at once into the Room.

Amy was frighted out of her Wits, and cry'd out; I said calmly, indeed my Lord, I did not expect you to Night, and we have been a little frighted to Night with Fire. Oh! says he, I see you have got a Bedfellow with you. I began to make an Apology; No, no, says my Lord, you need no Excuse, 'tis not a Man Bedfellow, I see; but then talking merrily enough, he catched his Words back; but hark ye, says he, now I think on't, how shall I be satisfied it is not a Man Bedfellow? O, says I, I dare say your Lordship is satisfied 'tis poor *Amy*. Yes, says he, 'tis Mrs. *Amy*, but how do I know what *Amy* is? It may be Mr. *Amy* for ought I know; I hope you'll give me Leave to be satisfied. I told him, Yes, by all Means I would have his Lordship satisfied, but I supposed he knew who she was.

Well, he fell foul of poor *Amy*, and indeed, I thought once he would have carried the Jest on before my Face, as was once done in a like Case; but his Lordship was not so hot neither; but he would know whether *Amy* was Mr. *Amy*, or Mrs. *Amy*, and so I suppose he did; and then being satisfied in that doubtful Case, he walked to the farther end of the Room, and went into a little Closet, and sat down.

In the mean Time *Amy* and I got up, and I bid her run and make the Bed in another Chamber for my Lord, and I gave her Sheets to put into it, which she did immediately, and I put my Lord to Bed there; and when I had done, at his Desire, went to Bed to him. I was backward at first, to come to Bed to him, and made my Excuse, because I had been in Bed with *Amy*, and had not shifted me, but he was past those Niceties at that Time; and as long as he was sure it was Mrs. *Amy*, and not Mr. *Amy*, he was very well satisfied, and

of the Jest passed over; but *Amy* appeared no more all that Night, or the next Day, and when she did, my Lord was so merry with her upon his *Eclaircissement*, as he called it, that *Amy* did not know what to do with herself.

Not that *Amy* was such a nice Lady in the main, if she had been fairly dealt with, as has appeared in the former part of this Work; but now she was surprized, and a little hurried, that she scarce knew where she was; and besides, she was, as to his Lordship, as nice a Lady as any in the World, and for any thing he knew of her, she appeared as such; the rest was to us only that knew of it.

I held this wicked Scene of Life out eight Years, reckoning from my first coming to *England*; and though my Lord found no Fault, yet I found, without much examining, that any one who looked in my Face, might see I was above twenty Years old, and yet, without flattering myself, I carried my Age, which was above Fifty, very well too.

I may venture to say, that no Woman ever lived a Life like me, of fix and twenty Years of Wickedness, without the least Signals of Remorse; without any Signs of Repentance; or without so much as a Wish to put an End to it; I had so long habituated myself to a Life of Vice, that really it appeared to be no Vice to me; I went on smooth and pleasant; I wallowed in Wealth, and it flowed on me at such a Rate, having taken the frugal Measures that the good Knight directed; so that I had at the End of the eight Years, two thousand eight hundred Pounds coming in yearly, of which I did not spend one Penny, being maintained by my Allowance from my Lord - - - - , and more than maintained, by above 200 *l. per Annum*; for though he did not contract for 500 *l. a Year*, as I made dumb Signs to have it be, yet he gave me Money so often, and that in such large Parcels, that I had seldom so little as seven to eight hundred Pounds a Year of him.

After my coming to *England*, I was greatly desirous to hear how things stood with them; and whether they were all alive or not; and in what Manner they had been maintained; and yet I resolved not to discover myself to them in the least; or to let any of the People that had the breeding of them up, know that there was such a body left in the World, as their Mother.

Amy was the only body I could trust with such a Commission;
and

and I sent her into *Spitalfields*, to the old Aunt, and to the poor Woman, that were so instrumental in disposing the Relations to take some Care of the Children, but they were both gone, dead and buried some Years; the next Enquiry she made, was at the House where she carried the poor Children, and turned them in at the Door; when she came there she found the House inhabited by other People, so that she could make little or nothing of her Enquiries, and came back with an Answer, that indeed, was no Answer to me, for it gave me no Satisfaction at all. I sent her back to enquire in the Neighbourhood, What was become of the Family that lived in that House? And if they were removed where they lived? And what Circumstances they were in? And withal, if she could, what became of the poor Children, and how they lived, and where? How they had been treated? *and the like.*

She brought me back Word, upon this second going, that she heard as to the Family, that the Husband, who though but Uncle-in-Law to the Children, had yet been kindest to them, was dead; and that the Widow was left in mean Circumstances, that is to say, she did not want, but that she was not so well in the World as she was thought to be when her Husband was alive.

That as to the poor Children, two of them it seems, had been kept by her, that is to say by her Husband, while he lived, for that it was against her Will, that we all knew; but the honest Neighbours pity'd the poor Children, *they said*, heartily: for that their Aunt used them barbarously, and made them little better than Servants in the House, to wait upon her and her Children, and scarce allowed them Cloaths fit to wear.

These were, it seems, my Eldest and Third, which were Daughters; the Second was a Son; the Fourth a Daughter; and the Youngest a Son.

To finish the melancholy Part of this History of my two unhappy Girls, she brought me Word, that as soon as they were able to go out, and get any Work, they went from her; and some said, she had turned them out of Doors; but it seems she had not done so, but she used them so cruelly that they left her; and one of them went to Service to a Neighbour's a little Way off, who knew her, an honest substantial Weaver's Wife, to whom she was a Chamber-Maid, and in a little Time she likewise took her Sister out of the

Bride-

Bridewell of her Aunt's House, and got her a Place with an Acquaintance.

This was all melancholly and dull; I sent her then to the Weaver's House, where the Eldest had lived, but found that her Mistress being dead, she was gone, and no body knew there whither she went, only that they heard she had lived with a great Lady at the other End of the Town; but they did not know who that Lady was.

These Enquiries took us up three or four Weeks, and I was not one jot the better for it, for I could hear nothing to my Satisfaction; I sent her next to find out the honest Man, who, as in the Beginning of my Story I observed made them be entertained, and caused the Youngest to be fetched from the Town where we lived, and where the Parish-Officers had taken Care of him. This Gentleman was alive; and there she heard that my youngest Daughter and eldest Son was dead also; but that my youngest Son was alive, and was at that Time, about seventeen Years old; and that he was put out Apprentice, by the Kindness and Charity of his Uncle, but to a mean Trade, and at which he was obliged to work very hard.

Amy was so curious in this Part, that she went immediately to see him, and found him all dirty, and hard at work; she had no remembrance at all of the Youth, for she had not seen him since he was two years old; and it was evident he could have no Knowledge of her.

However, she talked with him, and found him a good sensible mannerly Youth; that he knew little of the Story of his Father or Mother, and had no View of any thing, but to work hard for his Living; and she did not think fit to put any great things into his Head, lest it should take him off of his Business, and perhaps, make him turn giddy headed, and be good for nothing; but she went and found out that kind Man his Benefactor, who had put him out; and finding him a plain well-meaning, honest, and kind hearted Man, she open'd her Tale to him the easier. She made a long Story, how she had a prodigious Kindness for the Child, because she had the same for his Father and Mother; told him, that she was the Servant Maid that brought all of them to their Aunt's Door, and run away and left them; that their poor Mother wanted Bread; and what came of her after, she would

would have been glad to know ; she added, that her Circumstances had happen'd to mend in the World ; and that, as she was in Condition, so she was dispos'd to shew some Kindness to the Children, if she could find them out.

He receiv'd her with all the Civility that so kind a Proposal demanded ; gave her an Account what he had done for the Child ; how he had maintain'd him, fed and cloath'd him ; put him to School, and at last, put him out to a Trade ; *she said*, he had indeed, been a Father to the Child ; but, Sir, *says she*, 'tis a very laborious hard working Trade, and he is but a thin weak Boy ; that's true, *says he*, but the Boy chose the Trade, and I assure you, I gave 20 l. with him, and am to find him Cloaths all his Apprenticeship ; and as to its being a hard Trade, *says he*, that's the Fate of his Circumstances, poor Boy ; I could not well do better for him.

Well, Sir, as you did all for him in Charity, *says she*, it was exceeding well ; but as my Resolution is to do something for him, I desire you will, if possible, take him away again, from that Place, where he works so hard, for I cannot bear to see the Child work so very hard for his Bread, and I will do something for him, that shall make him live without such hard Labour.

He smil'd at that ; I can, indeed, *says he*, take him away, but then I must lose 20 l. that I gave with him.

Well, Sir, said *Amy*, I'll enable you to lose that 20 l. immediately, and so she put her Hand in her Pocket, and pulls out her Purse.

He began to be a little amaz'd at her, and look'd her hard in the Face, and that so very much, that she took Notice of it, and said, Sir, I fancy, by your looking at me, you think you know me, but I am assur'd you do not, for I never saw your Face before ; I think you have done enough for the Child, and that you ought to be acknowledg'd as a Father to him, but you ought not to lose by your Kindness to him, more than the Kindness of bringing him up obliges you to ; and therefore there's the twenty Pound, *added she*, and pray let him be fetch'd away.

Well, Madam, *says he*, I will thank you for the Boy, as well as for my self ; but will you please to tell me, what I must do with him.

Sir, *says Amy*, as you have been so kind to keep him so many Years, I beg you will take him home again one Year more, and I'll bring you an hundred Pound more, which I will desire you to lay out in Schooling and Cloaths for him, and to pay you for his Board; perhaps I may put him in a Condition to return your Kindness.

He look'd pleas'd, but surpriz'd very much, and enquir'd of *Amy*, but with very great Respect, what he should go to School to learn? what Trade she would please to put him out to?

Amy said, he should put him to learn a little *Latin*, and then *Merchants Accounts*; and to write a good Hand, for she would have him be put to a *Turkey Merchant*.

Madam, *says he*, I am glad for his sake, to hear you talk so; but do you know that a *Turkey Merchant* will not take him under 4 or 5000 Pounds?

Yes, Sir, *says Amy*, I know that very well.

And, *says he*, that it will require aa many Thousands to set him up?

Yes, Sir, *says Amy*, I know that very well too; and resolving to talk very big, she added, I have no Children of my own, and I resolve to make him my Heir; and if ten Thousand Pounds be requir'd to set him up, he shall not want it; I was but his Mother's Servant when he was born, and I mourn'd heartily for the Disaster of his Family; I always said, if ever I was worth any thing in the World, I would take the Child for my own, and I'll be as good as my Word now, tho' I did not then foresee that it would be with me, as it has been since: And so *Amy* told him a long Story how she was troubled for me; and what she would give to hear whether I was dead or alive, and what Circumstances I was in; that if she could but find me, If I was ever so poor, she would take Care of me, and make a Gentlewoman of me again.

He told her, that as to the Child's Mother, she had been reduc'd to the last Extremity, and was oblig'd (at he suppos'd she knew) to send the Children all among her Husband's Friends; and if it had not been for him, they had all been sent to the Parish; but that he oblig'd the other Relations to share in the Charge among them; that he had taken two, whereof he had lost the Eldest, who died

died of the Small-Pox; but that he had been careful of this, as of his own, and had made very little Difference in their breeding up; only that when he came to put him out, he thought it was best for the Boy, to put him to a Trade which he might set up in without a Stock; for otherwise his Time would be lost; and that as to his Mother, he had never been able to hear one Word of her, no, nor though he had made the utmost Enquiry after her; that there was a Report, that she had drowned herself; but added, that he could never meet with any body that could give him a certain Account of it.

Amy counterfeited a Cry for her poor Mistress; told him, she should give any thing in the World to see her, if she was alive; and a great deal more such-like Talk they had about that; then they returned to speak of the Boy.

He enquired of her, why she did not seek after the Child before, that he might have been brought up from a younger Age, suitable to what she designed to do for him.

She told him, she had been out of *England*, and was but newly returned from the *East-Indies*; that she had been out of *England*, and was but newly returned, was true; but the latter was false, and was put in to blind him, and provide against farther Enquiries; for it was not a strange thing for young Women to go away poor to the *East-Indies*, and come home vastly Rich; so she went on with Directions about him; and both agreed in this, that the Boy should by no means be told what was intended for him, but only that he should be taken home again to his Uncle's; that his Uncle thought the Trade too hard for him, *and the like*.

About three Days after this, *Amy* goes again, and carried him the Hundred Pounds she promised him, but then *Amy* made quite another Figure than she did before; for she went in my Coach, with two Footmen after her, and dressed very fine also, with Jewels and a Gold Watch; and there was indeed no great Difficulty to make *Amy* look like a Lady, for she was a very handsome well-shaped Woman, and genteel enough; the Coachman and Servants were particularly ordered to show her the same Respect as they would to me, and to call her Madam *Collins*, if they were asked any Questions about her.

When the Gentleman saw what a Figure she made, it added to the

the former Surprise, and he entertained her in the most respectful Manner possible; congratulated her Advancement in Fortune, and particularly rejoiced that it should fall to the poor Child's Lot to be so providad for, contrary to all Expectation.

Well, *Amy* talked big, but very free and familiar; told them she had no Pride in her good Fortune (and that was true enough, for to give *Amy* her due, she was far from it, and was as good-humour'd a Creature as ever lived) that she was the same as ever, and that she always loved this Boy, and was resolved to do something extraordinary for him.

Then she pulled out her Money, and paid him down an Hundred and twenty Pounds, which, she said, she paid him, that he might be sure he should be no Loser by taking him home again, and that she would come and see him again, and talk farther about things with him, that so all might be settled for him, in such a Manner, as the Accidents, such as Mortality, or any thing else, should make no Alteration to the Child's Prejudice.

At this Meeting the Uncle brought his Wife out, a good motherly, comely, grave Woman, who spoke very tenderly of the Youth, and as it appeared, had been very good to him, though she had several Children of her own. After a long Discourse, she put in a Word of her own; Madam, *says she*, I am heartily glad of the good Intentions you have for this poor Orphan, and I rejoice sincerely in it, for his Sake; but Madam, you know (I suppose) that there are two Sisters alive too, may we not speak a Word for them? Poor Girls, *says she*, they havn not been so kindly used as he has; and are turned into the wide World.

Where are they, Madam? *says Amy*.

Poor Creatures, *says the Gentlewoman*, they are out at Service; no body knows where but themselves; their Case is very hard.

Well, Madam, *says Amy*, though, if I could find them, I would assist them; yet my Concern is for my Boy, *as I call him*, and I will put him into a Condition to take Care of his Sisters.

But Madam, *says the good compassionate Creature*, he may not be so charitable perhaps, by his own Inclination, for Brothers are not Fathers; and they have been cruelly used already, poor Girls; we have often relieved them, both with Victuals and Cloaths too, even while they were pretended to be kept by their barbarous Aunt.

Well,

Well, Madam, *says Amy*, What can I do for them; they are gone, it seems, and cannot be heard of? When I see them, 'tis time enough.

She pressed *Amy* then, to oblige their Brother, out of the plentiful Fortune he was like to have, to do something for his Sisters, when he should be able.

Amy spoke coldly of that still, but said, she would consider of it; and so they parted for that Time; they had several Meetings after this, for *Amy* went to see her adopted Son, and ordered his Schooling, Cloaths, and other Things, but enjoined them not to tell the young Man any thing, but that they thought the Trade he was at too hard for him, and they would keep him at home a little longer, and give him some Schooling, to fit him for better Business; and *Amy* appeared to him as she did before, only as one that had known his Mother, and had some Kindness for him.

Thus this Matter passed on for near a Twelvemonth, when it happened, that one of my Maid-Servants having asked *Amy* Leave, for she was Mistress of the Servants, and took and put out such as she pleased; I say, having asked Leave to go into the City to see her Friends, came Home crying bitterly, and in a most grievous Agony she was, and continued so several Days, till *Amy* perceiving the Excess, and that the Maid would certainly cry herself Sick; she took an Opportunity with her, and examined her about it.

The Maid told her a long Story, that she had been to see her Brother, the only Brother she had in the World; and that she knew he was put out Apprentice to a -----; but there had come a Lady in a Coach, to his Uncle -----, who had brought him up, and made him take him Home again; and so the Wench run on with the whole Story, just as 'tis told above, till she came to that Part that belonged to herself; and there, *says she*, I had not let them know where I lived; and the Lady would have taken me, and they say would have provided for me too, as she has done for my Brother, but no body could tell where to find me, and so I have lost it all, and all the Hopes of being any thing but a poor Servant all my Days; and then the Girl fell a crying again.

Amy said, What's all this Story? Who could this Lady be? It must be some Trick sure? No, *she said*, it was not a Trick, for she had made them take her Brother home from Apprentice, and bought

him new Cloathes, and put him to have more Learning; and the Gentlewoman said she would make him her Heir.

Her Heir! *says Amy*; What does that amount to? It may be she had nothing to leave him; she might make any body her Heir.

No, no, *says the Girl*, she came in a fine Coach and Horses, and I don't know how many Footmen to attend her, and brought a great Bag of Gold, and gave it to my Uncle ———, he that brought up my Brother, to buy him Cloaths, and to pay for his Schooling and Board.

He that brought up your Brother? *says Amy*; Why, did not he bring you up too, as well as your Brother? Pray who brought you up then?

Here the poor Girl told a melancholy Story, how an Aunt had brought up her and her Sister, and how barbarously she had used them, as we have heard.

By this Time *Amy* had her Head full enough, and her Heart too; and did not know how to hold it, or what to do, for she was satisfied that this was no other than my own Daughter; for she told her all the History of her Father and Mother, and how she was carried by their Maid, to her Aunt's Door, just as is related in the Beginning of my Story.

Amy did not tell me this Story for a great while; nor did she well know what Course to take in it; but as she had Authority to manage every thing in the Family, she took Occasion some Time after, without letting me know any thing of it, to find some Fault with the Maid, and turn her away.

Her Reasons were good, though at first I was not pleased when I heard of it, but I was convinced afterwards, that she was in the right; for if she had told me of it, I should have been in great Perplexity between the Difficulty of concealing myself from my own Child, and the Inconvenience of having my Way of Living be known among my first Husband's Relations, and even to my Husband himself; for as to his being dead at *Paris*, *Amy* seeing me resolved against marrying any more, had told me, that she had formed that Story only to make me easy, when I was in *Holland*, if any thing should offer to my liking.

However, I was too tender a Mother still, notwithstanding what I had done, to let this poor Girl go about the World drudging, as

it were, for Bread and flaving at the Fire, and in the Kitchen, as a Cook-Maid; besides it came into my Head, that she might, perhaps, marry some poor Devil of a Footman, or a Coachman, or some such thing, and be undone that Way; or which was worse, be drawn in to lie with some of that course cursed Kind, and be with Child, and be utterly ruined that Way; and in the midst of all my Prosperity, this gave me great Uneasiness.

As to sending *Amy* to her, there was no doing that now; for as she had been Servant in the House, we knew *Amy*, as well as *Amy* knew me; and no doubt, though I was much out of her Sight, yet she might have had the Curiosity to have peeped at me, and seen me enough to know me again, if I had discovered myself to her; so that in short, there was nothing to be done that Way.

However, *Amy*, a diligent indefatigable Creature, found out another Woman, and gave her her Errand, and sent her to the honest Man's House in *Spittle-Fields*, whither she supposed the Girl would go, after she was out of her Place; and bade her talk with her, and tell her at a Distance, that as something had been done for her Brother, so something would be done for her too; and that she should not be discouraged, she carried her twenty Pounds, to buy her Cloaths, and bid her not go to Service any more, but think of other things; that she should take a Lodging in some good Family, and that she should soon hear farther.

The Girl was overjoyed with this News, you may be sure, and at first a little too much elevated with it, and dressed herself very handsomely indeed, and as soon as she had done so, came and paid a Visit to Madam *Amy*, to let her see how fine she was. *Amy* congratulated her, and wished it might be all as she expected; but admonished her not to be elevated with it too much; and told her, Humility was the best Ornament of a Gentlewoman; and a great deal of good Advice she gave her, but discovered nothing.

All this was acted in the first Year of my setting up my new Figure here in Town, and while the Masks and Balls were in Agitation; and *Amy* carried on the Affair of setting out my Son into the World, which we were assisted in by the sage Advice of my faithful Counsellor, Sir Robert Clayton, who procured us a Master for him, by whom he was afterwards sent Abroad to Italy, as you shall

shall hear in its Place; and *Amy* managed my Daughter too, very well, though by a third Hand.

My Amour with my Lord ~~---~~ began now to draw to an end, and indeed, notwithstanding his Money, it had lasted so long, that I was much more sick of his Lordship, than he could be of me; he grew old, and fretful, and capricious; and I must add, which made the Vice itself begin to grow surfeiting and nauseous to me, he grew worse and wickeder the older he grew, and that to such Degree, as is not fit to write of; and made me so weary of him, that upon one of his capricious Humours, which he often took Occasion to trouble me with, I took Occasion to be much less complaisant to him, than I used to be; and as I knew him to be hasty, I first took care to put him into a little Passion, and then to resent it, and this brought us to Words, in which I told him, I thought he grew sick of me; and he answered in a Heat, that *truly so he was*. I answered, that I found his Lordship was endeavouring to make me sick too; that I had met with several such Rubs from him of late; and that he did not use me as he used to do; and I begged his Lordship, he would make himself easy. This I spoke with an Air of Coldness and Indifference, such as I knew he could not bear; but I did not downright Quarrel with him, and tell him *I was sick of him too*, and desire him to quit me, for I knew that would come of itself; besides, I had received a great deal of handsome Usage from him, and I was loth to have the Breach be on my Side, that he might not be able to say I was ungrateful.

But he put the Occasion into my Hands, for he came no more to me for two Months; indeed I expected a Fit of Absence, for such I had had several Times before, but not for above a Fortnight or three Weeks at most. But after I had staid a Month, which was longer than ever he kept away yet, I took a new Method with him, for I was resolved now it should be in my Power to continue, or not, as I thought fit; at the End of a Month therefore, I removed, and took Lodgings at *Kensington Gravel-Pits*, and that Part next to the Road to *Acton*, and left no body in my Lodgings but *Amy* and a Footman, with proper Instructions how to behave, when his Lordship come to himself, should think fit to come again, which I knew he would.

About

About the End of the Month, he came in the Dusk of the Evening, as usual; the Footman answered him, and told him, his Lady was not at Home, but there was Mrs. Amy above; so he did not order her to be called down, but went up Stairs into the Dining-Room, and Mrs. Amy came to him; he asked Where I was? My Lord, said she, my Mistress has been removed a good while from hence, and lives at *Kensington*. Ah, Mrs. Amy! How come you to be here then? My Lord, said she, we are here till the Quarter-Day, because the Goods are not removed, and to give Answers, if any comes to ask for my Lady. Well, and what Answer are you to give to me? Indeed, my Lord, says Amy, I have no particular Answer to your Lordship, but to tell you, and every body else, where my Lady lives, that they may not think she's run away! No Mrs. Amy, says he, I don't think she's run away, but indeed, I cannot go after her so far as that. Amy said nothing to that, but made a Curtsy, and said, she believed I would be there again for a Week or two, in a little Time. How little Time, Mrs. Amy! says my Lord. She comes next *Tuesday*, says Amy. Very well, says my Lord, I'll call and see her then; and so he went away.

Accordingly I came on *Tuesday*, and staid a Fortnight, but he came not; so I went back to *Kensington*, and after that I had very few of his Lordship's Visits, which I was very glad of, and in a little Time after was more glad of it, than I was at first, and upon a far better Account.

For now I began not to be sick of his Lordship only, but really I began to be sick of the Vice; and as I had good Leisure now to divert and enjoy myself in the World, as much as it was possible for any Woman to do, I had ever since in my mind, found that my Judgment began to prevail upon me to fix my Delight upon nobler Objects than I had formerly done; and the very beginning of this brought some just Reflections upon me, relating to Things past, and to the former Manner of my living; and though there was not the least Hint in all this from what may be called Religion or Conscience, and far from any thing of Repentance, or any thing that was a kin to it, especially at first; yet the Sense of Things, and the Knowledge I had of the World, and the Variety of Scenes that I had acted my Part in, began to work upon my Senses, and it came so very strong upon my Mind one Morning, when I had been lying awake

Some Time in my Bed, as if somebody had asked me the Question, *What ails this Whore for now?* It occurred naturally upon this Enquiry, that at first I yielded to the importunity of my Circumstances, the Misery of which, the Devil diabolically aggravated, to draw me to comply; for I confess, I had strong Natural Aversions to the Crime at first, partly owing to a virtuous Education, and partly to a Sense of Religion; but the Devil, and that greater Devil of Poverty, prevailed; and the Person who laid Siege to me, did it in such an obliging, and I may almost say, irresistible Manner, all still managed by the Evil Spirit; for I must be allowed to believe, that he has a Share in all such Things; (if not the whole Management of them. But, I say, it was carried on by that Person, in such an irresistible Manner, that (as I said when I related the Fact) there was no withstanding it. These Circumstances, I say, the Devil managed, not only to bring me to comply, but he continued them as Arguments to fortify my Mind against all Reflection, and to keep me in that horrid Course I had engaged in, as if it were honest and lawful. How very well.

But not to dwell upon that now; this was a Pretence, and here was something to be said, though I acknowledge it ought not to have been sufficient to me at all; but, I say, to leave that, all this was out of Doors; the Devil himself could not form one Argument, or put one Reason into any Head now, that could serve for an Answer; no, not so much as a pretended Answer to this Question, *Why I should be a Whore now?*

It had for a while been a kind of Excuse to me, that I was engaged with this wicked old Lord, and that I could not, in Honour, forsake him; but How foolish and absurd did it look, to repeat the Word Honour on so vile an Occasion? As if a Woman should prostitute her Honour in point of Honour; horrid Inconsistency; Honour called upon me to detest the Crime and the Man too; and to have resisted all the Attacks which from the Beginning had been made upon my Virtue; and Honour, had it been consulted, I would have preserved me honest from the Beginning.

For HONESTY and HONOUR, are the same.

This, however, shews us with what faint Excuses, and with what

Trifles we pretend to satisfy ourselves, and suppress the Attempts of Conscience in the Pursuit of agreeable Crimes, and in the possessing those Pleasures which we are loth to part with.

But this Objection would now serve no longer; for my Lord had, in some sort, broke his Engagements (*I won't call it Honour again*) with me, and had so far slighted me, as fairly to justify my quitting of him now; and so, as the Objection was fully answered, the Question remained still unanswered, *Why am I a Whore now?* Nor indeed, had I any thing to say for myself, even to myself; I could not without blushing as wicked as I was, answer, that I loved it for the sake of the Vice, and that I delighted in being a Whore, *as such*; I say, I could not say this, even to myself, *and all alone*, nor indeed, would it have been true; I was never able in Justice, and with Truth, to say I was so wicked as that; but as Necessity first debauched me, and Poverty made me a Whore at the Beginning; so excess of Avarice for getting Money, and excess of Vanity, continued me in the Crime, not being able to resist the Flatteries of great Persons; being called the finest Woman in *France*; being caressed by a Prince; and afterwards I had Pride enough to expect, and Folly enough to believe, though indeed without Ground, by a great Monarch. These were my Baits, these the Chains by which the Devil held me bound; and by which I was indeed too fast held, for my Reasoning, that I was then Mistress of, to deliver me from.

But this was all over now; Avarice could have no Pretence; I was out of the Reach of all that Fate could be supposed to do to reduce me; now I was so far from Poor, or the Danger of it, that I had fifty thousand Pounds in my Pocket at least; nay, I had the Income of fifty Thousand Pounds; for I had two Thousand five Hundred Pounds a Year coming in, upon very good Land-Security, besides three or four Thousand Pounds in Money, which I kept by me for ordinary Occasions, and besides Jewels and Plate, and Goods, which were worth near five Thousand six Hundred Pounds more; these put together, when I ruminated on it all in my Thoughts, as you may be sure I did often, added Weight still to the Question, as above, and it sounded continually in my Head, *What's next? What am I am I a Whore for now?*

It is true, this was, as I say, seldom out of my Thoughts, but yet it made to Impressions upon me of that Kind which might be expected

ed from a Reflection of so important a Nature, and which had so much of Substance and Seriousness in it.

But however, it was not without some little Consequences, even at that Time, and which gave a little Turn to my Way of Living at first, as you shall hear in its Place.

But one particular Thing intervened besides this, which gave me some Uneasiness at this Time, and made Way for other Things that followed. I have mentioned in several little Digressions, the Concern I had upon me for my Children, and in what Manner I had directed that Affair; I must go on a little with that Part, in order to bring the subsequent Parts of my Story together.

My Boy, the only Son I had left, that I had a legal Right to call Son, was, *as I have said*, rescued from the unhappy Circumstances of being Apprentice to a Mechanick, and was brought up upon a new Foot; but though this was infinitely to his Advantage, yet it put him back near three Years in his coming into the World, for he had been near a Year at the Drudgery he was first put to, and it took up two Years more to form him for what he had Hopes given him he should hereafter be, so that he was full nineteen Years old, or rather twenty Years, before he came to be put out as I intended; at the end of which Time, I put him to a very flourishing *Italian Merchant*, and he again sent him to *Messina*, in the Island of *Sicily*; and a little before the Juncture I am now speaking of. I had Letters from him, intimating, that he was out of his Time, and that he had an Opportunity to be taken into an *English House* there, on very good Terms, if his Support from hence might answer what he was bid to hope for; and so begged, that what would be done for him, might be so ordered, that he might have it for his present Advancement, referring for Particulars to his Master, the Merchant in *London*, who he had been put Apprentice to here; who, to cut the Story short, gave such a satisfactory Account of it, and of my young Man, to my steady and faithful Counsellor, *Sir Robert Clayton*, that I made no Scruple to pay four Thousand Pounds, which was one Thousand Pounds more than he demanded, or rather proposed, that he might have Encouragement to enter into the World better than he expected.

His Master remitted the Money very faithfully to him, and finding by *Sir Robert Clayton*, that the young Gentleman, for so he called

called him, was well supported, wrote such Letters on his Account, as gave him a Credit at *Messina*, equal in Value to the Money itself.

I could not digest it very well, that I should all this while conceal myself thus from my own Child, and make all this due, in his Opinion, to a Stranger; and yet I could not find in my Heart to let my Son know what a Mother he had, and what a Life she lived; when at the same Time that he must think himself infinitely obliged to me, he must be obliged, if he was a Man of Virtue, to hate his Mother, and abhor the the Way of Living, by which all the Bounty he enjoyed was raised,

This is the Reason of mentioning this Part of my Son's Story, which is otherwise no ways concerned in my History, but as it put me upon thinking how to put an End to that wicked Course I was in, that my own Child, when he should afterwards come to *England* in a good Figure, and with the Appearance of a Merchant, should not be ashamed to own me.

But there was another Difficulty, which lay heavier upon me a great deal, and that was my Daughter; who, as before, I had relieved by the Hands of another Instrument, which *Amy* had procured. The Girl, as I have mentioned, was directed to put herself into a good Garb, take Lodgings, and entertain a Maid to wait upon her, and to give herself some Breeding, that is to say, to learn to Dance, and fit herself to appear as a Gentlewoman; being made to hope, that she should, some Time or other, find that she should be put into a Condition to support her Character, and to make herself amends for all her former Troubles; she was only charged not to be drawn into Matrimony, till she was secured of a Fortune that might assist to dispose of herself suitable not to what she then was, but what she was to be.

The Girl was too sensible of her Circumstances, not to give all possible Satisfaction of the Kind, and indeed she was Mistress of too much Understanding, not to see how much she should be obliged to that Part, for her own Interest.

It was not long after this, but being well equipped, and in every thing well set out, as she was directed, she came, as I have related above, and paid a Visit to Mrs. *Amy*, and to tell her of her good Fortune. *Amy* pretended to be much surprized at the Alteration,

and overjoyed for her Sake, and began to treat her very well, entertained her handsomely, and when she would have gone away, pretended to ask my leave, and sent my Coach home with her; and in short, learning from her where she lodged, which was in the City, *Amy* promised to return her Visit, and did so; and in a Word, *Amy* and *Susan* (for she was my own Name) began an intimate Acquaintance together.

There was an inexpressible Difficulty in the poor Girl's Way; or else I should not have been able to have forbore discovering myself to her, and this was, her having been a Servant in my particular Family; and I cou'd by no means think of ever letting the Children know what a kind of Creature they ow'd their Being to, or giving them any Occasion to upbraid their Mother with her scandalous Life, much less to justify the like Practice from my Example.

Thus it was with me; and thus, no doubt, considering Parents always find it, that their own Children are a Restraint to them in their worst Courses, when the Sense of a Superior Power has not the same Influence. *But of that hereafter.*

There happened however one good Circumstance in the Case of this poor Girl, which brought about a Discovery sooner than otherwise it would have been; and it was thus: After she and *Amy* had been intimate for some Time, and had exchanged several Visits, the Girl now grown a Woman, talking to *Amy* of the gay Things that used to fall out when she was Servant in my Family, spoke of it with a kind of Concern, that she could not see [me] her Lady; and at last she adds, 'twas very strange: Madam, says she to *Amy*, but though I lived near two Years in the House, I never saw my Mistress in my Life, except it was that publick Night when she danced in the fine *Turkish* Habit, and then she was so disguised, that I knew nothing of her afterwards.

Amy was glad to hear this; but as she was a cunning Girl from the Beginning, she was not to be Bit, and so she laid no Stress upon that, at first, but gave me an Account of it; and, I must confess, it gave me a secret Joy, to think that I was not known to her; and that, by virtue of that only Accident, I might, when other Circumstances made room for it, discover myself to her, and let her know she had a Mother in a Condition fit to be owned.

It was a dreadful Restraint to me before, and this gave me some very

very sad Reflections, and made Way for the great Question I have mentioned above; and by how much the Circumstance was bitter to me, by so much the more agreeable it was, to understand that the Girl had never seen me, and consequently, did not know me again, if she was to be told who I was.

However, the next Time she came to visit *Amy*, I was resolved to put it to a Trial, and to come into the Room, and let her see me, and to see by that, whether she knew me or no; but *Amy* put me by, lest indeed, as there was Reason enough to question, I should not be able to contain, or forbear discovering myself to her; so it went off for that Time.

But both these Circumstances, and that is the Reason of mentioning them, brought me to consider the Life I lived, and to resolve to put myself into some Figure of Life, in which I might not be scandalous to my own Family, and be afraid to make myself known to my own Children, who were my own Flesh and Blood.

There was another Daughter I had, which, with all our Enquiries we could not hear of, high nor low, for several Years after the first: But I return to my own Story.

Being now in Part removed from my old Station, I seemed to be in a fair Way of retiring from my old Acquaintances, and consequently from the vile abominable Trade I had driven so long; so that the Door seemed to be, as it were, particularly opened to my Reformation, if I had any mind to it in earnest; but for all that, some of my old Friends, as I had used to call them, enquired me out, and came to visit me at *Kenington*, and that more frequently than I wished they would do; but it being once known where I was, there was no avoiding it, unless I would have downright refused and affronted them; and I was not yet in Earnest enough with my Resolutions, to go that Length.

The best of it was, my old lewd Favourite, who I now heartily hated, entirely dropped me; he came once to visit me, but I caused *Amy* to depy me, and say I was gone out; she did it so oddly too, that when his Lordship went away, he said coldly to her, Well, well, Mrs. *Amy*, I find your Mistress does not desire to be seen; tell her I won't trouble her *any more*, repeating the Words *any more*, two or three times over, just at his going away.

I reflected a little on it at first, as unkind to him, having had so many.

many considerable Presents from him; but, *as I have said*, I was sick of him, and that on some Accounts, which, if I could suffer myself to publish them, would fully justify my Conduct; but that Part of the Story will not bear telling; so I must leave it, and proceed.

I had begun a little, *as I have said above*, to reflect upon my Manner of Living, and to think of putting a new Face upon it; and nothing moved me to it more, than the Consideration of my having three Children, who were now grown up; and yet, that while I was in that Station of Life, I could not converse with them, or make myself known to them; and this gave me a great deal of Uneasiness; at last I entered into Talk on this Part of it, with my Woman *Amy*.

We lived at *Kensington*, *as I have said*, and though I had done with my old wicked L----- as above; yet I was frequently visited, *as I said*, by some others, so that, in a Word, I began to be known in the Town, not by my Name only, but by my Character too, which was worse.

It was one Morning when *Amy* was in-bed with me, and I had some of my dullest Thoughts about me, that *Amy* hearing me sigh pretty often, asked me if I was not well? Yes, *Amy*, I am well enough, *says I*, but my Mind is oppressed with heavy Thoughts, and has been so a good-while; and then I told her how it grieved me that I could not make myself known to my own Children, or form any Acquaintances in the World. 'Why so?' *says Amy*. 'Why prethee, *Amy*, *says I*, what will my Children say to themselves, and to one another, when they find their Mother, however rich she may be, is at best but a Whore, a common Whore? And as for Acquaintance, prethee *Amy*, what sober Lady, or what Family of any Character will visit or be acquainted with a Whore?'

'Why all that's true, Madam, *says Amy*; but how can it be remedy'd now? 'Tis true *Amy*, *said he*, the Thing cannot be remedy'd now, but the Scandal of it, I fancy, may be thrown off.

'Truly, *says Amy*, I do not see how, unless you will go Abroad again, and live in some other Nation, where no body has known us, or seen us, so that they cannot say they ever saw us before.

That very Thought of *Amy* put what follows into my Head; 'Why *Amy*, *says I*, is it not possible for me to shift my Being from this Part of the Town, and go and live in another Part of the City,

or

or another Part of the Country, and be as entirely concealed as if I had never been known.

Yes, says *Amy*, I believe it might; but then you must put off all your Equipages and Servants, Coaches and Horses; change your Liveries, nay, your own Cloaths, and if it was possible, your very Face.

Well, says *I*, and that's the Way *my*, and that I'll do, and that forthwith; for I am not able to live in this Manner any longer. *Amy* came into this with a kind of Pleasure particular to herself, that is to say, with an Eagerness not to be resisted; for *Amy* was precipitant in her Motions, and was for doing it immediately. Well, says *I*, *Amy*, as soon as you will, but What Course must we take to do it? We cannot put off Servants, and Coach and Horses, and every thing; leave off Housekeeping, and transform ourselves into a new Shape, all in a Moment; Servants must have Warning, and the Goods must be sold off, and a Thousand things; and this began to perplex us, and in particular took us up two or three Days Consideration.

At last *Amy*, who was a clever Manager in such Cases, came to me with a Scheme, as she called it; I have found it out Madam, says she; I have found a Scheme how you shall, if you have a mind to it, begin and finish a perfect entire Change of your Figure and Circumstances in one Day; and shall be as much unknown, Madam, in twenty-four Hours, as you would be in so many Years.

Come *Amy*, says *I*, let us hear it, for you please me mightily with the Thoughts of it. Why then, says *Amy*, let me go into the City this Afternoon, and I'll enquire out some honest, plain, sober Family, where I will take Lodgings for you, as for a Country Gentlewoman that desires to be in *London* for about half a Year, and to Board yourself and a Kinswoman, that is half a Servant, half a Companion, meaning myself; and so agree with them by the Month.

To this Lodging (if I hit upon one to your Mind) you may go to Morrow Morning, in a Hackney Coach, with nobody but me, and leave such Cloaths and Linnen as you think fit; but to be sure, the plainest you have, and then you are removed at once, you need never so much as set your Foot in this House again (meaning where we then were) or see anybody belonging to it; in the mean Time I'll let the Servants know, that you are going over to *Holland* upon

extraordinary Business, and will leave off your Equipages, and so I'll give them Warning, or, if they will accept of it, a Month's Wages; then I'll sell off your Furniture as well as I can; as for the Coach, it is but having it new painted, and the Lining changed, and getting new Harness and Hammer-cloths, and you may keep it still, or dispose of it as you think fit; and only take care to let this Lodging be in some remote Part of the Town, and you may be as perfectly unknown, as if you had never been in *England* in your Life.

This was *Amy's* Scheme; and it pleased me so well, that I resolved not only to let her go, but was resolved to go with her myself; but *Amy* put me off of that, because, *she said*, she should have Occasion to hurry up and down so long, that if I was with her, it would rather hinder than farther her; so I waved it.

In a Word, *Amy* went, and was gone five long Hours; but when she came back, I could see by her Countenance, that her Success had been suitable to her Pains; for she came laughing and gaping, O Madam! *says she*, I have pleased you to the Life; and with that she tells me how she had fixed upon a House in a Court in the *Minories*; that she was directed to it merely by Accident; that it was a Female Family, that the Man of the House being gone to *New-England*; and that the Woman had four Children; kept two Maids, and lived very handsomely; but wanted Company to divert her; and that on that very Account, she had agreed to take Boarders.

Amy agreed for a good handsome Price, because she was resolved I should be used well; so she bargained to give her thirty five Pounds for the Half-Year, and fifty Pounds if we took a Maid, leaving that to my choice; and that we might be satisfied we should meet with nothing very gay; the People were *Quakers*, and I liked them the better.

I was so pleased, that I was resolved to go with *Amy* the next Day to see the Lodgings, and to see the Woman of the House, and see how I liked them; but if I was pleased with the General, I was much more pleased with the Particulars; for the Gentlewoman, I must call her so, though she was a *Quaker*, was a most courteous, obliging, mannerly Person; perfectly well-bred and perfectly well-humoured; and in short, the most agreeable Conversation that ever I met with; and which was worth all, so grave, and yet so pleasant and so merry, that 'tis scarce possible for me to express how I was pleased

peased and delighted with her Company; and particularly, I was so pleased, that I would go away no more; so I e'en took up my Lodging there the very first Night.

In the mean Time, though it took up *Amy* almost a Month to put off all the Appearances of House-keeping as above; it need take me up no Time to relate it; 'tis enough to say, that *Amy* quitted all that Part of the World, and came Pack and Package to me, and here we took up our Abode.

I was now in a perfect Retreat indeed; remote from the Eyes of all that ever had seen me, and as much out of the Way of being ever seen or heard of by any of the Gang that used to follow me, as if I had been on the Mountains in *Lancashire*; for when did a Blue Garter, or a Coach and Six come into a little narrow Passage in the *Moor*, or *Goodman's-Fields*? And as there was no Fear of them, so really I had no Desire to see them, or so much as to hear from them any more, as long as I lived.

I seemed in a little Hurry while *Amy* came and went so every Day, at first; but when that was over, I lived here perfectly retired, and with a most perfect and agreeable Lady; I must call her so, for though a *Quaker*, she had a full Share of good Breeding, sufficient to her, if she had been a Dutchess; in a Word, she was the most agreeable Creature in her Conversation, as I said before, that ever I met with.

I pretended, after I had been there some Time, to be extremely in love with the Dress of the *Quakers*, and this pleased her so much, that she would needs dress me up one Day in a Suit of her own Cloaths; but my real Design was, to see whether it would pass upon me for a Disguise.

Amy was struck with the Novelty, though I had not mentioned my Design to her; and when the *Quaker* was gone out of the Room, says *Amy*, I guess your Meaning; it is a pretty Disguise to you; why you look quite another body, I should not have known you myself; nay, says *Amy*, more than that, it makes you look ten Years younger than you did.

Nothing could please me better than that; and when *Amy* repeated it, I was so fond of it, that I asked my *Quaker* (I won't call her Landlady, 'tis indeed too coarse a Word for her, and she deserved a much better) I say, I asked her if she would sell it; I told her, I

was

was so fond of it, that I would give her enough to buy her a better Suit; she declined it at first, but I soon perceived that it was chiefly in good Manners, because I should not dishonour myself, as she called it, to put on her old Cloaths; but if I pleased to accept of them, she would give me them for my dressing Cloaths, and go with me, and buy a Suit for me, that might be better worth my wearing.

But as I conversed in a very frank open Manner with her, I bid her do the like with me; that I made no scruple of such things; but that if she would let me have them, I would satisfy her; so she let me know what they cost, and to make her amends, I gave her three Guineas more than they cost her.

This good, though unhappy *Quaker*, had the Misfortune to have had a bad Husband; and he was gone beyond Sea; she had a good House, and well furnished, and had some Jointure of her own Estate, which supported her and her Children, so that she did not want; but she was not at all above such a Help, as my being there was to her; so she was as glad of me as I was of her.

However, as I knew there was no Way to fix this new Acquaintance, like making myself a Friend to her, I began with making her some handsome Presents, and the like to her Children; and first, opening my Bundles one Day in my Chamber, I heard her in another Room, and called her in, with a kind of familiar way; there I showed her some of my fine Cloaths, and having among the rest of my things, a Piece of very fine new Holland, which I had bought a little before, worth about nine Shillings an Ell, I pulled it out, *Here, my Friend, says I, I will make you a Present, if you will accept of it; and with that I laid the Piece of Holland in her Lap.*

I could see she was surprized, and that she could hardly speak; *What dost thou mean?* says she; *indeed I cannot have the Face to accept so fine a Present as this;* adding, *'Tis fit for thy own Use, but 'tis above my Wear indeed.* I thought she had meant she must not wear it so fine, because she was a *Quaker*; so I returned, *Why, do not you Quakers wear fine Linnen neither?* Yes, *says she,* we wear fine Linnen when we can afford it, but this is too good for me.

However, I made her take it, and she was very thankful too; but my End was answered another Way; for by this I engaged her so, that as I found her a Woman of Understanding, and of Ho-

nesty

nelly too, I might, upon any Occasion, have a confidence in her, which was indeed what I very much wanted.

By accustoming myself to converse with her, I had not only learned to dress like a *Quaker*, but so used myself to *Thee* and *Thou*, that I talked like a *Quaker* too, as readily and naturally as if I had been born among them; and, in a Word, I passed for a *Quaker* among all People that did not know me; I went but little Abroad, but I had been so used to a Coach, that I knew not how well to go without one; besides, I thought it would be a farther Disguise to me; so I told my *Quaker-Friend* one Day, that I thought I lived too close; that I wanted Air; she proposed taking a Hackney-coach sometimes, or a Boat; but I told her, I had always had a Coach of my own till now, and I could find in my Heart to have one again.

She seemed to think it strange at first, considering how close I lived; but had nothing to say when she found I did not value the Expence; so in short I resolved to have a Coach. When we came to talk of Equipages; she extolled the having all things plain; I said so too; so I left it to her Direction, and a Coach-Maker was sent for, and he provided me a plain Coach, no gilding or painting, lined with a light grey Cloth, and my Coachman had a Coat of the same, and no Lace on his Hat.

When all was ready, I dressed myself in the Dress I bought of her, and said, come, I'll be a *Quaker* to Day, and you and I'll go Abroad; which we did; and there was not a *Quaker* in the Town looked less like a Counterfeit than I did. But all this was my particular Plot to be the more compleatly concealed, and that I might depend upon being not known, and yet need not be confined like a Prisoner; and be always in Fear; so that all the rest was Grimace.

We lived here very easy and quiet, and yet I cannot say I was so in my Mind; I was like a Fish out of Water; I was as gay, and as young in my Disposition, as I was at five and twenty; and as I had been always courted, flattered, and used to love it, so I missed it in my Conversation; and this put me many Times upon looking back upon things past.

I had very few Moments in my Life, which in their Reflection, afforded me any thing but Regret; but of all the foolish Actions I had to look back upon in my Life, none looked so preposterous, and so like Distraction, nor left so much Melancholly on my Mind, as

my Parting with my Friend, the *Merchant of Paris*, and the refusing him upon such honourable and just Conditions as he had offered; and though on his just (which I called unkind) rejecting my Invitation to come to him again, I had looked on him with some Disgust, yet now my Mind run upon him continually, and the ridiculous conduct of my refusing him, and I could never be satisfied about him; I flattered myself, that if I could but see him, I could yet Master him, and that he would presently forget all that had passed, that might be thought unkind; but as there was no room to imagine any thing like that to be possible, I threw those Thoughts out again as much as I could.

However, they continually returned, and I had no Rest Night or Day, for thinking of him, who I had forgot above eleven Years. I told *Amy* of it, and we talked it over sometimes in Bed, almost whole Nights together; at last, *Amy* started a thing of her own Head, which put it in a way of Management, though a wild one too: *You are so uneasy, Madam, says she, that this Mr.----- the Merchant at Paris; Come, says she, if you'll give me Leave, I'll go over, and see what's become of him.*

Not for ten Thousand Pounds, *said I*; no, nor if you meet him in the Street, not to offer to speak to him on my Account. No, *says Amy*, I would not speak to him at all, or if I did, I warrant you it shall not look to be upon your Account; I will only enquire after him, and if he is in Being, you shall hear of him; if not you shall hear of him still, and that may be enough.

Why, *says I* if you will promise me not to enter into any thing relating to me, with him; nor to begin any Discourse at all, un'less he begins it with you, I could almost be persuaded to let you go and try.

Amy promised all that I desired; and, in a Word, to cut the Story short, I let her go; but ty'd her up to so many Particulars, that it was almost impossible her going could signify any thing; and had she intended to observe them, she might as well have staid at home as to have gone; for I charged her, if she came to see him, she should not so much as take Notice that she knew him again; and if he spoke to her, she should tell him, she was come away from me a great many Years ago, and knew nothing what was become of me;

that

that she had been come over to *France* six Years ago, and was married there, and lived at *Calais*, or to that Purpose.

Amy promised me nothing indeed; for, as she said, it was impossible for her to resolve what would be fit to do, till she was there upon the Spot, and had found out the Gentleman, or heard of him; but that then, if I would trust her, as I had always done, she would answer for it, that she would do nothing but what should be for my Interest, and what she would hope I should be very well pleased with.

With this general Commission, *Amy*, notwithstanding she had been so frightened at the Sea, ventured her Carcass once more by Water, and away she goes to *France*; she had four Articles of Confidence in Charge to enquire after for me; and as I found by her, she had one for herself; I say, four for me, because though her first and principal Errand was, to inform herself of my *Dutch Merchant*; yet I gave her in Charge to enquire, second, After my Husband, who I left a Trooper in the *Gensd'Arms*. Third, After that Rogue of a *Jew*, whose very Name I hated, and of whose Face I had such a frightful Idea, that *Satan* himself could not counterfeit a worse. And lastly, After my Foreign Prince. And she discharged herself very well of them all, though not so successful as I wished.

Amy had a very good Passage over the Sea, and I had a Letter from her from *Calais*, in three Days after she left *London*. When she came to *Paris* she wrote me an Account, that as to her first and most important Enquiry, which was after the *Dutch Merchant*; her Account was, That he had returned to *Paris*; lived three Years there, and quitting that City, went to live at *Roan*. So away goes *Amy* for *Roan*.

But as she was going to bespeak a Place in the Coach to *Roan*, she meets very accidentally in the Street with her Gentleman, as I called him; that is to say, the Prince de -----'s Gentleman, who had been her Favourite, as above.

You may be sure there were several other kind Things happened between *Amy* and him, as you shall hear afterwards. But the two main Things were, First, That *Amy* enquired about his Lord, and had a full Account of him; of which presently; and in the next Place, telling whither she was going, and for what; he bade her not go yet, for that he would have a particular Account of it the

next

next Day, from a Merchant that knew him; and accordingly he brought her Word the next Day, that he had been for six Years before that gone for *Holland*, and that he lived there still.

This, *I say*, was the first News from *Amy* for some Time, *I mean* about my Merchant. In the mean Time *Amy*, as *I have said*, enquired about the other Persons she had in her Instructions. As for the Prince, the Gentleman told her, he was gone into *Germany*, where his Estate lay, and that he lived there; that he had made Enquiry after me; that he (his Gentleman) had made all the Search he had been able, for me; but that he could not hear of me; that he believed if his Lord had known *I* had been in *England*, he would have gone over to me; but that after long Enquiry, he was obliged to give it over; but that he verily believed, if he could have found me, he would have married me; and that he was extremely concerned that he could hear nothing of me.

I was not at all satisfied with *Amy's* Account, but ordered her to go to *Roan* herself; which she did, and there with much Difficulty (the Person she was directed to being dead) *I say*, with much Difficulty she came to be informed, that my Merchant had lived there two Years, or something more; but that having met with a very great Misfortune, he had gone back to *Holland*, as the French Merchant said, where he had staid two Years; but with this Addition, viz. that he came back again to *Roan*, and lived in good Reputation there another Year; and afterwards he went to *England*; and that he lived in *London*. But *Amy* could by no means learn how to write to him there, till by great Accident, a Dutch Skipper, who had formerly served him, coming to *Roan*, *Amy* was told of it; and he told her, that he lodged in St. Lawrence Pountney's Lane, in *London*; but was to be seen every Day upon the Exchange, in the French Walk.

This *Amy* thought it was time enough to tell me of when she came over; and besides, she could not find this Dutch Skipper till she had spent four or five Months, and been again at *Paris*, and then come back to *Roan* for farther Information. But in the mean Time she wrote me from *Paris*, that he was not to be found by any Means; that he had been gone from *Paris* seven or eight Years; that she was told he had lived at *Roan*, and she was going thither to enquire, but that

that she had heard afterwards, that he was gone from thence to *Holland*, so she did not go.

This, I say, was *Amy's* first Account; and I not satisfied with it, had sent her an Order to go to *Roan*, to enquire there also, as above.

While this was negotiating, and I received these Accounts from *Amy* at several Times, a strange Adventure happened to me, which I must mention just here; I had been Abroad to take the Air as usual, with my *Quaker*, as far as *Epping-Forrest*, and we were driving back towards *London*, when on the Road between *Bow* and *Mile-End*, two Gentlemen on Horseback came riding by, having overtaken the Coach, and passed it, and went forwards towards *London*.

They did not ride apace, though they passed the Coach, for we went very softly, nor did they look into the Coach at all, but rode side by side, earnestly talking to one another, and inclining their Faces side-ways a little towards one another; he that went nearest the Coach, with his Face from it, and he that was farthest from the Coach, with his Face towards it, and passing in the very next Tract to the Coach, I could hear them talk *Dutch* very distinctly; but it is impossible to describe the Confusion I was in, when I plainly saw that the farthest of the two, him whose Face looked towards the Coach, was my Friend, the *Dutch* Merchant of *Paris*.

If it had been possible to conceal my Disorder from my Friend the *Quaker*, I would have done it, but I found she was too well acquainted with such Things, not to take the Hint; Dost Thou understand *Dutch*? said she. Why? said I. Why, says she, 'tis easy to suppose that Thou art a little concerned at somewhat these Men say; I suppose they are talking of Thee. Indeed my good Friend, said I, thou art mistaken this Time, for I know very well what they are talking of, but 'tis all about Ships, and trading Affairs. Well, says she, then one of them is a Man-Friend of Thine, or so newhat is the case; for though thy Tongue will not confess it, thy Face does.

I was going to have told a bold Lye, and said, I knew nothing of them, but I found it was impossible to conceal it, so I said, indeed, I think I know the farthest of them; but I have neither spoken to him, or so much as seen him for above 11 years; Well then, says she, Thou hast seen him with more than common Eyes, when thou

didst see him; or else seeing him now would not be such a Surprize to Thee: Indeed, *said I*, 'tis true I am a little surpriz'd at seeing him just now, for I thought he had been in quite another part of the World; and I can assure you, I never saw him in *England* in my Life: Well then, 'tis the more likely he is come over now on purpose to seek Thee: No, no, *said I*, Knight-Errantry is over, Women are not so hard to come at, that Men should not be able to please themselves without running from one Kingdom to another: Well, well, *says she*, I would have him see Thee for all that, as plainly as Thou hast seen him; No, but he shan't, *says I*, for I am sure he don't know me in this Dress, and I'll take Care he shan't see my Face, if I can help it; so I held up my Fan before my Face, and she saw me resolute in that, so she press'd me no farther.

We had several Discourses upon the Subject, but still I let her know I was resolv'd he should not know me; but, at last, I confess so much, that though I would not let him know who I was, or where I liv'd, I did not care if I knew where he lived, and how I might enquire about him: She took the Hint immediately, and her Servant being behind the Coach, she called him to the Coach side, and bade him keep his Eye upon that Gentleman, and as soon as the Coach came to the End of *White Chappel*, he should get down, and follow him closely, so as to see where he put up his Horse, and then to go into the Inn, and enquire, if he could, who he was, and where he liv'd.

The Fellow followed diligently to the Gate of an Inn in *Bishopsgate Street*, and seeing him go in, made no doubt but he had him fast, but was confounded, when upon Enquiry he found the Inn was a Thoroughfare into another Street, and that the two Gentlemen had only rode through the Inn, as the Way to the Street where they were going, and so, in short, came back no wiser than he went.

My kind Quaker was more vexed at the Disappointment, at least apparently so, than I was; and asking the Fellow, if he was sure he knew the Gentleman again if he saw him; the Fellow said, he had followed him so closely, and took so much Notice of him, in order to do his Errand as it ought to be done, that he was very sure he should know him again; and that besides, he was sure he should know his Horse.

This Part was, indeed, likely enough; and the kind Quaker, with-

without telling me any thing of the Matter, caus'd her Man to place himself just at the corner of *White Chapple Church Wall* every *Saturday* in the Afternoon, that being the Day when the Citizens chiefly ride Abroad to take the Air, and there to watch all the Afternoon, and look for him.

It was not till the fifth *Saturday*, that her Man came, with a great deal of Joy and gave her an Account, that he had found out the Gentleman; that he was a *Dutchman* but a *French Merchant*; that he came from *Roan*, and his Name was — and that he lodg'd at Mr. — on *Lawrence Pountney's Hill*: I was surpriz'd, you may be sure, when she came and told me one Evening, all the Particulars, except that of having let her Man to watch: I have found out thy *Dutch Friend*, says she, and can tell Thee how to find him too; I colour'd again as red as Fire: Then Thou hast dealt with the Evil One, Friend, said I gravely. No, no, says she, I have no Familiar; but I tell Thee, I have found him for Thee, and his Name is *so and so*; and he lives as above recited.

I was surpriz'd again at this, not being able to imagine how she should come to know all this: However, to put me out of pain, she told me what she had done; well, said I, Thou art very kind, but this is not worth thy pains: for now I know it, 'tis only to satisfy my Curiosity, for I shall not send to him upon any Account: Be that as thou wilt, says she; besides, added she, Thou art in the right to say so to me; for, why should I be trusted with it? tho' if I were I assure thee, I shou'd not betray thee: That is very kind, said I, and I believe thee; and assure Thyself, if I do send to him, Thou shalt know it, and be trusted with it too.

During this Interval of five Weeks, I suffered a hundred Thousand Perplexities of Mind; I was thoroughly convinced I was right as to the person, that it was the Man; I knew him so well, and saw him so plain, I could not be deceived; I drove out again in the Coach, (on Pretence of Air) almost every Day, in hopes of seeing him again, but was never so lucky as to see him; and now I had made the Discovery, I was as far to seek what Measures to take, as I was before.

To send to him, or speak to him first, if I shou'd see him, so as to be known to him, that I resolv'd not to do, if I dy'd for it; to watch him about his Lodging, that was as much below my Spirit as the other;

ther; so that, *in a Word*, I was at a perfect Loss how to act, or what to do.

At length came *Amy's* Letter, with the last Account which she had at *Roan* from the *Dutch Skipper*, which confirming the other, left me out of Doubt that this *was my Man*; but still, no humane Invention could bring me to the Speech of him, in such a manner as would suit with my Resolutions; for, *after all*, how did I know what his Circumstances were? whether marry'd or single? and if he had a Wife, I know he was so honest a Man, he would not so much as converse with me, or so much as know me, if he met me in the Street.

In the next place, as he had entirely neglected me, which, in short, is the worst Way of slighting a Woman, and had given no Answer to my Letters, I did not know but he might be the same Man still; so I resolved, that I could do nothing in it, unless some fairer Opportunity presented, which might make my Way clearer to me; for I was determined he should have no room to put any more Slights upon me.

In these Thoughts I passed away near three Months; till at last (being impatient) I resolved to lend for *Amy* to come Over, and tell how things stood, and that I would do nothing till she came; *Amy* in Answer sent me Word, she would come away with all speed, but begged of me, that I would enter into no Engagement with him, or anybody, till she arrived; but still keeping me in the Dark, as to the Thing itself which she had to say, at which I was heartily vexed for many Reasons.

But while all these Things were transacting, and Letters and Answers passed between *Amy* and I a little slower than usual, at which I was not so well pleased as I used to be with *Amy's* Dispatch; I say, in this Time the following Scene opened.

It was one Afternoon, about four o'Clock, my Friendly *Quaker* and I sitting in her Chamber up Stairs, and very cheerful, chatting together (for she was the best Company in the World) when somebody ringing hastily at the Door, and no Servant just then in the way, she ran down herself, to the Door; when a Gentleman appears with a Footman attending, and making some Apologies, which she did not thoroughly understand, he speaking but broken English, he asked to speak with me, by the very same Name that I went by in

her

her House; which, *by the way*, was not the Name he had known me by.

She with very civil Language, *in her way*, brought him into a very handsome Parlour below Stairs, and *said*, she would go and see whether the Person who lodged in her House owned that Name, and he should hear farther.

I was a little surprized, even before I knew any thing of who it was, my Mind foreboding the Thing as it happened; (*whence that arises, let the Naturalists explain to us*) but I was frightened and ready to die, when my Quaker came up all gay, and crowing; *There, says she, is the Dutch French Merchant come to see Thee.* I could not speak one Word to her, nor stir out of my Chair, but sat as motionless as a Statue. She talked a Thousand pleasant Things to me, but they made no Impression on me; at last she pulled me, and teized me, *Well, come, says she, be thyself, and rouse up,* I must go down again to him; what shall I say to him? *Say, said I, that you have no such Person in the House.* That I cannot do, *says she, because it is contrary to Truth;* besides, I have owned thou art here, *Come, come, go down with me.* Not for a thousand Guineas, *said I;* well, *says she,* I'll go and tell him, Thou wilt come quickly; so, without giving me Time to answer her, away she goes.

A Million of Thoughts circulated in my Head while she was gone, and what to do I could not tell; I saw no Remedy but I must speak with him, but would have given five hundred Pounds to have shunned it; yet, had I shunned it, perhaps then, I would have given five hundred Pounds again, that I had seen him. Thus fluctuating, and unconcluding were my Thoughts; what I so earnestly desired, I declined when it offered itself; and what now I pretended to decline, was nothing but what I had been at the expence of forty or fifty Pounds to send *Amy* to France for; and even without any View, or indeed, any rational Expectation of bringing it to pass, and what, for half a Year before, I was so uneasy about, that I could not be quiet Night or Day, till *Amy* proposed to go over to enquire after him. In short, my Thoughts were all confused, and in the utmost Disorder; I had once refused and rejected him, and I repented it heartily; then I had taken ill his Silence, and in my Mind rejected him again, but had repented

that too. Now I had stooped so low as to send after him into France, which if he had known, perhaps he had never come after me; and should I reject him a third Time! On the other hand, he had repented too in his Turn, perhaps, and not knowing how I had acted, either in stooping to send in Search after him, or in the wickeder Part of my Life, was come over hither to seek me again; and I might take him perhaps, with the same Advantages as I might have done before, and would I now be backward to see him! Well, while I was in this Hurry, my Friend the Quaker comes up again, and perceiving the Confusion I was in, she runs to her Closet, and fetches me a little pleasant Cordial, but I would not taste it. O says she, *I understand Thee, be not uneasy, I'll give thee something shall take off the Smell of it; if he kisses Thee a thousand Times, he shall be no wiser.* I thought with myself, Thou art perfectly acquainted with Affairs of this Nature, I think you must govern me now, so I began to incline to go down with her; upon that I took the Cordial, and she gave me a kind of spicy Preserve after it, whose Flavour was so strong, and yet so deliciously pleasant, that it would cheat the nicest Smelling, and it left not the least taint of the Cordial on the Breath.

Well, after this (though with some Hesitation still) I went down a Pair of back Stairs with her, and into a Dining-Room, next to the Parlour in which he was; but there I halted; and desired she would let me consider of it a little. *Well, do so,* says she, and left me with more readiness than she did before; *do, consider, and I'll come to Thee again.*

Though I hung back with an awkwardness that was really unfeigned, yet when she so readily left me, I thought it was not so kind, and I began to think she should have pressed me still on to it; so foolishly backward are we to the Thing, which of all the World we most desire; mocking ourselves with a feigned Reluctance, when the Negative would be Death to us; but she was too cunning for me, for while I, as it were, blamed her in my Mind, for not carrying me to him, though at the same Time I appeared backward to see him; on a sudden she unlocks the Folding-Doors, which looked into the next Parlour, and throwing them open, *There,* says she (ushering him in) *is the Person who, I suppose, thou enquirest for;* and the same Moment, with a kind Decency

gency she retired, and that so swift, that she would not give us leave, hardly, to know which Way she went.

I stood up, but was confounded with a sudden Enquiry in my Thoughts, How I should receive him? And with a Resolution as swift as Lightning, in Answer to it, *said to myself*, It shall be Coldly; so, on a sudden, I put on an Air of Stiffness and Ceremony, and held it for about two Minutes; but it was with great Difficulty.

He restrained himself too, on the other Hand, came towards me gravely, and saluted me in Form; but it was, it seems, upon his supposing the *Quaker* was behind him, whereas *she*, as I said, understood Things too well, and had retired, as if she had vanished, that we might have full Freedom; for, as *she* said afterwards, she supposed we had seen one another before, though it might have been a great while ago.

Whatever Stiffness I had put on my Behaviour to him, I was surprized in my Mind, and angry at his, and began to wonder what kind of a ceremonious Meeting it was to be. However, after he perceived the Woman was gone, he made a kind of a Hesitation, looking a little round him; *Indeed*, said he, *I thought the Gentle woman was not withdrawn*; and with that he took me in his Arms, and kissed me three or four Times; but I that was prejudiced to the last Degree, with the coldness of his first Salutes, when I did not know the Cause of it, could not be thoroughly cleared of the Prejudice, though I did know the Cause; and thought that even his Return, and taking me in his Arms, did not seem to have the same Ardour with which he used to receive me, and this made me behave to him awkwardly, and I know not how, for a good while; *but this by the way*.

He began with a kind of an Extasy upon the Subject of his finding me out; how it was possible that he should have been four Years in *England*, and had used all the Ways imaginable, and could never so much as have the least Intimation of me, or of any one like me; and that it was now above two Years that he had despaired of it, and had given over all Enquiry; and that now he should chop upon me, as it were, unlooked and unsought for.

I could easily have accounted for his not finding me, if I had but set down the Detail of my real Retirement; but I gave it a
new,

new, and indeed a truly hypocritical Turn; I told him, that any one that knew the manner of Life I led, might account for his not finding me; that the Retreat I had taken up, would have rendered it a hundred Thousand to one odds that he ever found me at all; that as I had abandoned all Conversation; taken up another Name; lived remote from *London*, and had not preserved one Acquaintance in it; it was no wonder he had not met with me; that even my Dress would let him see, that I did not desire to be known by any body.

Then he asked if I had not received some Letters from him? I told him, No, he had not thought fit to give me the Civility of an Answer to the last I wrote to him; and he could not suppose I should expect a Return, after a Silence in a Case where I had laid myself so low, and exposed myself in a Manner I had never been used to; that indeed, I had never sent for any Letters after that, to the Place where I had ordered his to be directed; and that being so justly, as I thought, punished for my Weakness, I had nothing to do, but to repent of being a Fool, after I had strictly adhered to a just Principle before; that however, as what I did was rather from Motions of Gratitude, than from real Weakness, however it might be construed by him, I had the Satisfaction in myself of having fully discharged the Debt. *I added*, that I had not wanted Occasions of all the seeming Advancements which the pretended Felicity of a Marriage-Life was usually set off with, and might have been what I desired not to name; but that, however low I had stooped to him, I had maintained the Dignity of Female Liberty, against all the Attacks, either of Pride or Avarice; and that I had been infinitely obliged to him for giving me an Opportunity to discharge the only Obligation that endangered me, without subjecting me to the Consequence; and that I hoped he was satisfied I had paid the Debt, by offering myself to be chained; but was infinitely Debtor to him another Way, for letting me remain free.

He was so confounded at this Discourse, that he knew not what to say, and for a good while he stood mute indeed; but recovering himself a little, *he said*, I run out into a Discourse he hoped was over, and forgotten, and he did not intend to revive it; that he knew I had not had his Letters, for that, when he first came to *England*, he had been at the Place to which they were directed, and found them.

them all lying there, but one; and that the People had not known how to deliver them; that he thought to have had a Direction there how to find me, but had the Mortification to be told, that they did not so much as know who *I* was; that he was under a great Disappointment, and that *I* ought to know, in Answer to all my Resentments, that he had done a long, and (he hoped) a sufficient Penance for the Slight that *I* had supposed he had put upon me; that it was true (and *I* could not suppose any other) that upon the Repulse *I* had given him in a Case so circumstanced as his was, and after such earnest Entreaties, and such Offers as he had made me, he went away with a Mind heartily grieved, and full of Resentment; that he had looked back on the Crime he had committed, with some Regret, but on the Cruelty of my Treatment of the poor Infant *I* went with at that Time, with the utmost Detestation; and that this made him unable to send an agreeable Answer to me; for which Reason he had sent none at all for some Time; but that in about six or seven Months those Resentments wearing off, by the Return of his Affection to me, and his Concern in the poor Child --- *there he stopped and indeed, Tears stood in his Eyes, while in a Parenthesis, he only added, and to this Minute he did not know whether it was dead or alive;* he then went on, those Resentments wearing off, he sent me several Letters, *I think he said*, seven or eight, but received no Answer; that then his Business obliging him to go to *Holland*, he came to *England*, as in his Way, but found, *as above*, that his Letters had not been called for, but that he left them at the House after paying the Postage of them; and going then back to *France*, he was yet uneasy, and could not refrain the Knight-Errantry of coming to *England* again to seek me, though he knew neither where, or of who, to enquire for me, being disappointed in all his Enquiries before. That he had yet taken up his Residence here, firmly believing, that one Time or other he should meet with me, or hear of me, and that some kind Chance would at last throw him in my Way; that he had lived thus above four Years, and though his Hopes were vanished, yet he had not any Thoughts of removing any more in the World, unless it should be at last, as it is with other old Men, he might have some Inclination to go Home, to die in his own Country; but that he had not thought of it yet; that if *I* would consider all these Steps, *I* would find some Reasons to forget his first Re-

sentiments, and to think that Penance, *as he called it*, which he had undergone in search of me, an *Amende Honorable*, in Reparation of the Affront given to the Kindness of my Letter of Invitation; and that we might at last make ourselves some Satisfaction on both Sides, for the Mortifications past.

I confess I could not hear all this without being moved very much, and yet I continued a little stiff and formal too, a good while. *I told him*, that before I could give him any Reply to the rest of his Discourse, I ought to give him the Satisfaction of telling him, *that his Son was alive*; and that indeed, since I saw him so concerned about it, and mention it with such Affection, I was sorry that I had not found out some Way or other to let him know it sooner; but that I thought, after his slighting the Mother, *as a slave*, he had summed up his Affection to the Child, in the Letter he had wrote to me about providing for it; and that he had, as other Fathers often do, looked upon it as a Birth, *which being out of the Way*, was to be forgotten, as its Beginning was to be repented of; that in providing sufficiently for it, he had done more than all such Fathers used to do, and might be well satisfied with it.

He answered me, that he should be very glad if I had been so good; but to have given him the Satisfaction of knowing the poor unfortunate Creature was yet alive, and he would have taken some Care of it upon himself, and particularly, by owning it for a legitimate Child, which, where nobody had known to the contrary, would have taken off the Infamy which would otherwise cleave to it; and so the Child should not, *itself*, have known any thing of its own Disaster; but that he feared it was now too late.

He added, that I might see by all his Conduct since that, what unhappy Mistake drew him into the Thing at first; and that he would have been very far from doing the Injury to me, or being instrumental to add *Une Miserable* (that was the Word) to the World; if he had not been drawn into it, by the Hopes he had of making me his own; but that, if it was possible to rescue the Child from the Consequences of its unhappy Birth, he hoped I would give him leave to do it, and he would let me see that he had both Means and Affection still to do it; and that, notwithstanding all the Misfortunes that had befallen him, nothing that belonged to him,

him, especially by a Mother he had such a Concern for, as he had for me, should ever want what he was in a Condition to do for it.

I could not hear this without being sensibly touched with it; I was ashamed that he should show that he had more real Affection for the Child, though he had never seen it in his Life, than I that bore it; for indeed, I did not love the Child, nor love to see it; and though I had provided for it, yet I did it by *Amy's* Hand, and had not seen it above twice in four Years; being privately resolved, that when it grew up, it should not be able to call me Mother.

However, I told him, the Child was taken Care of, and that he need not be anxious about it, unless he suspected, that I had less Affection for it than he, that had never seen it in his Life; that he knew what I had promised him to do for it, *namely*, to give it the Thousand Pistoles which I had offered him, and which he had declined; that, I assured him, I had made my Will, and that I had left it five Thousand Pounds, and the Interest of it till he should come of Age, if I died before that Time; that I should still be as good as that to it; but if he had a Mind to take it from me, into his own Government, I would not be against it, and to satisfy him that I would perform what I said, I would cause the Child to be delivered to him, and the five Thousand Pounds also for its Support; depending upon it, that he would show himself a Father to it, by what I saw of his Affection to it now.

I had observed, that he had hinted two or three Times in his Discourse, his having had *Misfortunes in the World*, and I was a little surprized at the Expression, especially at the repeating it so often; but I took no notice of that Part yet.

He thanked me for my Kindness to the Child, with a Tenderness which shewed the Sincerity of all he had said before; and which increased the Regret with which, as I said, I looked back on the little Affection I had shewed to the poor Child; he told me, he did not desire to take him from me, but so as to introduce him into the World as his own; which he could still do, having lived absent from his other Children (for he had two Sons and a Daughter which were brought up at *Nimeugen in Holland*, with a Sister of his) so long, that he might very well send another Son of ten Years old to be bred up with them; and suppose his Mother to be dead or alive, as he found Occasion; and that as I had resolved to do

do so handsomely for the Child, he would add to it something considerable, though having had some great Disappointments (*repeating the Words*) he could not do for it as he would otherwise have done.

I then thought myself obliged to take Notice of his having so often mentioned his having *met with Disappointments*; I told him, I was very sorry to hear he had met with any thing afflicting to him in the World; that I would not have any thing belonging to me add too his Loss, or weaken him in what he might do for his other Children; and that I would not agree to his having the Child away, *though the Proposal was infinitely to the Child's Advantage*, unless he would promise me, that the whole Expence should be mine; and that if he did not think five Thousand Pounds enough for the Child. I would give it more.

We had so much Discourse upon this, *and the old Affairs*, that it took up all our Time at his first Visit; I was a little importunate with him, to tell me how he came to find me out; but he put it off for that Time; and only obtaining my Leave to visit me again, he went away; sometimes I was full of Tenderness and Affection for him, and especially, when he expressed himself so earnestly and passionately about the Child; other Times I was crowded with Doubts about his Circumstances; sometimes I was terrified with Apprehensions, lest I should come into a close Correspondence with him, he should any way come to hear what kind of Life I had led at *Pall-Mall*, and in other Places, and it might make me miserable afterwards; from which last Thought I concluded, that I had better repulse him again, than receive him: All these Thoughts, and many more, crowded in so fast, *I say*, upon me, that I wanted to give Vent to them, and get rid of him, and was very glad when he was gone away.

We had several Meetings after this, in which still we had so many Preliminaries to go through, that we scarce ever border'd upon the main subject; once indeed, he said something of it, and I put it off with a kind of a Jest; alas! *says I*, those things are out of the Question now; 'tis almost two ages since those things were talk'd between us, *says I*; you see I am grown an *old woman* since that: Another time he gave me a little push at it again, and I laugh'd again; *Why what dost thou talk of*, said I, in a formal way *Dost thou not see I am turn'd Quaker? I cannot speak of those things now*:

now, *Why*, says he, *Quakers* marry as well as other People, and love one another as well besides, says he, the *Quakers* Dress does not ill become you, and so jested with me again, and so it went off for a third time, however, I began to be kind to him in process of time, as they call it, and we grew very intimate; and if the following Accident had not unluckily interven'd, I had certainly married him, or consented to marry him, the very next time he had ask'd me.

I had long waited for a Letter from *Amy*, who it seems, was just at that time gone to *Roan* the second time, to make her Enquiries about him; and I receiv'd a Letter from her at this unhappy Juncture; which gave the following Account of my Business.

First, That my Gentleman, who I had now as I may say, in my Arms; she said, he had been gone from *Paris*, as I have hinted, having met with some great Losses and Misfortunes; that he had been in *Holland* on that very Account, whether he had also carried his Children; and that he was after that, settl'd at *Roan*; that she had been at *Roan*, and found there, (by a meer accident) from a Dutch Skipper, that he was at *London*, and had been there above three Years; that he was to be found upon the Exchange, on the French Walk; and that he lodg'd at *Lawrence Pountney's-Lane*, and the like; so *Amy* said she suppos'd I might soon find him out; but that she doubted he was poor, and not worth looking after: This she said because of the next Clause, which she had most mind to, on many Accounts.

Second, That as to the Prince——, that, as above, he went into *Germany*, where his Estate lay; that he had quitted the French Service, and liv'd retir'd; that she had seen his Gentleman, who remain'd at *Paris*, to solicit his Arrears, &c. That he had given her an Account how his Lord had employ'd him, to enquire for me and find me out, as above, and told her what pains he had taken to find me; that he had understood that I was gone to *England*; that he once had Orders to go to *England* to find me; that his Lord had resolv'd, if he cou'd have found me, to have call'd me a Countess, and so married me, and have carry'd me into *Germany* with him; and that his Commission was still to assure me, that the Prince would marry me, if I would come to him; and that he

would send me an Account that he had found me, and did not doubt but he would have Orders to come over to *England* to attend me, in a Figure suitable to my Quality.

Amy, an ambitious Jade, who knew my weakest Part, *namely*, that I loved great Things, and that I loved to be flattered and courted; said abundance of kind Things on this Occasion, which she knew were suitable to me, and would prompt my Vanity; and talked big of the Prince's Gentleman having Orders to come over to *England* to me, with a Procruration to marry me by Proxy (*as Princes usually do in like Cases*) and to furnish me with an Equipage, and I know not how many fine Things; but told me withal, that she had not let him know that she belonged to me still, or that she knew where to find me, or to write to me, because she was willing to see the Bottom of it, and whether it was a Reality, or a *Gasconade*; she had indeed told him, that if he had any such Commission, she would endeavour to find me out; but no more.

Third, For the *Jew*, she assured me, that she had not been able to come at a Certainty what was become of him, or in what Part of the World he was; but that thus much she had learned from good Hands, that he had committed a Crime, in being concerned in a Design to rob a rich Banker at *Paris*; and that he was fled, and had not been heard of there for above six Years.

Fourth, For that of my *Husband the Brewer*, she learned, that being commanded into the Field upon an Occasion of some Action in *Flanders*, he was wounded at the Battle of *Mons*, and died of his Wounds in the Hospital of the Invalids; so there was an End of my four Enquiries, which I sent her over to make.

This Account of the Prince, and the Return of his Affection to me, with all the flattering great Things which seemed to come along with it, and especially, as they came gilded, and let out by my Maid *Amy*; I say, this Account of the Prince came to me in a very unlucky Hour, and in the very Crisis of my Affair.

The Merchant and I had entered into close Conferences upon the grand Affair; I had left off talking of my Platonicks, and of my Independency, and being a *Free Woman*, as before; and he having cleared

cleared up my Doubts too, as to his Circumstances, and the Misfortunes he had spoken of, I had gone so far, that we had begun to consider where we should live, and in what Figure; what Equipage; what House, and the like.

I had made some Harangues upon the delightful Retirement of a Country Life, and how we might enjoy ourselves so effectually, without the Incumbrances of business, and the World; but all this was Grimace, and purely because I was afraid to make any publick Appearance in the world, for fear some impertinent Person of Quality shou'd chop on me again, and cry out, *Roxana, Roxana*, by——, with an Oath, as had been done before.

My Merchant, bred to Business, and us'd to converse among Men of Business, cou'd hardly tell how to live without it; at least, it appear'd he shou'd be like a fish out of water, uneasie and dying; but however, he join'd with me, only argued, that he might sometimes come to *Change*, and hear how the World shou'd go Abroad, and how it far'd with his Friends, and his Children.

I told him, he was mistaken in me; that as I had told him so much of a Married State being a captivity, and the Family being a house of bondage; that when I married, I expected to be but an Upper-servant; so if I did, notwithstanding, submit to it, I hop'd he shou'd see I knew how to act the servant's Part, and do everything to oblige my master; that if I did not resolve to go with him wherever he desired to go, he might depend I wou'd never have him, and did I not, said I, offer myself to go to the East-Indies.

All this while, was indeed, but a copy of my Countenance, for as my Circumstances wou'd not admit my Stay in *London*, at least not so as to appear publickly, I resolv'd if I took him, to live remote in the Country, or go out of *England* with him.

But in an evil Hour, just now came *Amy's* Letter, in the very middle of all the Discourses, and the fine things she had said about the Prince, began to make strange Work with me? the Notion of being a Princess, and going over to live where that had happened here wou'd have been quite out of Knowledge, (*Conscience excepted*) was mighty taking; the Thoughts of being surrounded with Domesticks; honour'd with Titles; be call'd HER HIGHNESS, and live in all the Splendor of a Court; and, which was still more, in the

the Arms of a Man of such Rank, and who I knew lov'd and valued me; all this, *in a word*, dazzl'd my Eyes; turn'd my Head; and I was as truly craz'd and distracted, for about a Fortnight, as most of the People in *Bedlam*, tho' perhaps, not quite so far gone.

When my Gentleman came to me the next time, I had no Notion of him; I wish'd I had never receiv'd him at all; *in short* I resolv'd to have no more to say to him; so I feign'd myself indispos'd; and tho' I did come down to him, and speak to him a little, yet let him see that I was so ill, that I was, *(as we say)* no Company, and th't it would be kind in him to give me Leave to quit him for that Time.

The next Morning he sent a Footman to enquire how I did; and I let him know, I had a violent Cold, and was very ill with it; two Days after, he came again, and I let him see me again, but feign'd myself so hoarse, that I could not speak to be heard; and that it was painful to me but to whisper; and, *in a word*, I held him in this Suspence near three Weeks.

During this Time, I had a strange Elevation upon my Mind; and the Prince, *or the Spirit of him*, had such a Possession of me, that I spent most of this Time in the realizing all the great Things of a *Life with a Prince*, to my Mind; pleasing my Fancy with the Grandeur I was supposing myself to enjoy; and withal, wickedly studying in what Manner to put off this Gentleman, and be rid of him forever.

I cannot but say, that sometimes the Baseness of the Action stuck hard with me; the Honour and Sincerity with which he had always treated me; and, *above all*, the Fidelity he had shew'd me at *Paris*, and that I ow'd my Life to him; I say, all these stard in my Face; and I frequently argued with myself upon the Obligation I was under, to him; and how base wou'd it be, *now too, after so many Obligations and Engagements*, to cast him off?

But the Title of *Highbness*, and of a *Princess*, and all those fine Things, as they came in, weigh'd down all this; and the Sense of *Gratitude* vanish'd, as if it had been a Shadow.

At other Times, I consider'd the Wealth I was Mistress of; that I was able to live like a *Princess*, though not a *Princess*; and that my Merchant, for he had told me all the Affair of his Misfortunes, was far from being poor, or even mean; that together, we

were

were able to make up an Estate of between three and four Thousand Pounds a Year, which was in itself, equal to some Princes abroad : But tho' this was true, yet the Name of *Princess*, and the flutter of it, in a word, the Pride weighed them down; and all these Arguings generally ended to the Disadvantage of my Merchant; so that, in short, I resolved to drop him, and give him a final Answer, at his next coming; *nainely*, That something had happened in my Affairs, which had caused me to alter my Measures, unexpectedly; and, in a word, to desire him to trouble himself no further.

I think verily, this rude Treatment of him, was for some time, the Effect of a violent Fermentation in my Blood; for the very Motion which the steady Contemplation of my fancy'd Greatness had put my Syri's into, had thrown me into a kind of Fever, and I scarce knew what I did.

I have wondered since, that it did not make me Mad; nor do I now think it strange, to hear of those, who have been quite *Lunatick* with their Pride; that fancy'd themselves Queens, and Empresses, and have made their Attendants serve them upon the Knee; given Visitors their Hand to kiss, and the like; for certainly, if Pride will not turn the Brain, nothing can.

However, the next time my Gentleman came, I had not Courage enough, or not *Ill Nature enough*, to treat him in the rude Manner I had resolved to do; and it was very well I did not; for soon after, I had another Letter from *Amy*, in which was the mortifying News, and indeed, surprizing to me, that my Prince (as I with a secret Pleasure had call'd him) was very much hurt by a Bruise he had received in hunting (and engaging with) a wild Boar; a cruel and desperate Sport, which the Noblemen of *Germany*, it seems, much delight in.

This alarm'd me indeed, and the more, because *Amy* wrote me word, that his Gentleman was gone away Express to him, not without Apprehensions, that he should find his Master was dead, before his coming home; but that he [*the Gentleman*] had promised her, that as soon as he arrived, he would send back the same Courier to her, with an Account of his Master's Health, and of the main Affair; and that he had obliged *Amy* to stay at *Paris* fourteen Days for his Return; she having promised before, to make it her Business

to go to *England*, and to find me out for his Lord, if he sent her such Orders; and he was to send her a Bill for fifty Pistoles, for her Journey: So *Amy* told me she waited for the Answer.

This was a Blow to me several Ways; for *first*, I was in a State of Uncertainty as to his Person, whether he was alive or dead; and I was not unconcern'd in that Part, I assure you; for I had an inexpressible Affection remaining for his Person, besides the Degree to which it was revived by the View of a firmer Interest in him; but *this was not all*; for in losing him, I forever lost the Prospect of all the Gayety and Glory, that had made such an Impression upon my Imagination.

In this State of Uncertainty, I say by *Amy's* Letter, I was like still, to remain another Fortnight; and had I now continued the Resolution of using my Merchant in the rude Manner I once intended, I had made, perhaps, a sorry Piece of Work of it indeed, and it was very well my Heart fail'd me, *as it did*.

However, I treated him with a great many Shuffles, and feign'd Stories, to keep him off from any closer Conferences than we had already had, that I might act afterwards as Occasion might offer one way or other; But that which mortified me most, was, that *Amy* did not write, tho' the fourteen Days was expir'd; at last to my great Surprise, when I was, with the utmost Impatience, looking out of the Window, expecting the Postman, that usually brought the Foreign Letters; I say, I was agreeably surpriz'd to see a Coach come to the Yard-Gate where we liv'd, and my Woman, *Amy*, alight out of it, and come towards the Door, having the Coachman bringing several Bundles after her.

I flew like Lightning down Stairs, to speak to her; but was soon damp'd with her News; Is the Prince alive or dead, *Amy*? says I: She spoke coldly, and slightly: *He is alive, Madam*, said she; but *it is not much Matter, I had as-lieu he had been dead*; so went up Stairs again to my Chamber, and there we began a serious Discourse of the whole Matter.

First, she told me a long Story of his being hurt by a Wild-Boar; and of the Condition he was reduced to, so that every-one expected he should die, the Anguish of the Wound having thrown him into a Fever; with abundance of circumstances, too long to relate here; how he recovered of that extreme Danger, but continued very weak;

weak; how the Gentleman had been *Homme de Parole*, and had sent back the Courier, as punctually, as if it had been to the KING; that he had given a long Account of his Lord, and of his Illness, and Recovery; but the Sum of the Matter, *as to me*, was, That as to the Lady, his Lord was turn'd Penitent; was under some Vows for his Recovery, and could not think any more on that Affair; and especially, the Lady being gone, and that it had not been offer'd to her, so there was no Breach of Honour; but that his Lord was sensible of the good Offices of Mrs. Amy, and had sent her the fifty Pistoles for her Trouble, as if she had really gone the Journey. Now I was, I confess, hardly able to bear the first Surprize of this Disappointment; Amy, saw it, and gapes out, (*as was her way*) *Lov'd Madam!* never be concern'd at it; you see he is gotten among the Priests; and I suppose, they have saucily imposed some Penance upon him; and, *it may be*, sent him of an Errand bare-foot, to some *Madonna* or *Noferdame* or other; and he is off of his Amours for the present; I'll warrant you, he'll be as wicked again as ever he was, when he is got thorow well, and gets but out of their Hands again: I hate this out-of-season Repentance; what Occasion had he, in his Repentance, to be off of taking a good Wife? I should have been glad to see you have been a Princess, *and all that*; but if it cannot be, never afflict yourself; you are rich enough to be a Princess to yourself; you do not want him, that is the best of it.

Well, I cry'd for all that, and was heartily vexed, and that a great while; but as *my* was always at my Elbow, and always jogging it out of my Head, with her Mirth, and her Wit, it wore off again.

Then I told Amy all the Story of my Merchant, and how he had found me out, when I was in such a Concern to find him; how it was true, that he lodg'd in St. Lawrence Pountney's-Dane; and how I had had all the Story of his Misfortune, which she had heard of, in which he had lost above 8000 l. Sterling; and that he had told me frankly of it, before she had sent me any Account of it, or, *at least*, before I had taken any Notice that I had heard of it.

Amy was very joyful at that Part; Well, Madam then, says Amy, what need you value the Story of the Prince? and going I know not whether into Germany, to lay your Bones in another World,

World, and learn the Devil's Language, call'd HIGH-DUTCH? You are better here, by half, *says Amy*: I aw'd Madam, *says she* why are not you as rich as *Crassus*?

Well, it was a great while still, before I could bring myself off of this fancy'd Sovereignty; and I that was so willing once to be Mistress to a KING, was now ten thousand times more fond of being Wife to a Prince.

So fast a hold has Pride and Ambition upon our Minds, that when once it gets Admission, nothing is so chimerical, but under this Possession we can form *Ideas* of, in our Fancy, and realize to our Imagination: Nothing can be so ridiculous as the simple Steps we take in such Cases; Man or a Woman becomes a meer *Malade Imaginaire*, and I believe, may as easily die with Grief, or run mad with Joy, (as the Affair in his Fancy appears right or wrong) as if all was real, and actually under the Management of the Person.

I had indeed, two Assistants to deliver me from this Snare, and these were, *first*, *Amy*, who knew my Disease, but was able to do nothing as to the Remedy; the *second*, the Merchant, who really brought the Remedy, but knew nothing of the Distemper,

I remember, when all these Disorders were upon my Thoughts, in one of the Visits my Friend the Merchant made, he took Notice, that he perceived I was under some unusual Disorder; he believed, *he said*, that my Distemper, *whatever it was*, lay much in my Head, and it being Summer Weather, and very hot, propos'd to me to go a little way into the Air.

I started at his Expression; what, *says I*, do you think then, that *I am craz'd*? you should then propose a Mad-House for my Cure: No, no, *says he*, I do not mean any thing like that, I hope the Head may be distemper'd, and not the Brain: Well, I was too sensible that he was right, for I knew I had acted a strange wild kind of Part with him; but he insist'd upon it, and press'd me to go into the Country: *I took him short again*, What need you, *says I*, send me out of your Way? It is in your Power to be less troubled with me, and with less Inconvenience to to us both.

He took that ill, and told me I us'd to have a better Opinion of his Sincerity; and desired to know what he had done to forfeit my Charity: I mention this, only to let you see how far I had gone in my Measures of quitting him, *that is to say*, how near I was of shewing

shewing him how base, ungrateful, and how vilely I could act. But I found I had carried the Jest far enough, and that a little Matter might have made him sick of me again, as he was before; so I began, by little and little, to change my way of talking to him, and to come to discourse to the Purpose again, as we had done before.

A while after this, when we were very merry, and talking familiarly together, he called me with an Air of particular Satisfaction, *his Princess*; I coloured at the Word, *for it indeed touched me to the quick*; but he knew nothing of the Reason of my being touched with it. What do you mean by that? *said I.* Nay, *says he,* I mean nothing, but that you are a Princess to me. Well, *says I,* as to that I am content; and yet I could tell you, I might have been a Princess if I would have quitted you, and believe I could be so still. It is not in my Power to make you a Princess, *says he* but I can easily make you a Lady, here in *England*, and a Countess too, if you will go out of it.

I heard both with a great deal of Satisfaction, for my Pride remained, though it had been baulked, and I thought with myself, that this Proposal would make me some Amends for the Loss of the Title that had so tickled my Imagination another Way; and I was impatient to understand what he meant; but, I would not ask him by any means; so it passed off for that Time.

When he was gone I told *Amy* what he had said, and *Amy* was as impatient to know the Manner how it could be, as I was; but the next Time (*perfectly unexpected to me*) he told me, that he had accidentally mentioned a Thing to me, last time he was with me, having not the least Thought of the Thing itself; but not knowing but such a Thing might be of some Weight to me, and that it might bring me Respect among People where I might appear, he had thought since of it, and was resolved to ask me about it.

I made light of it, and told him, that as he knew I had chosen a retired Life, it was of no Value to me to be called *Lady*, or *Countess* either; but that if he intended to drag me, *as I might call it*, into the World again, perhaps it might be agreeable to him; but *besides that*, I could not judge of the Thing, because I did not understand how either of them was to be done.

He told me, that Money purchased Titles of Honour in almost all Parts of the World; though Money could not give Principles of

Honour, they must come by Birth and Blood; that however, Titles sometimes assist to elevate the Soul, and to infuse generous Principles into the Mind, and especially, where there was a good Foundation laid in the Persons; that he hoped we should neither of us misbehave, if we came to it; and that as we knew how to wear a Title without undue Elevations, so it might sit as well upon us, as on another; that as to *England*, he had nothing to do, but to get an Act of Naturalization in his Favour, and he knew where to purchase a Patent for *Baronet*, *that is to say*, to have the Honour and Title transferred to him; but if I intended to go Abroad with him, he had a Nephew, the Son of his elder Brother, who had the Title of *Count*, with the Estate annexed, which was but small; and that he had frequently offered to make it over to him for a thousand Pistoles, which was not a great deal of Money; and considering it was in the Family already, he would, upon my being willing, purchase it immediately.

I told him, I liked the last best; but then, I would not let him buy it, unless he would let me pay the thousand Pistoles. No, no, *says he*, I refused a thousand Pistoles that I had more Right to have accepted than that, and you shall not be at so much Expence now. Yes, *says I*, you did refuse it, and repented it afterwards. I never complained, *says he*; but I did, *says I*, and often repented it for you. I do not understand you, *says he*. Why, *says I*, I repented that I suffered you to refuse it. Well, well, *said he*, we may talk of that hereafter, when you shall resolve which Part of the World you will make your settled Residence in. Here he talked very handsomely to me, and for a good while together; how it had been his Lot to live all his Days out of his Native Country, and to be often shifting and changing the Situation of his Affairs; and that I myself had not always had a fixed Abode; but that now, as neither of us was very Young, he fancied I would be for taking up our Abode, where, *if possible*, we might remove no more; that as to his Part, he was of that Opinion entirely, only with this Exception, that the Choice of the Place should be mine; for, that all Places in the World were alike to him; only with this single Addition, *namely*, that I was with him.

I heard him with a great deal of Pleasure, as well for his being willing to give me the Choice, as for that I resolved to live Abroad,
for

for the Reason I have mentioned already, *namely*, lest I should at any Time be known in *England*, and all that Story of *Roxana*, and the Balls, should come out; as also I was not a little tickled with the Satisfaction of being still a *Countess*, though I could not be a *Princess*.

I told *Amy* all this Story, for she was still my Privy-Counsellor, but when I asked her Opinion, she made me laugh heartily. Now, *which of the two shall I take, Amy?* - said I; shall I be a Lady, *that is*, a Baronet's Lady in *England*, or a Countess in *Holland*? The ready witted Jade, that knew the Pride of my Temper too, almost as well as I did myself, answered, without the least Hesitation, *both, Madam*; which of them? *says she* (repeating the Words) Why not both of them? And then you will be really a *Princess*; for sure, to be a Lady in *English*, and a Countess in *Dutch*, may make a *Princess* in *High-Dutch*. Upon the whole, though *Amy* was in jest, she put the Thought into my Head, and I resolved, *in short*, I would be both of them; which I managed as you shall hear.

First, I seemed to resolve that I would live and settle in *England*, only with this Condition, *namely*, that I would not live in *London*, I pretended it would choak me up; that I wanted Breath when I was in *London*; but that any where else I would be satisfied; and then I asked him, Whether any Sea-Port Town in *England* would not suit him? Because I knew, though he seemed to leave off, he would always love to be among Business, and conversing with Men of Business; and I named several Places, either nearest for Business with *France*, or with *Holland*; as *Dover*, or *Southampton* for the first; and *Ipswich*, or *Tarmouth*, or *Hull*, for the last; but I took care that we would resolve upon nothing; only by this it seemed to be certain that we should live in *England*.

It was Time now to bring Things to a Conclusion, and so in about six Weeks Time more, we settled all our Preliminaries; and among the rest, he let me know, that he should have the Bill for his Naturalization passed Time enough; so that he would be (*as he called it*) an *Englishman*, before we married. That was soon perfected, the Parliament being then sitting, and several other Foreigners joining in the said Bill, to save the Expence.

It was not above three or four Days after, but that, without giving me the least Notice that he had so much as been about the Patent

tent for *Baronet*, he brought it me in a fine embroidered Bag; and saluting me by the Name of my Lady ----- (*joining his own Surname to it*) presented it to me, with his Picture set with Diamonds; and at the same time, gave me a Breast Jewel worth a thousand Pistoles, and the next Morning we were married: Thus I put an End to all the intriguing Part of my Life; as a Life full of prosperous Wickedness; the Reflections upon which, were so much the more afflicting, as the time had been spent in the grossest Crimes, which the more I looked back upon, the more black and horrid they appeared, effectually drinking up all the Comfort and Satisfaction which I might otherwise have taken in that Part of Life which was still before me.

The first Satisfaction, however, that I took in the new Condition I was in, was in reflecting, that at length the Life of Crime was over; and that I was like a Passenger coming back from the *Indies*, who having, after many Years Fatigues and Hurry in Business, gotten a good Estate, with innumerable Difficulties and Hazards, is arrived safe at *London* with all his Effects, and has the Pleasure of saying, he shall never venture upon the Seas any more.

When we were married, we came back immediately to my Lodgings, (*for the Church was but just by*) and we were so privately married, that none but *Amy* and my Friend the QUAKER, was acquainted with it: As soon as we came into the House, he took me in his Arms, and kissing me, *Now you are my Own* says he; O! that you had been so good to have done this eleven Years ago: Then, *said I*, you, perhaps, would have been tired of me long ago; 'tis much better now; for now all our happy Days are to come; besides, *said I*, I should not have been so rich; but that I said to myself, for there was no letting him into the Reason of it: O! *says he*, I should not have been tired of you; but besides having the Satisfaction of your Company, it had saved me that unlucky Blow at *Paris*, which was a dead Loss to me, of above 8000 Pistoles, and all the Fatigues of so many Years Hurry and Business; and then *he added*, but I'll make you pay for it all, now I have you: I started a little at the Words: *Ay*, *said I*, do you threaten already? Pray what do you mean by that? *and began to look a little grave.*

I'll tell you, *says he*, very plainly what I mean, and still he held me fast in his Arms; I intended from this time, never to trouble

trouble myself with any more Business; so I shall never get one Shilling for you, more than I have already; all that you will lose one way; *next*, I intend not to trouble myself with any of the Care or Trouble of managing what either you have for me, or what I have to add to it; but you shall even take it all upon yourself, as the Wives do in *Holland*, so you will pay for it that way too; for all the Drudgery shall be yours; *thirdly*, I intend to condemn you to the constant Bondage of my impertinent Company, for I shall tie you like a Pedlar's Pack, at my Back, I shall scarce ever be from you; for, I am sure, I can take Delight in nothing else in this World: Very well, *says I*, but I am pretty heavy, I hope you will set me down sometimes, when you are weary; as for that, *says he*, tire me if you can.

This was all Jest and Allegory; but it was all true, in the Moral of the Fable, as you shall hear in its Place: We were very merry the rest of the Day, but without any Noise, or Clutter; for he brought not one of his Acquaintance, or Friends, either *English*, or Foreigner: The honest QUAKER provided us a very noble Dinner indeed, considering how few we were to eat it; and every Day that Week she did the like, and would, at last, have it be all at her own Charge, which I was utterly averse to; *first*, because I knew her Circumstances not to be very great, tho' not very low; *and next*, because she had been so true a Friend, and so chearful a Comforter to me, *ay, and Counsellor too*, in all this Affair, that I had resolved to make her a Present, that should be some Help to her when all was over.

But to return to the Circumstances of our Wedding; after being very merry, *as I have told you*, Amy and the QUAKER, put us to Bed, the honest QUAKER little thinking we had been *a-Bed together* eleven Years before; nay, that was a Secret which, *as it happened*, Amy herself did not know: Amy grinn'd, and made Faces, as if she had been pleased; but it came out in so many Words, when he was not by, the Sum of her mumbling and muttering was, that this should have been done ten or a dozen Years before; that it would signify little now; *that was to say, in short*, that her Mistress was pretty near Fifty, and too old to have any Children; I chid her; the QUAKER laugh'd; complimented me upon my not being so old as Amy pretended; that I could not be above Forty,

and might have a Housefull of Children yet; but *Amy* and *I* too, knew better than she how it was; for, *in short*, *I* was old enough to have done breeding, however *I* looked; but *I* made her hold her Tongue.

In the Morning my *Quaker* Landlady came and visited us, before we were up, and made us eat Cakes and drink Chocolate in Bed; and then left us again, and bid us take a Nap upon it, which *I* believe we did, in short, she treated us so handsomely, and with such an agreeable Chearfulness, as well as Plenty, as made it appear to me, that *Quakers* may, and that this *Quaker* did, understand good Manners, as well as any other People.

I resisted her Offer, however, of treating us for the whole Week; and *I* opposed it so long, that *I* saw evidently that she took it ill, and would have thought herself slighted, if we had not accepted it; so *I* said no more, but let her go on, only told her, *I* would be even with her, and so *I* was. However, for that Week she treated us, as she said she would, and did it so very fine, and with such a Profusion of all Sorts of good Things, that the greatest Burthen to her was, how to dispose of Things that were left; for she never let any thing, how dainty, or however large, be so much as seen twice among us.

I had some Servants indeed, which helped her off a little; that is to say, two Maids, for *Amy* was now a Woman of Business, not a Servant, and eat always with us; *I* had also a Coachman, and a Boy; my *Quaker* had a Man Servant too, but had but one Maid; but she borrowed two more of some of her Friends, for the Occasion; and had a Man-Cook for dressing the Victuals.

She was only at a loss for Plate, which she gave me a whisper of; and *I* made *Amy* fetch a large strong Box, which *I* had lodged in a safe Hand, in which was all the fine Plate which *I* had provided on a worse Occasion, as is mentioned before; and *I* put it into the *Quaker's* Hand, obliging her not to use it as mine, but as her own, for a Reason *I* shall mention presently.

I was now my Lady — — and *I* must own *I* was exceedingly pleased with it; it was so Big, and so Great, to hear myself called *Her Ladyship*, and *Your Ladyship*, and the like; that *I* was like the *Indian King* at *Virginia*, who having a House built for him by the *English*, and a Lock put upon the Door, would sit whole Days together, with the Key in his Hand, locking and unlocking, and double-locking.

locking the Door, with an unaccountable Pleasure at the Novelty ; so I could have sat a whole Day together, to hear Amy talk to me, and call me *Your Ladyship* at every Word ; but after a while the Novelty wore off, and the Pride of it abated ; till at last, truly, I wanted the other Title as much as I did that of *Ladyship* before.

We lived this Week in all the innocent Mirth imaginable ; and our good humour'd *Quaker* was so pleasant in her Way, that it was particularly entertaining to us. We had no Musick at all, or Dancing ; only I now and then sung a *French Song* to divert my Spouse, who desired it, and the Privacy of the Mirth, greatly added to the Pleasure of it. I did not make many Cloaths for my Wedding, having always a great many rich Cloaths by me, which with a little altering for the Fashion, were perfectly new. The next Day he pressed me to dress, though we had no Company ; at last, jesting with him, I told him, I believed I was able to dress me so, in one kind of Dress that I had by me, that he would not know his Wife when he saw her, especially if any body else was by. *No!* he said, *that was impossible* ; and he longed to see that Dress ; I told him, I would dress me in it, if he would promise me never to desire me to appear in it before Company ; he promised he would not, but wanted to know *why* too ; as Husbands, you know, are inquisitive Creatures, and love to enquire after any thing they think is kept from them ; but I had an Answer ready for him ; because, *said I*, it is not a decent Dress in this Country, and would not look modest ; neither indeed would it, for it was but one Degree off from appearing in one's Shift ; but is the usual Wear in the Country where they are used. He was satisfied with my Answer, and gave me his Promise, never to ask me to be seen in it before Company. I then withdrew, taking only Amy and the *Quaker* with me ; and Amy dressed me in my old *Turkish Habit* which I danced in formerly, &c. *as before*. The *Quaker* was charmed with the Dress, and merrily said, That if such a Dress should come to be worn here, she should not know what to do ; she should be tempted not to dress in the *Quaker's Way* any more.

When all the Dress was put on, I loaded it with Jewels, and in particular, I placed the large Breast-Jewel which he had given me, worth a thousand Pistoles, upon the Front of the *Tybaia*, or Head-Dress ; where it made a most glorious Show indeed ; I had my own
Dia-

Diamond-Necklace on, and my Hair was *Tout Brilliant*, all glittering with Jewels.

His Picture set with Diamonds, I had placed stich'd to my Vest, just, *as might be supposed*, upon my Heart, (which is the Compliment in such Cases among the *Eastern People*) and all being open at the Breast, there was no room for any Jewels there: In this Figure, *Amy* holding the Train of my Robe, I came down to him: He was surprized, and perfectly astonished; he knew me, *to be sure*, because I had prepared him, and because there was no-body else there, but the *Quaker* and *Amy*; but he by no means knew *Amy*; for she had dress'd herself in the Habit of a *Turkish Slave*, being the Garb of my *little Turk*, which I had at *Naples*, *as I have said*; she had her Neck and Arms bare; was bare-headed, and her Hair breeded in a long Tossel hanging down her Back; but the Jade could neither hold her Countenance, or her chattering Tongue, so as to be concealed long.

Well, he was so charmed with this Dress, that he would have me sit and dine in it: but it was so thin, and so open before, and the Weather being sharp, that I was afraid of taking Cold; however, the Fire being enlarged, and the Doors kept shut, I sat to oblige him? and he profess'd, he never saw so fine a Dress in his Life: I afterwards told him that my Husband (so he called the Jeweller that was kill'd) bought it for me at *Leghorn*, with a young *Turkish Slave*, which I parted with at *Paris*; and that it was by the help of that Slave that I learned how to dress in it, and how every thing was to be worn, and many of the *Turkish Customs* also, with some of their Language; this Story agreeing with the Fact, only changing the Person, was very natural, and so it went off with him; but there was a good Reason why I should not receive any Company in this Dress, *that is to say, not in England*: I need not relate it; you will hear more of it.

But when I came Abroad, I frequently put it on, and upon two or three Occasions danced in it; but always at his Request.

We continued at the *Quaker's* Lodging for above a Year; for now making as though it was difficult to determine where to settle in *England* to his Satisfaction, unless in *London*, which was not to mine; I pretended to make him an Offer, that to oblige him, I began to incline to go and live Abroad with him; that I knew
nothing

nothing could be more agreeable to him, and that as to me, every Place was alike; that as I had lived Abroad without a Husband so many Years, it could be no Burthen to me to live Abroad again, *especially with him*; then we fell to straining our Courtesies upon one another; he told me, he was perfectly easy at living in *England*, and had squered all his Affairs accordingly; for that, as he had told me he intended to give over all Business in the World, as well the Care of managing it, as the Concern about it, seeing we were both in Condition, neither to want it, or to have it be worth our while; so I might see it was his Intention, by his getting himself Naturalized, and getting the Patent of Baronet, &c. Well, for all that, I told him, I accepted his Compliment, but I could not but know that his Native Country, where his Children were breeding up, must be most agreeable to him, and that if I was of such Value to him, I would be there then, to enhance the rate of his Satisfaction; that where-ever he was would be a Home to me; and any Place in the World would be *England* to me, if he was with me; and thus, *in short*, I brought him to give me leave to oblige him with going to live Abroad; when in truth, I could not have been perfectly easy at living in *England*, unless I had kept constantly within-doors; lest some Time or other, the dissolute Life I had lived here, should have come to be known; and all those wicked Things have been known too, which I now began to be very much ashamed of.

When we closed up our Wedding-Week, in which our *Quaker* had been so very handsome to us, I told him how much I thought we were obliged to her for her generous Carriage to us; how she had acted the kindest Part through the whole, and how faithful a Friend she had been to me, upon all Occasions: and then letting him know a little of her Family Unhappineses, I proposed, that I thought I not only ought to be grateful to her, but really to do something extraordinary for her, towards making her easy in her Affairs; and I added, that I had no hangers-on, that should trouble him; that there was nobody belonged to me but what was thoroughly provided for; and that if I did something for this honest Woman, that was considerable, it should be the last Gift I would give to any-body in the World, *but Amy*; and as for her, I was not a going to turn her adrift, but if any thing offered for her, I should do as I saw Cause; that *in the mean Time*, Amy was not poor; that she had

saved together about seven or eight Hundred Pounds; *by the way I did not tell him how, and by what wicked Ways she had got it; but that she had it; and that was enough to satisfy him she would never be in want of us.*

My Spouse was exceedingly pleased with my Discourse about the Quaker, made a kind of a Speech to me upon the Subject of Gratitude; *told me, it was one of the brightest Parts of a Gentlewoman; that it was so twined with Honesty, nay, and even with Religion too, that he questioned whether either of them could be found where Gratitude was not to be found; that in this Act there was not only Gratitude, but Charity; and that to make the Charity still more Christian-like, the Object too had real Merit to attract it; he therefore agreed to the Thing with all his Heart, only would have had me let him pay it out of his Effects.*

I told him, *as for that, I did not design, whatever I had said formerly, that we should have two Pockets; and that though I had talked to him of being a Free Woman, and an Independant, and the like, and he had offered and promised, that I should keep all my Estate in my own Hands; yet, that since I had taken him, I would even do as other honest Wives did, where I thought fit to give myself; I should give what I had too; that if I reserved any thing, it should be only in case of Mortality, and that I might give it to his Children afterwards, as my own Gift; and that, in short, if he thought fit to join Stocks, we would see to Morrow Morning, what Strength we could both make up in the World, and bringing it all together, consider before we resolved upon the Place of removing, how we should dispose of what we had, as well as of ourselves.* This Discourse was too obliging, and he too much a Man of Sense, not to receive it as it was meant; *he only answered, We would do in that as we should both agree; but the Thing under our present Care, was to shew not Gratitude only, but Charity and Affection too, to our kind Friend the Quaker; and the first Word he spoke of, was to settle a Thousand Pounds upon her, for her Life; that is to say, sixty Pounds a Year; but in such a Manner, as not to be in the Power of any Person to reach, but herself.* This was a great Thing, and indeed, shewed the generous Principles of my Husband, and for that Reason I mention it; but I thought that a little too much too, and particularly, because I had another Thing in View for

for her, about the Pale ; so I told him I thought if he gave her a Purse with a Hundred Guineas as a Present *first*, and then made her a Complement of 40 l. *p. r. Annum* for her Life, secur'd any such Way as she shou'd desire, it wou'd be very handsome.

He agreed to that ; and the same Day, in the Evening, when we were just going to-Bed, he took my *Quaker* by the Hand, and with a Kiss, told her, That we had been very kindly treated by her from the beginning of this Affair, and his Wife before, as she, (*meaning me*) had inform'd him ; and that he thought himself bound to let her see, that she had oblig'd Friends who knew how to be grateful ; that for his Part of the Obligation, he desir'd she wou'd accept of *that*, for an Acknowledgment in Part only, (*putting the Gold in her Hand*) and that his Wife wou'd talk with her about what farther he had to say to her ; and upon that, not giving her time hardly to say *thank ye*, away he went up-Stairs, into our Bed-Chamber, leaving her confus'd, and not knowing what to say.

When he was gone, she began to make very handsome and obliging Representations of her Good-will to us both, but that it was without Expectation of Reward ; that I had given her several valuable Presents before, *and so indeed I had* ; for, besides the Piece of Linnen which I had given her *at first*, I had given her a Suit of Damask Table-Linnen, of the Linnen I bought for my Balls, *viz.* Three Table-cloths, and three Dozen of Napkins ; and at another time, I gave her a little Necklace of Gold Beads, *and the like* ; but that is *by the way* ; but she mention'd them, *I say* ; and how she was oblig'd by me, on many other Occasions ; that she was not in Condition to show her Gratitude any other way, not being able to make a suitable Return ; and that now we took from her all Opportunity to ballance my former Friendship, and left her more in Debt than she was before : She spoke this in a very good kind of a Manner, *in her own way*, but which was very agreeable indeed, and had as much apparent Sincerity, and I verily believe as real, as was possible to be express'd ; but I put a Stop to it, and bid her say no more, but accept of what my Spouse had given her, which was but in Part, as she had heard him say ; and *put it up*, says I, *and come and sit down here and give me Leave to say something else to you, on the same Head, which my Spouse and I have settled between ourselves, in your Behalf* : What dost Thee mean, says she ?
and

and blush'd, and look'd surpriz'd, but did not stir; she was going to speak again, but I interrupted her, and told her, she shou'd make no more Apologies of any-kind whatever, for I had better things than all this, to talk to her of; so I went on, and told her, That as she had been so friendly and kind to us on every Occasion; and that her House was the lucky Place where we came together; and that she knew I was from her own Mouth acquainted in Part, with her Circumstances, we were resolv'd she shou'd be the better for us, as long as she liv'd: Then I told her what we had resolv'd to do for her; and that she had nothing more to do, but to consult with me, how it shou'd be effectually secur'd for her, distinct from any of the Effects which were her Husband's; and that if her Husband did so supply her, that she cou'd live comfortably, and not want it for Bread, or other Necessaries, she shou'd not make Use of it, but lay up the Income of it, and add it every Year to the Principal, so to encrease the Annual Payment, which in time, and perhaps before she might come to want it, might double itself; that we were very willing whatever she shou'd so lay up, shou'd be to herself, and whoever she thought fit after her; but that the forty Pound a-Year, must return to our Family, after her Life; which we both wish'd might be long and happy.

Let no Reader wonder at my extraordinary Concern for this poor Woman; or at my giving my Bounty to her a Place in this Account; it is not *I assure you*, to make a Pageantry of my Charity, or to value myself upon the Greatness of my Soul, that shou'd give in so profuse a Manner as this, which was above my Figure, if my Wealth had been twice as much as it was; but there was another Spring from whence all flow'd, and 'tis on that Account I speak of it: Was it possible I cou'd think of a poor desolate Woman with four Children, and her Husband gone from her, *and perhaps good for little if he had stay'd*; I say, was I, that had tasted so deep of the Sorrows of such a kind of Widowhood, able to look on her, and think of her Circumstances, and not be touch'd in an uncommon Manner? No, No, I never look'd on her, and her Family, tho' she was not left so helpless and friendless as I had been, without remembering my own Condition; when *Ann* was sent out to pawn or sell my *Pair of Stays*, to buy a Breast of Mutton, and a Bunch of Turnips; nor cou'd I look on her poor Children, tho'

not

not poor and perishing, like mine, without Tears; reflecting on the dreadful Condition that mine were reduc'd to, when poor *Amy* sent them all to her Aunt's in *Spittle-Fields*, and run away from them: These were the Original Springs, or Fountain-Head, from whence my Affectionate Thoughts were mov'd to assist this poor Woman.

When a poor Debtor, having lain long in the *Compter*, or *Ludgate*, on the *King's-Bench*, for Debt, afterwards gets out, rises again in the World, and grows rich; such an one is a certain Benefactor to the Prisoners there, and perhaps to every Prison he passes by, as long as he lives; for he remembers the dark Days of his own Sorrow; and even those who never had the Experience of such Sorrows to stir up their Minds to Acts of Charity, would have the same charitable good Disposition, did they as sensibly remember what it is, that distinguishes them from others, by a more favourable and merciful Providence.

This, *I say*, was however, the Spring of my Concern for this honest friendly and grateful *Quaker*, and as I had so plentiful a Fortune in the World, I resolv'd she should taste the Fruit of her kind Usage to me, in a manner that she could not expect.

All the while I talk'd to her, I saw the Disorder of her Mind; the sudden Joy was too much for her, and she colour'd, trembled, chang'd, and at last grew pale, and was indeed near fainting; when she hastily rung a little Bell for her Maid, who coming in immediately, she beckon'd to her, for *she cou'd not*, to fill her a Glass of Wine, but she had no Breath to take it in, and was almost choak'd with that which she took in her Mouth; I saw she was ill, and assist'd her what I cou'd, and with Spirits and things to smell too, just kept her from Fainting, when she beckon'd to her Maid to withdraw, and immediately burst out in crying, and that relieved her; when she recovered herself a little, she flew to me, and throwing her Arms about my Neck, *O! says she, thou hast almost kill'd me*; and there she hung, laying her Head in my Neck for half a quarter of an Hour, not able to speak, but sobbing like a Child that had been whipp'd.

I was very sorry, that I did not stop a little, in the middle of my Discourse, and make her drink a Glass of Wine, before it had put

her Spirits into such a violent Motion; but it was too late, and ten to one odds, but that it had kill'd her.

But she came to herself at last, and began to say some very good Things in return for my Kindness; I would not let her go on, but told her, I had more to say to her still than all this, but that I would let it alone till another Time; my meaning was about the Box of Plate, good Part of which I gave her, and some I gave to *Amy*; for I had so much Plate, and some so large, that I thought if I let my Husband see it, he might be apt to wonder what Occasion I could ever have for so much, and for Plate of such a Kind too; as particularly, a great Cistern for Bottles, which cost a hundred and twenty Pounds, and some large Candlesticks, too big for any ordinary Use. These I caused *Amy* to sell; and in short, *Amy* sold above three hundred Pounds worth of Plate; what I gave the *Quaker* was worth above sixty Pounds, and I gave *Amy* above thirty Pounds worth, and yet I had a great deal left for my Husband.

Nor did our Kindness to the *Quaker* end with the forty Pounds a Year, for we were always, while we stay'd with her, which was above ten Months, giving her one good thing or another; and, in short, instead of Lodging with her, she Boarded with us, for I kept the House and she and all her Family eat and drank with us, and yet we paid her the Rent of the House too; in short, I remember'd my *Widowhood*, and I made this Widow's Heart glad many a Day the more, upon that Account.

And now my Spouse and I began to think of going over to *Holland*, where I had propos'd to live, and in order to settle all the Preliminaries of our future Manner of Living, I began to draw in my Effects, so as to have them all at Command, upon whatever Occasion we thought fit; after which, one Morning I call'd my Spouse up to me; hark ye, said I to him, I have two very weighty Questions to ask of you; I don't know what Answer you will give to the first, but I doubt you will be able to give but a sorry Answer to the other, and yet, I assure you, it is of the last Importance to yourself, and towards the future of your Life, wherever it is to be.

He did not seem to be much alarm'd, because he could see I was speaking in a kind of merry way, Let's hear your Questions, my

my Dear *says he*, and I'll give the best Answer I can to them:
Why first, *says I*,

First, you have marry'd a Wife here, made her a *Lady*, and put her in Expectation of being something else still, when she comes Abroad; pray have you examin'd whether you are able to supply all her extravagant Demands when she comes Abroad; and maintain an expensive *Engliswoman* in all her Pride, and Vanity? In short, have you enquir'd whether you are able to keep her?

Second, You have marry'd a Wife here, and given her a great many fine things, and you maintain her like a *Princess*, and sometimes call her so; pray what Portion have you had with her? what Fortune has she been to you? and where does her Estate lie, that you keep her so fine? I am afraid you keep her in a Figure a great-deal above her Estate, at least above all that you have seen of it yet; you are sure you han't got a *Bite*? and that you have not made a Beggar a *Lady*?

Well, *says he*, have you any more Questions to ask? let's have them all together, perhaps they may be all answer'd in a few Words, as well as these two: No, *says I*, these are the two grand Questions, at least, for the present: Why then, *says he*, I'll answer you in a few Words, That I am fully Master of my own Circumstances, and without farther Enquiry, can let my Wife you speak of, know, that as I have made her a *Lady*, I can maintain her as a *Lady* wherever she goes with me; and this, whether I have one Pistole of her Portion, or whether she has any Portion, or no: And as I have not enquir'd whether she has any Portion or not, so she shall not have the less Respect shew'd her from me, or be oblig'd to live meaner, or be any ways straiten'd on that Account; on the contrary, if she goes Abroad to live with me in my Country, I will make her more than a *Lady* and support the Expence of it too, without meddling with any thing she has; and this I suppose, *says he*, contains an Answer to both your Questions together.

He spoke this with a great deal more Earnestness in his Countenance, than I had when I propos'd my Questions; and said a great many kind things upon it, as the Consequence of former

Dis-

Discourses so that *I* was oblig'd to be in earnest too; My Dear, says *I*, *I* was but in jest in my Questions; but they were propos'd to introduce what *I* am going to say to you in earnest; namely, that *I* am to go Abroad, 'tis time *I* shou'd let you know how things stand, and what *I* have to bring you with your Wife; how it is to be dispos'd, and secur'd, *and the like*, and therefore come says *I*, sit down, and let me show you your Bargain here; *I* hope you will find, that you have not got a Wife without a Fortune.

He told me then, that since he found *I* was in earnest, he desir'd *I* would adjourn it till to Morrow, and then we would do as the poor People do after they Marry, feel in their Pockets; and see how much Money they can bring together in the World. Well, says *I*, with all my Heart; and so we ended our Talk for that Time.

As this was in the Morning, my Spouse went out after Dinner to his Goldsmith's, *as he said*, and about three Hours after, returns with a Porter and two large Boxes with him; his Servant brought another Box, which *I* observed was almost as heavy as the two the Porter brought, and made the poor Fellow sweat heartily; he dismissed the Porter, and in a little while after, went out again with his Man, and returning at Night, brought another Porter with more Boxes and Bundles, and all was carried up, and put into a Chamber next to our Bed-Chamber, and in the Morning he called for a pretty large round Table, and began to unpack.

When the Boxes were opened, *I* found they were chiefly full of Books and Papers, and Parchments; *I mean*, Books of Accompts, and Writings, *and such Things*, as were in themselves of no moment to me, because *I* understood them not; but *I* perceived he took them all out, and spread them about him upon the Table and Chairs, and began to be very busy with them; so *I* withdrew, and left him; and he was indeed so busy among them that he never missed me, till *I* had been gone a good while; but when he had gone through all his Papers, and come to open a little Box, he called for me again: Now, says he, and called me his Countess, *I* am ready to answer your first Question; if you will sit down till *I* have opened this Box, we will see how it stands.

So he opened the Box; there was in it indeed what *I* did not expect, for *I* thought he had sunk his Estate, rather than raised it; but he produced me, in Goldsmiths Bills, and Stock in the *English East-*

East-India Company, about sixteen thousand Pounds Sterling; then he gave into my Hands, nine Assignments upon the Bank of *Lyons* in *France*, and two upon the Rents of the Town-house in *Paris*, amounting in the whole to 5800 Crowns *per Annum*, or annual Rent, *as 'tis call'd there*; and lastly, the Sum of 30000 *Rixdollars* in the Bank of *Amsterdam*; besides some Jewels and Gold in the Box, to the Value of about 15 or 1600 *l.* among which was a very good Necklace of Pearl, of about 200 *l.* Value; and that he pull'd out, and ty'd about my Neck; telling me, That shou'd not be reckon'd into the Account.

I was equally pleas'd and surpriz'd; and it was with an inexpressible Joy, that I saw him so rich: You might well tell me, *said I*, that you were able to make me *Countess*, and maintain me as such: *In short*, he was immensely rich; for besides all this, he shew'd me, which was the Reason of his being so busy among the Books, *I say*, he shew'd me several Adventures he had Abroad, in the Business of his Merchandize; as particularly, an eighth Share in an *East-India* Ship then Abroad; an Account-Courant with a Merchant, at *Cadix* in *Spain*; about 3000 *l.* lent upon *Bottomree*, upon Ships gone to the *Indies*; and a large Cargo of Goods in a Merchant's Hands, for Sale, at *Lisbon* in *Portugal*; so that in his Books there was about 12000 *l.* more; all which put together, made about 27000 *l.* and about 1320 *l.* a Year.

I stood amaz'd at this Account, *as well I might*, and said nothing to him for a good-while, and the rather, because I saw him still busy, looking over his Books: After a-while, as I was going to express my Wonder; *Hold, my Dear, says he*, this is not all neither; then he pull'd me out some old Seals, and small Parchment-Rolls, which I did not understand; *but he told me*, they were a Right of Reversion which he had to a Paternal Estate in his Family, and a Mortgage of 14000 *Rixdollars*, which he had upon it, in the Hands of the present Possessor; so that was about 3000 *l.* more.

But now hold again, *says he*, for I must pay my Debts out of all this, and they are very great, *I assure you*; and the first, *he said*, was a black Article of 8000 Pistoles, which he had a Law-Suit about, at *Paris*, but had it awarded against him, which was the Loss he had told me of, and which made him leave *Paris* in Disgust; that in other Accounts he ow'd about 3500 *l.* Sterling; but after

all this, upon the whole, he had still 17000*l.* clear Stock in Money, and 1320*l.* 3-Year in Rent.

After some Pause, it came to my Turn to speak; Well, *says I*, 'tis very hard a Gentleman with such a Fortune as this, shou'd come over to *England*; and marry a Wife with *Nothing*; it shall never, *says I*, be said, but what I have, I'll bring into the Publick Stock; so I began to produce.

First, I pulled out the Mortgage which good Sir Robert had procured for me, the annual Rent 700*l.* *per Annum*; the principal Money 14000*l.*

Secondly, I pull'd out another Mortgage upon Land, procured by the same faithful Friend, which at three times, had advanced 12000*l.*

Thirdly, I pulled him out a Parcel of little Securities, procured by several Hands, by Fee-Farm Rents, and such Petty Mortgages as those Times afforded, amounting to 10800*l.* principal Money, and paying six hundred and thirty six Pounds a-Year; so that in the whole, there was two thousand fifty-six Pounds a-Year, Ready-Money, constantly coming in.

When I had shewn him all these, I laid them upon the Table, and bade him take them, that he might be able to give me an Answer to the second *Question*, viz. *What Fortune he had with his Wife?* and laugh'd a little at it.

He looked at them awhile, and then handed them all back to me; I will not touch them, *says he*, not one of them, till they are all settled in Trustees Hands for your own Use, and the Management wholly your own.

I cannot omit what happened to me while all this was acting, though it was chearful Work in the main, yet I trembled every Joint of me, worse for ought I know, than ever *Belshazar* did at the Hand-Writing on the Wall, and the Occasion was every Way as Just. Unhappy Wretch, *said I to myself*, shall my ill-got Wealth, the Product of *prosperous Lust*, and of a vile and vicious Life of *Whoredom and Adultery*, be intermingled with the honest well-gotten Estate of this innocent Gentleman, to be a Moth and a Catterpillar among it, and bring the Judgments of Heaven upon him, and upon what he has, for my sake! Shall my Wickedness blast his Comforts! Shall I be *Fire in his Flax!* and be a Means to provoke
Heaven

Heaven to curse his Blessings! *God forbid!* I'll keep them afunder if it be possible.

This is the true Reason why I have been so particular in the Account of my vast acquired Stock; and how his Estate, which was perhaps, the Product of many Years fortunate Industry; and which was equal, if not superior, to mine, at best, was *at my Request*, kept apart from mine, *as it mention'd above*.

I have told you how he gave back all my Writings into my own Hands again: *Well says I*, seeing you will have it be kept apart, *it shall be so*, upon one Condition, which I have to propose, and no other; and what is the Condition, *says he?* why, *says I*, all the Pretence I can have for the making-over my own Estate to me, is, that in Case of your Mortallity, I may have it reserv'd for me, if I out-live you; well, *says he*, that is true: But then, said I, the Annual Income is always receiv'd by the Husband, during his Life, as 'tis suppos'd for the mutual Subsistence of the Family; now, *says I*, here is 2000 *l.* a Year, which I believe is as much as we shall spend; and I desire none of it may be sav'd; and all the Income of your own Estate, the Interest of the 17000 *l.* and the 1320 *l.* a Year may be constantly laid by for the Encrease of your Estate, and so *added I*, by joining the Interest every Year to the Capital, you will perhaps grow as rich as you would do, if you were to Trade with it all, if you were oblig'd to keep House out of it too.

He lik'd the Proposal very well, and said it should be so; and this way I, in some Measure, satisfied myself, that I should not bring my Husband under the blast of a just Providence, for mingling my cursed ill-gotten Wealth with his honest Estate: This was occasion'd by the Reflections which at some certain Intervals of time, came into my Thoughts, of the Justice of Heaven, which I had reason to expect would sometime or other still fall upon me or my Effects, for the dreadful Life I had liv'd.

And let no-body conclude from the strange Success I met with in all my wicked Doings, and the vast Estate which I had rais'd by it, that therefore I either was happy or easie: No, no, there was a Dart struck in the Liver; there was a secret Hell within, even all the while, when our Joy was at the highest; but more especially *now*, after it was all over, and when according to all appearance,

pearance, I was one of the happiest Women upon Earth ; all this while, I say, I had such a constant Terror upon my Mind, as gave me every now and then very terrible Shocks, and which made me expect somomething very frightful upon every Accident of Life.

In a word, it never Lightn'd or Thunder'd, but I expected the next Flash wou'd penetrate my Vitals, and melt the Sword [*Soul*] in this Scabbord of Flesh; it never blew a Storm of Wind, but I expected the fall of some Part of the House wou'd bury me in its Ruins; and so of other things.

But I shall perhaps, have Occasion to speak of all these things by-and-by; the Case before us was in a manner settled; we had full four thousand Pounds *per Annum* for our future Subsistence, besides a vast Sum in Jewels and Plate; and besides this, I had about eight thousand Pounds reserv'd in Money, which I kept back from him, to provide for my two Daughters; of whom I have yet much to say.

With this Estate, settled as you have heard, and with the best Husband in the World, I left *England* again; I had not only in humane Prudence, and by the Nature of the thing, being now settled in so glorious a Manner, I say I had not only abandoned all the gay and wicked Course which I had gone thorough before, but I began to look back upon it with that Horror, and that Detestation, which is the certain Companion, if not the Forerunner, of Repentance.

Sometimes the Wonders of my present Circumstances wou'd work upon me, and I shou'd have some Raptures upon my Soul, upon the Subject of my coming so smoothly out of the Arms of Hell, that I was not ingulph'd in Ruin, as most who lead such Lives are, first or last; but this was a Flight too hard for me; I was not come to that Repentance that it raised from a Scene of Heaven's Goodness; I repented of the Crime, but it was of another and lower kind of Repentance, and rather moved by my Fears of Vengeance, than from a Sense of being spared from being punished, and landed safe after a Storm.

The first thing which happened after our coming to the *Hague*, (where we lodged for a while) was, that my Spouse saluted me one Morning with the Title of *Countess*; as he said he intended

to do, by having the Inheritance to which the Honour was annex'd, made over to him; it is true, it was a Reversion, but it soon fell, and in the mean time, as all the Brothers of a Count are call'd Counts, so I had the Title of Countess, about three Years before I had it in reality.

I was agreeably surpriz'd at his coming so soon, and wou'd have had my Spouse have taken the Money which it cost him, out of my Stock, but he laugh'd at me, and went on.

I was now in the height of my Glory and Prosperity, and I was call'd the *Countess de* —; for I had obtain'd that unlook'd for, which I secretly aim'd at, and was really the main Reason of my coming Abroad: I took now more Servants; liv'd in a kind of Magnificence that I had not been acquainted with; was call'd *Your Honour* at every word, and had a *Coroner* behind my Coach; tho' at the same time I knew nothing of my new Pedigree.

The first thing that my Spouse took upon him to manage, was to declare ourselves marry'd eleven Years before our arriving in *Holland*; and consequently to acknowledge our little Son, who was yet in *England*, to be legitimate; order him to be brought over, and adden to his Family, and acknowledge him to be our own.

This was done by giving Notice to his People at *Nimeguen*, where his Children (which were two Sons and a Daughter) were brought up; that he was come over from *England*; and that he was arriv'd at the *Hague*, with his Wife, and shou'd reside there some time; and that he wou'd have his two Sons brought down to see him, which was accordingly done, and where I entertain'd them with all the Kindness and Tendernefs that they cou'd expect from their Mother-in-Law; and who pretended to be so ever since they were two or three Years old.

This, supposing as to have been so long marry'd, was not difficult at all, in a Country where we had been seen together about that time, viz. eleven Years and a half before; and where we had never been seen afterwards, till we now return'd together; this being seen together, was also openly own'd, and acknowledged of course, by our Friend, the Merchant at *Rotterdam*; and also by the People in the House where we both lodged, in the same City, and where our first Intimacies began, and who, as it

happened, were all alive; and therefore, to make it the more publick, we made a Tour to *Rotterdam* again, lodged in the same House, and was visited there by our Friend, the Merchant; and afterwards visited frequently to his House, where he treated us very handsomely.

This Conduct of my Spouse, and which he managed very cleverly, was indeed, a Testimony of a wonderful Degree of Honesty and Affection to our little Son; for it was done purely for the sake of the Child.

I call it an honest Affection, because it was from a Principle of Honesty that he so earnestly concerned himself, to prevent the Scandal which would otherwise have fallen upon the Child, *who was itself Innocent*; and as it was from this Principle of Justice that he so earnestly solicited me, and conjured me by the natural Affections of a Mother, to marry him, when it was yet young within me, and unborn, that the Child might not suffer for the Sin of its Father and Mother; so tho' at the same time, he really loved me very well, yet I had reason to believe, that it was from this Principle of Justice to the Child, that he came to *England* again to seek me, with design to marry me, and, *as he call'd it*, save the innocent Lamb from an Infamy worse than Death.

It is with a just Reproach to myself, that I must repeat it again, that I had not the same Concern for it, tho' it was the Child of my own Body; nor had I ever the hearty affectionate Love to the Child as he had; what the reason of it was, I cannot tell; and indeed, I had shewn a general Neglect of the Child, thro' all the gay Years of my *London* Revels; except that I sent *Amy* to look upon it now and then, and to pay for its Nursing; as for me, I scarce saw it four times in the first four Years of its Life, and often wished it would go quietly out of the World; whereas a Son which I had by the Jeweller, I took a different Care of, and shew'd a different Concern for, tho' I did not let him know me; for I provided very well for him; had him put out very well to School; and when he came to Years fit for it, let him go over with a Person of Honest and good Business, to the *Indies*; and after he had lived there some time, and began to act for himself, sent him over the Value of 2000 *l.* at several times, with which

he

he traded, and grew rich; and, *as 'tis to be hop'd*, may at last come over again with forty or fifty Thousand Pounds in his Pocket, as many who do who have not such Encouragement at their Beginning.

I also sent him over a Wife; a beautiful young Lady, well-bred, an exceeding good-natur'd pleasant Creature; but the nice young Fellow did not like her, and had the Impudence to write to me, *about is, to the Person I employ'd to correspond with him*, to send him another; and promis'd, that he would marry her I sent him, to a Friend of his, who liked her better than he did; but I took it so ill, that I would not send him another, and withal, stopp'd another Article of 1000*l*. which I had appointed to send him: He considered of it afterwards, and offered to take her; but then truly she took so ill the first Affront he put upon her that she would not have him, and I felt him word, I thought she was very much in the right: However, after courting her two Years, and some Friends interposing, she took him, and made him an excellent Wife, as I knew she would; but I never sent him the thousand Pound Cargo, so that he lost that Money for misusing me, and took the Lady at last without it.

My new Spouse and I, lived a very regular contemplative Life, and in itself certainly a Life fill'd with all humane Felicity: But if I looked upon my present Situation with Satisfaction, as I certainly did, so in Proportion I on all Occasions look'd back on former Things with Detestations, and with the utmost Affliction; and now indeed, and not till now, those Reflections began to prey upon my Comforts, and lessen the Sweets of my other Enjoyments: They might have been said to have gnaw'd a Hole in my Heart before; but now they made a Hole quite thro' it; now they eat into all my pleasant things; made bitter every Sweet, and mix'd my Sighs with every Smile.

Not all the Affluence of a plentiful Fortune; not a hundred Thousand Pounds Estate; (for between us we had little less) not Honour and Titles, Attendants and Equipages; *in a word*, not all the Things we call Pleasure, could give me any relish, or sweeten the Taste of Things to me; *at least*, not so much, but I grew sad, heavy, openive, and melancholly; slept little, and eat little; dreamed continually of the most frightful and terrible Things imaginable:.

imaginable Nothing but Apparitions of Devils and Monsters; falling into Gulphs, and Toss from steep and high Precipices, and the like; so that in the Morning, when I should rise, and be refreshed with the Blessing of Rest, I was *Hagridden* with Frights, and terrible Things, formed meerly in the Imagination; and was either stir'd, and wanted Sleep, or over-run with Vapours, and not fit for conversing with my Family, or any-one else.

My Husband the tenderest Creature in the World, and particularly so to me, was in great Concern for me; and did every thing that lay in his Power, to comfort and restore me; strove to reason me out of it; then tried all the Ways possible to divert me; but it was all to no purpose, or to but very little.

My only Relief was sometimes to unbosom myself to poor *Amy*, when she and I was alone; and she did all she could to comfort me; but all was to little Effect there; for tho' *Amy* was the better Penitenc before, when she had been in the Storm; *Amy* was just where she us'd to be, *now*, a wild, gay, loose Wretch; and not much the graver for her Age; for *Amy* was between forty and fifty by this time too.

But to go on with my own Story; as I had no Comforter, so I had no Counsellor; it was well, as I often thought, that I was not a *Roman Catholick*; for what a piece of Work should I have made to have gone to a Priest with such a History as I had to tell him? and what Penance would any *Father Confessor* have oblig'd me to perform? especially if he had been honest and true to his Office.

However, as I had none of the recourse, so I had none of the Absolution, by which the Criminal confessing, goes away comforted; but I went about with a Heart loaded with Crime, and altogether in the dark, as to what I was to do; and in this Condition I languish'd near two Years; I may well call it languishing, for if Providence had not reliev'd me, I shou'd have died in little time: *But of that hereafter.*

I must now go back to another Scene, and join it to this End of my Story, which will compleat all my Concern with *England*, at least, all that I shall bring into this Account. I have hinted at large, what I had done for my two Sons, one at *Messina*, and the other in the *Indies*.

But

But I have not gone thorough the Story of my two Daughters: I was so in danger of being known by one of them, that I durst not see her, so as to let her know who I was; and for the other, I could not well know how to see her, and own her, and let her see me, because she must then know that I would not let her Sister know me, which would look strange; so that upon the whole, I resolved to see neither of them at all; but *Amy* managed all that for me; and when she had made Gentlewomen of them both, by giving them a good though late Education, she had like to have blown up the whole Case, and herself and me too, by an unhappy Discovery of herself to the last of them, *that is*, to her who was our Cookmaid, and who, *as I said before*, *Amy* had been obliged to turn away, for fear of the very Discovery which now happened. I have already observed in what Manner *Amy* managed her by a third Person; and how the Girl, when she was set up for a Lady, *as above*, came and visited *Amy* at my Lodgings; after which *Amy* going, as was her Custom, to see the Girl's Brother (my Son) at the honest Man's House in *Spittle-Fields*; both the Girls were there, merely by Accident, at the same Time, and the other Girl unawares discovered the Secret; *namely*, that this was the Lady that had done all this for them.

Amy was greatly surprized at it, but as she saw there was no Remedy, she made a Jest of it; and so after that, conversed openly, being still satisfied that neither of them could make much of it, as long as they knew nothing of me: So she took them one Time, and told them the History, *as she called it*, of *their Mother*; beginning at the miserable carrying them to their Aunt's; she owned she was not their Mother herself, but described her to them: However, we she said *she was not their Mother*, one of them expressed herself very much surprized, for the Girl had taken up a strong Fancy that *Amy* was really her Mother; and that she had for some particular Reasons, concealed it from her; and therefore when she told her frankly that she was not her Mother, the Girl fell a-crying, and *Amy* had much ado to keep Life in her: This was the Girl who was at first my Cookmaid in *Pallemall*; when *Amy* had brought her too again a little, and she had recovered her first Disorder, *Amy* asked What ailed her? The poor Girl hung about her, and kissed her, and was in such a Passion still, though she was a great

Wench of Nineteen or Twenty Years old, that she could not be brought to speak a great-while; at last, having recovered her Speech, she said still, *But O do not say you an't my Mother! I am sure you are my Mother:* And then the Girl cry'd again like to kill herself. Amy could not tell what to do with her a good-while; she was loth to say again, *she was not her Mother*, because she would not throw her into a Fit of crying again; but she went round about a little with her: *Why Child, said she, Why would you have me be your Mother? If it be because I am so kind to you, be easy, my Dear, said she, I'll be as kind to you still, as if I was your Mother.*

Ay but notwithstanding all that, *says the Girl*, I am sure you are my Mother too; and what have I done that you won't own me, and that you will not be call'd my Mother? Though I am poor, you have made me a Gentlewoman, *says she*, and I won't do any-thing to disgrace you; besides, *adds she*, I can keep a Secret too, especially for my own Mother, sure; then then she calls *Amy* her *Dear Mother*, and hung about her Neck again, crying still vehemently.

This last Part of the Girl's Words alarmed *Amy*, and, *as she told me*, frightened her terribly; nay, she was so confounded with it, that she was not able to govern herself, or to conceal her Disorder from the Girl herself, *as you shall hear:* *Amy* was at a full Stop, and confused to the last Degree; and the Girl a sharp Jade, turn'd it upon her: *My dear Mother, says she*, do not be uneasie about it; I know it all; but do not be uneasie, I won't let my Sister know a Word of it, or my Brother either, without you give me leave; but don't disown me now you have found me; don't hide yourself from me any longer; I cannot bear that, *said she*, it will break my Heart.

I think the Girl's mad, *said Amy*; Why Child, I tell thee, if I was thy Mother I should not disown thee; Don't you see I am as kind to you as if I was your Mother? *Amy* might as well have sung a Song to a Kettle-Drum, as talk to her. Yes, *said the Girl*, you are very good to me indeed; and that was enough to make any-body believe she was her Mother too; but however, that was not the Case, she had other Reasons to believe, and to know that she was her

Mo-

Mother; and it was a sad thing she would not let her call her Mother, who was her own Child.

Amy was so Heartfull with the Disturbance of it, that she did not enter farther with her into the Enquiry, as she would otherwise have done; I mean, as to what made the Girl so positive, but comes away, and tells me the whole Story.

I was Thunder-struck with the Story at first, and much more afterwards, *as you shall bear*; but, *I say*, I was Thunder-struck at first, and amaz'd, and said to Amy, There must be something or other in it more than we know of; but having examin'd farther in it, I found the Girl had no Notion of any-body, but of Amy; and glad I was that I was not concern'd in the Pretence, and that the Girl had no Notion of me in it: But even this Easiness did not continue long, for the next time Amy went to see her, she was the same thing, and rather more violent with Amy than she was before: Amy endeavoured to pacify her by all the ways imaginable; *first*, she told her, she took it ill that she shou'd not believe her; *and told her*, if she would not give over such foolish Whimsy, she would leave her to the wide World, as she found her.

This put the Girl into Fits, and she cry'd ready to kill herself, and hung about Amy again, like a Child: Why, *says Amy*, why can you not be easy with me then, and compose yourself, and let me go on to do you good, and shew you Kindness, as I wou'd do, and as I intend to do? Can you think that if I was your Mother, I would not tell you so? What Whimsy is that possesses your Mind? *says Amy*: Well, the Girl told her in a few Words, but those few such as frightened Amy out of her Wits, and me too: That she knew well enough how it was; I know, *says she*, when you left -----, *meaning the Village*, where I liv'd when my Father went away from us all, that you went over to France, I know that too, and who you went with, *says the Girl*; did not my Lady Roxana come back again with you? I know it all well enough, tho' I was but a Child, I have heard it all. ---- And thus she run on with such Discourse, as put Amy out of all Temper again; and she raved at her like a Bedlam, and *told her*, she would never come near her any more; she might go a-begging again if she would; she'd have nothing to do with her: The Girl, a passionate Wench, *told her*, she knew the worst of it, she could go to Service again, and if she would not own her Child, she

she must do as she pleased; then she fell into a Passion of crying again, as if she would kill herself.

- *In short*, this Girl's Conduct terrified *Amy* to the last Degree, and me too, and was it not that we knew the Girl to be quite wrong in some Things, she nevertheless was so right in some others, that it gave me a great deal of Perplexity; but that which put *Amy* the most to it was, that the Girl (*my Daughter*) told her, that she (*meaning me her Mother*) had gone away with the *Jeweller*, and into *France* too; she did not call him *the Jeweller*, but with the Landlord of the House; who, after her Mother fell into Distress, and that *Amy* had taken all the Children from her, made much of her, and afterwards married her.

In short, it was plain the Girl had but a broken Account of these Things; but yet, that she had some Accounts that had a Reality in the Bottom of them; so that it seems our first Measures, and the Amour with the *Jeweller*, were not so concealed as I thought they had been; and it seems, came in a broken Manner to my Sister-in-Law, who *Amy* carried the Children to, and she made some Bustle it seems about it; but as good luck was, it was too late, and I was removed, and gone none knew whither; or else she would have sent all the Children home to me again, to be sure.

This we picked out of the Girl's Discourse, *that is to say*, *Amy* did at several Times; but it all consisted of broken Fragments of Stories, such as the Girl herself had heard so long ago, that she herself could make very little of it; only that in the main, that her Mother had play'd the Whore; had gone away with the Gentleman that was Landlord of the House; that he married her; that she went into *France*; and as she had learned in my Family, where she was a Servant, that Mrs. *Amy* and her Lady *Roxana* had been in *France* together; so she put all these Things together, and joining them with the great Kindness that *Amy* now shewed her, possessed the Creature that *Amy* was really her Mother; nor was it possible for *Amy* to conquer it for a long Time.

But this, after I had searched into it as far as by *Amy's* relation I could get an Account of it, did not disquiet me half so much, as that the young Slut had got the Name of *Roxana* by the End; and that she knew who her Lady *Roxana* was, *and she like*; though this neither did not hang together, for then she would not have fix-

ed upon *Amy* for her Mother. But some Time after, when *Amy* had almost persuaded her out of it, and that the Girl began to be so confounded in her Discourses of it, that they made neither Head nor Tail; at last, the passionate Creature flew out in a kind of Rage, and said to *Amy*, That if she was not her Mother, *Madam Roxana* was her Mother then, for one of them, *she was sure*, was her Mother; and then all this that *Amy* had done for her, was by *Madam Roxana's* Order; and I am sure, *says she*, it was my Lady *Roxana's* Coach that brought the Gentlewoman (whoever it was) to my Uncle's in *Spittle-Fields*; for the Coachman told me so. *Amy* fell a laughing at her aloud, *as was her usual way*; but as *Amy* told me, it was but on one side of her Mouth, for she was so confounded at her Discourse, that she was ready to sink into the Ground, and so was I too when she told it me.

However, *Amy* brazen'd her out of it all; *told her*, Well, since you think you are so high-born, as to be my Lady *Roxana's* Daughter, you may go to her and claim your Kindred, can't you? I suppose, *says Amy*, you know where to find her? *She said*, she did not question to find her, for she knew where she was gone to live privately; but though she might be removed again, for I know how it is, *said she*, with a kind of a Smile, or a Grin, I know how it all is, well enough.

Amy was so provoked, that she told me, *in short*, she began to think it would be absolutely necessary to murder her. That Expression filled me with Horror; all my Blood ran chill in my Veins, and a Fit of Trembling seized me, that I could not speak a good-while; at last, What is the Devil in you, *Amy*, *said I*? Nay, nay, *said she*, let it be the Devil, or not the Devil, if I thought she knew one tittle of your History, I would dispatch her if she were my own Daughter a thousand Times; and I, *said I in a Rage*, as well as I love you, would be the first that should put the Halter about your Neck, and see you hanged, with more Satisfaction than ever I saw you in my Life; nay, *said I*, you would not live to be hanged, I believe, I should cut your Throat with my own Hand; I am almost ready to do it, *said I*, as 'tis, for your but naming the Thing; with that I called her cursed Devil, and bade her get out of the Room.

I think it was the first Time that ever I was angry with *Amy* in all

all my Life; and when all was done, though she was a devilish Jade in having such a Thought, yet it was all of it the Effect of her Excess of Affection and Fidelity to me.

But this thing gave me a terrible Shock, for it happened just after my being married, and served to hasten my going over to *Holland*; for I would not have been seen, so as to be known by the Name of *Roxana*, no, not for ten thousand Pounds; it might have ruined me to all Intents and Purposes with my Husband, and every body else too; I might as well have been the *German Princess*.

Well, I set Amy to work; and to give her her Due, she set all Wits about to find out which Way this Girl had her Knowledge; but more particularly, how much Knowledge she had; *that is to say*, What she really knew, and what she did not know; for this was the main Thing; how she could say she knew who *Madam Roxana* was, and what Notions she had of that Affair was very mysterious to me; for 'twas certain she could not have a right Notion of me, because she would have it be, that Amy was her Mother.

I scolded heartily at Amy, for letting the Girl ever know her, *that is to say*, in this Affair; for that she knew she could not be hid, because she, *as I might say*, served Amy, or rather under Amy, in my Family, *as is said before*; but she (Amy) talked with her at first by another Person, and not by herself; and that Secret came out by an Accident, *as I have said above*.

Amy was concerned at it as well as I, but could not help it; and though it gave us great Uneasiness, yet as there was no Remedy, it was best to make as little Noise of it as possible, that it might go no farther. I bade Amy punish the Girl for it, *and she did so*, for she parted with her in a Huff, *and told her*, she should see she was not her Mother, for that she could leave her just as she found her; and seeing she could not be content to be served by the Kindness of a Friend, but that she would needs make a Mother or a Friend; so bid her go to Service again, and be a Drudge, as she was before.

The poor Girl cryed most lamentably, but would not be beaten out of it still; but that which Dumfounded Amy more than all the rest, was, that when she had rated the poor Girl a long time, and could not beat her out of it, and had, *as I have observed*, threatened to leave her; the Girl kept to what she said before, and put
this

this Turn to it again; that she was sure, if Amy was not, my Lady Roxana was, her Mother; and that she would go find her out; adding, that she made no doubt but she could do it, for she knew where to enquire the Name of her new Husband.

Amy came home with this Piece of News in her Mouth, to me; I could easily perceive when she came in, that she was mad in her Mind, and in a Rage at something or other, and was in great Pain to get it out; for when she came first in, my Husband was in the Room; however, Amy going up to undress her, I soon made an Excuse to follow her, and coming into the Room, What the Devil is the Matter, *Amy* says *I*; I am sure you have some bad News: News, *says Amy*, aloud, ay, so I have; I think the Devil is in that young Wench; she'll ruin us all, and herself too, there's no quieting her: So she went on, and told me all the Particulars; but sure nothing was so astonished as I was, when she told me that the Girl knew I was married; that she knew my Husbands Name, and would endeavour to find me out; I thought I should have sunk down at the very Words; in the middle of all my Amazement, Amy starts up, and runs about the Room like a distracted body; I'll put an end to it, that I will; I cannot bear it; I must murder her; I'll kill her B----, and swears by her Maker, in the most serious Tone in the World; and then repeated it over three or four times, walking to and again in the Room; I will, in short, I will kill her, if there's not another Wench in the World.

Prethee hold thy Tongue, *Amy* says *I*, why thou art mad; ay, so I am, *says she*, stark mad, but I'll be the Death of her for all that and then I shall be sober again. But you shall not, *says I*, you shall not hurt a Hair of her Head; why you ought to be hanged for what you have done already; for having resolved on it, is doing it as to the Guilt of the Fact; you are a Murderer already, as much as if you had done it already.

I know that, *says Amy*, and it can be no worse; I'll put you out of your Pain, and her too; she shall never challenge you for her Mother in this World, whatever she may in the next: Well, well, *says I*, be quiet, and do not talk thus, I cannot bear it; so she grew a little soberer after a while.

I must acknowledge, the Notion of being discovered, carried with it so many frightful Ideas, and hurry'd my Thoughts so much, that

I was scarce myself, any more than Amy, so dreadful a thing is a Load of Guilt upon the Mind.

And yet when Amy began the second time, to talk thus abominably of killing the poor Child, of murdering her, and swore by her Maker that she would, so that I began to see that she was in earnest, I was farther terrified a great deal, and it help'd to bring me to myself again in other cases.

We laid our Heads together then, to see if it was possible to discover by what means she had learn'd to talk so, and how she (I mean my Girl) came to know that her Mother had marry'd a Husband, but it would not do, the Girl would acknowledge nothing, and gave but a very imperfect account of things, till, being disgusted to the last Degree with Amy's leaving her so abruptly as she did.

Well, Amy went to the House where the Boy was, but it was all one; there they had only heard a confus'd Story of the Lady somebody, they knew not who, which this same Wench had told them, but they gave no heed to it at all: Amy told them how foolishly the Girl had acted; and how she had carried on the Whimie so far, in spite of all they could say to her; that she had taken it so ill, she would see her no more, and so she might e'en go to Service again if she would, for she [Amy] would have nothing to do with her, unless she humbled herself, and changed her Note, and that quickly too.

The good old Gentleman who had been the Benefactor to them all, was greatly concerned at it, and the good Woman his Wife was griev'd beyond all expressing, and begg'd her Ladyship, meaning Amy, not to resent it, they promised too, they would talk with her about it; and the old Gentlewoman added, with some Astonishment, Sure she cannot be such a Fool but she will be prevailed with to hold her Tongue, when she has it from your own Mouth, that you are not her Mother, and sees that it disoblige your Ladyship to have her insist upon it; and so Amy came away, with some Expectation that it would be stopped here.

But the Girl was such a fool for all that, and persisted in it obstinately, notwithstanding all they could say to her; nay, her Sister begg'd and intreated her not to play the Fool, for that it would ruin her too; and that the Lady (meaning Amy) would abandon them both.

Well,

Well, notwithstanding, this, she insisted, *I* say, upon it, and which is worse, the longer it lasted, the more she began to drop *Amy's* Ladyship, and wou'd have it, that the Lady *Roxana* was her Mother; and that she had made some Enquiries about it, and did not doubt but she shou'd find her out.

When it was come to this, and we found there was nothing to be done with the Girl, but that she was so obstinately bent upon the Search after me, that she ventur'd to forfit all she had in view; *I* say, when *I* found it was come this, *I* began to be more serious in my Preparations of my going beyond-sea; and particularly, it gave me some reason to fear that there was something in it; but the following Accident put me beside all my Measures, and struck me into the greatest Confusion that ever *I* was in, in my Life.

I was so near going Abroad, that my spouse and *I* had taken Measures for our going-off; and because *I* wou'd be sure not to go too publick, but so as to take away all Possibility of being seen, *I* had made some Exception to my spouse against going in the ordinary publick Passage-boats; my Pretence to him, was, the promiscuous crews in those Vessels; want of convenience, and the like; so he took the Hint, and found me out an English Merchant-ship, which was bound for Rotterdam, and getting soon acquainted with the Master, he hir'd his whole Ship, that is to say, his Great-cabin, for *I* do not mean his ship for freight; that so we had all the conveniencies possible, for our Passage; and all things being near ready, he brought home the Captain one day to dinner with him, that *I* might see him, and be acquainted a little with him; and the conveniencies on-board, and the Captain press'd me earnestly to come on-board, and see the ship, intimating, that he wou'd treat us as well as he cou'd; and in discourse *I* happen'd to say, *I* hop'd he had no other Passengers; he said, No, he had not; but, he said, his Wife had courted him a good-while to let her go over to Holland with him, for he always us'd that trade, but he never cou'd think of ventring all he had in one bottom; but if *I* went with him, he thought to take her and her Kinswoman along with him this Voyage, that they might both wait upon me; and so added, that if he wou'd do him the Ho-

nour to dine on-board the next day, he wou'd bring his Wife on board, the better to make us welcome.

Who now cou'd have believ'd the Devil had any snare at the bottom of all this? or that I was in any Danger on such an Occasion, so remote and out of the way as this way? But the Event was the oddest that cou'd be thought of: As it happen'd, *Amy* was not at home when we accepted this Invasion, and so she was left out of the honest, good-humour'd, never-to-be-omitted Friend the *Quaker*, one of the best Creatures that ever liv'd, sure; and who, besides a thousand good Qualities unmix'd with one bad one, was particularly Excellent for being the best Company in the World; tho' I think I had carry'd *Amy* too, if she had not been engag'd in this unhappy Girl's Affair; for on a sudden the Girl was lost, and no news was to be heard of her, and *Amy* had hunted her to every Place she cou'd think of, that it was likely to find her, but all the News she cou'd hear of her, was, That she was gone to an old Comrade's House of hers, which she call'd Sister, and who was marry'd to a Master of a Ship who liv'd at *Redriff*, and even this the Jade never told me: It seems when this Girl was directed by *Amy* to get her some Breeding, go to the Boarding-School, and the like, she was recommended to a Boarding-School at *Gamberwell*, and there she contracted an Acquaintance with a young Lady (*so they are all called*) her Bedfellow, that they call'd Sisters, and promis'd never to break off their Acquaintance.

But judge you what an unaccountable surprize I must be in, when I came on-board the Ship, and was brought into the Captain's Cabbins, or, what they call it, the Great-Cabbins of the Ship, to see his Lady or Wife, and another young Person with her, who, when I came to see her near-hand, was my old Cook-maid in the *Pall-mall*, and as appear'd by the Sequel of the Story, was neither more or less, than my own Daughter; that I knew her, was out of Doubt; for tho' she had not had Opportunity to see me very often, yet I had often seen her, *as I must needs*, being in my own Family so long.

If ever I had need of Courage, and a full Presence of Mind, it was now; it was the only valuable Secret in the World to me; all depended upon this Occasion; if the Girl knew me, I was undone

done; and to discover any Surprise or Disorder, had been to make her know me, or guess it, and discover herself.

I was once going to feign a swooning, and faint-away, and so falling on the Ground, or Floor, put them all into a Hurry and Flight, and by that means get an Opportunity to be continually holding something to my Nose to smell to, and so hold my Hand, or my Handkerchief, or both, before my Mouth; then pretend I cou'd not bear the Smell of the Ship, or the closeness of the Cabbin; but that wou'd have been only to remove into a clearer Air upon the Quarter-Deck, where she wou'd with it, have had a clearer Light too; and if I had pretended the Smell of the Ship, it wou'd have serv'd only to have carry'd us all on-shore, to the Captain's House, which was hard-by; for the Ship lay so close to the Shore, that we only walk'd over a Plank to go on-board, and over another Ship which lay within her; so this not appearing seasonable, and the Thought not being two Minutes old, there was no time; for the two Ladies rise up, and we saluted, so that I was bound to come so near *my Girl*, as to kiss her, which I wou'd not have done, had it been possible to have avoided it; but there was no room to escape.

I cannot but take Notice here, that notwithstanding there was a secret Horror upon my Mind, and I was ready to sink when I came close to her, to salute her; yet it was a secret inconceivable Pleasure to me when I kiss'd her, to know that I kiss'd my own Child; my own Flesh and Blood, born of my Body; and who I had never kiss'd since I took the fatal Farewel of them all, with a Million of Tears, and a Heart almost dead with Grief, when *Amy* and the Good Woman took them all away, and went with them to *Spittle-Fields*: No Pen can describe, no Words can express, I say, the strange Impression which this thing made upon my Spirits; I felt something shoot thro' my Blood; my Heart flutter'd; my Head flash'd, and was dizzy, and all within me, as I thought, turn'd about, and much add I had, not to abandon myself to an Excess of Passion at the first Sight of her, much more when my Lips touch'd her Face; I thought I must have taken her in my Arms, and kiss'd her again a thousand times, whether I wou'd

or no. But

But I rous'd up my Judgment, and took it off, and with infinite Uneasiness in my Mind, I sat down: You will not wonder, if upon this surprize I was not conveyable for some Minutes, and that the Disorder had almost discover'd itself; I had a Complication of severe things upon me; I cou'd not conceal my Disorder without the utmost Difficulty; and yet upon my concealing it, depended the whole of my Prosperity; so I us'd all manner of Violence with myself, to prevent the Mischief which was at the Door.

Well, I saluted her; but as I went first forward to the Captain's Lady, who was at the farther end of the Cabbin, towards the Light, I had the Occasion offer'd, to stand with my Back to the Light, when I turn'd about to her, who stood more on my Left-hand, so that she had not a fair sight of me, tho' I was so near her; I trembled, and knew neither what I did, or said; I was in the utmost Extremity, between so many particular Circumstances as lay upon me; for I was to conceal my Disorder from everybody, at the utmost Peril, and at the same time expected everybody wou'd discern it; I was to expect she wou'd discover that she knew me, and yet was, by all means possible, to prevent it; I was to conceal myself, if possible, and yet had not the least room to do any-thing towards it; *in short*, there was no retreat; no shifting any-thing off; no avoiding or preventing her having a full sight of me; nor was there any counterfeiting my Voice, for then my Husband wou'd have perceiv'd it; *in short*, there was not the least circumstance that offer'd me any Assistance, or any favourable thing to help me in this Exigence.

After I had been upon the Rack for near half an hour, during which, I appear'd stiff and reserv'd, and a little too formal; my Spouse and the Captain fell into Discourses about the Ship, and the Sea, and Business remote from us Women, and by-and-by the Captain carryed him out upon the Quarter-Deck, and left us all by ourselves, in the Great-Cabbin: Then we began to be a little freer one with another; and I began to be a little reviv'd, by a sudden Fancy of my own, *namely*, I thought I perceiv'd that the Girl did not know me; and the chief Reason of my having such a Notion, was, because I did not perceive the least Change in her Carriage, no Confusion, no Hesitation in her Discourse; nor, which I had my Eye particularly upon, did I observe that she fix'd her Eyes much upon

upon me; *that is to say*, not single me out to look steddily at me; as I thought wou'd have been the Case; but that she rather singl'd out my Friend the Quaker, and chatted with her on several things; but I observ'd too, that it was all about indifferent Matters.

This greatly encouraged me, and I began to be a little cheerful; but I was knock'd down again as with a Thunder-Clap, when turning to the Captain's Wife, and discoursing of me, *she said* so her Sister, I cannot but think (*my Lady*) to be very much like such a Person; *then she nam'd the Person*; and the Captain's Wife said, *she thought so too*; the Girl reply'd again, *she was sure she had seen me before, but she could not recollect where*; I answered, (tho' her Speech was not directed to me) *That I fancy'd she had not seen me before in England, but ask'd if she had liv'd in Holland*. She said, *No, no, she had never been out of England*; and I added, *That she could not then have known me in England, unless it was very lately, for I had lived at Rotterdam a great while*. This carry'd me out of that Part of the Broil, pretty well; and to go off the better, when a little Dutch Boy came into the Cabbin, who belonged to the Captain, and who I easily perceived to be Dutch, I jested, and talked Dutch to him, and was merry about the Boy, *that is to say*, as merry as the Consternation I was still in, would let me be.

However, I began to be thoroughly convinced by this time, that the Girl did not know me, which was an infinite Satisfaction to me; or, at least, that tho' she had some Notion of me, yet that she did not think any-thing about my being who I was, and which perhaps, she wou'd have been as glad to have known, as I wou'd have been surpriz'd if she had; indeed it was evident, that had she suspected any-thing of the Truth, she would not have been able to have conceal'd it.

Thus this Meeting went off, and, *you may be sure*, I was resolv'd, if once I got off of it, she should never see me again, to revive her Fancy; but I was mistaken there too, *as you shall hear*; After we had been on-board, the Captain's Lady carry'd us home to her House, which was but just on-shore, and treated us there again, very handsomely, and made us promise that we wou'd come again and see her before we went, to concert our Affairs for the Voyage, and the like; for she assur'd us, that both she and her Sister went the Voyage at that time, for our Company; and I thought to

myself, *Then you'll never go the Voyage at all*; for I saw from that Moment, that it would be no way convenient for my *Ladyship* to go with them; for that frequent Conversation might bring me to her Mind, and she would certainly claim her Kindred to me in a few Days, as indeed, wou'd have been the Case.

It is hardly possible for me to conceive what wou'd have been our Part in this Affair, had my Woman *Amy* gone with me on-board this Ship; it had certainly blown up the whole Affair, and I must for-ever after have been this Girl's Vassal, *that is to say*, have let her into the Secret, and trusted to her keeping it too, or have been exposed, and undone; *the very Thought filled me with Horror*.

But I was not so unhappy neither, as it fell out, for *Amy* was not with us, and that was my Deliverance indeed; yet we had another Chance to get over still; As I resolved to put off the Voyage, so I resolved to put off the Visit, *you may be sure*; going upon this Principle, *namely*, that I was fixed in it, that the Girl had seen her last of me, and should never see me more.

However, to bring myself well off, and withal to see (if I could) a little farther into the Matter, I sent my Friend, the *Quaker*, to the Captain's Lady, to make the Visit promised, and to make my Excuse that I could not possibly wait on her, for that I was very much out of Order; and in the end of the Discourse, I bad her insinuate to them, that she was afraid I should not be able to get ready to go the Voyage, so soon as the Captain would be obliged to go; and that perhaps we might put it off to his next Voyage, I did not let the *Quaker* into any other Reason for it, than that I was indisposed; and not knowing what other Face to put upon that Part, I made her believe that I thought I was a-breeding.

It was easie to put that into her Head, and she of course hinted to the Captain's Lady, that she found me so very ill, that she was afraid I would miscarry; and then, *to be sure*, I could not think of going.

She went, and she managed that Part very dexterously, *as I knew she would*, tho' she knew not a word of the grand Reason of my Indisposition; but I was all sunk, and dead-hearted again, when she told me, she could not understand the Meaning of one thing in her Visit, *namely*, That the young Woman, *as she called her*, that was with the Captain's Lady, and who she called Sister, was most impertinently

pertinently inquisitive into things; as who I was? How long I had been in *England*? Where I had lived? and the like; and that, above all the rest, she enquired if I did not live once at the other end of the Town.

I thought her Enquiries so out of the way, says the honest Quaker, that I gave her not the least Satisfaction; but as I saw by thy Answers on-board the Ship, when she talked of thee, that thou did'st not incline to let her be acquainted with thee, so I was resolved that she should not be much the wiser for me; and when she asked me if thou lived here or there, I always said No; but that thou was a *Dutch* Lady, and was going home again to thy Family, and lived Abroad.

I thanked her very heartily for that Part, and indeed, she served me in it, more than I let her know she did; in a word, she thwarted the Girl so cleverly, that if she had known the whole Affair, she could not have done it better.

But I must acknowledge, all this put me upon the Rack again, and I was quite discouraged, not at all doubting but that the Jade had a right Scent of things, and that she knew and remembered my Face, but had artfully concealed her Knowledge of me, till she might perhaps, do it more to my Disadvantage: I told all this to *Amy*, for she was all the Relief I had: The poor Soul (*Amy*) was ready to hang herself, that as she said, she had been the Occasion of it all; and that if I was ruined, (*which was the word I always used to her*) she had ruined me; and she tormented herself about it so much, that I was sometimes fain to comfort her and myself too.

What *Amy* vexed herself at, was chiefly, that she should be surprized so by the Girl, as she called her; I mean surprized into a Discovery of herself to the Girl; which indeed, was a false Step of *Amy*'s, and so I had often told her; but twas to no Purpose to talk of that now; the Business was, how to get clear of the Girl's Suspicions, and of the Girl too, for it looked more threatening every Day, than other; and if I was uneasy at what *Amy* had told me of her rambling and rattling to her, (*Amy*) I had a thousand times as much reason to be uneasy now, when she had chopped upon me so unhappily as this; and not only had seen my Face, but knew too where I lived; what Name I went by, and the like.

And

but Anger I am not come to the worst of it yet neither; for a few Days after my Friend the Quaker had made her Visit, and excused me on the account of indisposition; as if they had done it in love and above Kindness, because they had been told I was not well, they comes both directly to my Lodgings, to visit me; the Captain's Wife, and my Daughter, (who she called Sister) and the Captain to show them the Place; the Captain only brought them to the Door, put them in, and went away upon some Business. Had not the kind Quaker, in a lucky Moment, coming running in before them, they had not only clapped in upon me, in the Par-
lour, as it had been a Surprise; but which would have been a thousand times worse, had seen Amy with me; I think if that had hap-
pened, I had had no Remedy, but to take the Girl by herself, and have made myself known to her, which would have been all Dis-
traction.

But the Quaker, a lucky Creature to me, happened to see them come to the Door, before they rung the Bell, and instead of going to let them in, came running in, with some Confusion in her Coun-
tenance, and told me who was a coming; at which Amy run first, and I after her, and bid the Quaker come up as soon as she had let them in. I was going to bid her deny me, but it came into my Thoughts, that having been represented so much out of Order, it would have
looked very odd; besides, I knew the honest Quaker, that she would do any thing else for me, would not lye for me, and it would have been hard to have desired it of her.

After she had let them in, and brought them into the Parlour, she came up to Amy and I, who were hardly out of the Fright, and yet were congratulating one another, that Amy was not surprized again. They paid their Visit in Form, and I received them as formal-
ly; but took Occasion two or three times to hint, that I was so ill that I was afraid I should not be able to go to Holland, at least, not so soon as the Captain must go off, and made my Complaint, how sorry I was to be disappointed of the Advantage of their Com-
pany and Assistance in the Voyage; and sometimes I talk'd as if I thought I might stay till the Captain returned, and would be ready to go again; then the Quaker put in, That then I might be too
far

far gone, *meaning with Child*, that I should not venture at all; and then (*as if she shou'd be pleased with it*) added, she hoped I would stay and Lye-in at her House; so as this carried its own Face with it, *'twas well enough*.

But it was now high-time to talk of this to my Husband, which however, was not the Difficulty before me: For after this and other Chat had taken up some time, the young Fool began her Tattle again; and two or three times she brought it in, That I was so like a Lady that she had the Honour to know at the other end of the Town, that she could not put that Lady out of her Mind, *when I was by*; and once or twice I fancy'd the Girl was ready to cry; by-and-by she was at it again; and at last, I plainly saw Tears in her Eyes; upon which, *I ask'd her if the Lady was dead, because she seem'd to be in some Concern for her*; she made me much easier by her Answer, than ever she did before: *She said, She did not really know, but she believed she was dead*.

This, *I say*, a little reliev'd my Thoughts, but I was soon down again; for after some time, the Jade began to grow Talkative; and as it was plain, that she had told all that her Head could retain of *Roxana*, and the Days of Joy which I had spent at that Part of the Town, another Accident had like to have blown us all up again.

I was in a kind of *Disabille* when they came, having on a loose Robe, like a Morning-Gown, but much after the *Italian Way*; and I had not altered it when I went up, only dressed my Head a little; and as I had been represented as having been lately very ill, so the Dress was becoming enough for a Chamber.

This Morning-Vest, or Robe, *call it as you please*, was more shaped to the Body than we wear them since, showing the Body in its true Shape, and perhaps, a little too plainly, if it had been to be worn where any Men were to come; but among ourselves it was well enough, especially in hot Weather; the Colour was green, figured; and the Stuff a *French Damask*, very rich.

This Gown, or Vest, put the Girl's Tongue a running again, and her Sister, *as she called her*, prompted it; for as they both admired my Vest, and were taken up much about the Beauty of the Dress; the charming Damask; the noble Trimming, *and the like*; my Girl puts in a Word to the Sister (*Captain's Wife*.) This is just such a Thing as I told you, *said she*, the Lady danced in. What! *said*

the Captain's Wife, the *Lady Roxana* that you told me of? O! that's a charming Story, *said she*; tell it *my Lady*. I could not avoid saying so too, though from my Soul I wished her in Heaven for but naming it; *no*, I won't say but if she had been carried the other Way, it had been much at one to me, if I could but have been rid of her, and her Story too; for when she came to describe the *Turkish* Dress, it was impossible but the *Quaker*, who was a sharp penetrating Creature, should receive the Impression in a more dangerous Manner, than the Girl; only that indeed she was not so dangerous a Person; for if she had known it all, I could more freely have trusted her, than I could the Girl, by a great deal; *no*, I should have been perfectly easy in her.

However, *as I have said*, her Talk made me dreadfully uneasy, and the more when the Captain's Wife mentioned but the Name of *Roxana*; what my Face might do towards betraying me, I know not, because I could not see myself, but my Heart beat as if it would have jumped out of my Mouth; and my Passion was so great, that for want of Vent, I thought I should have burst. *In a Word*, I was in a kind of silent Rage; for the Force I was under of restraining my Passion was such, as I never felt the like of: I had no Vent; no body to open myself to, or to make a Complaint to for Relief; I durst not leave the Room by no means, for then she would have told all the Story in my Absence, and I should have been perpetually uneasy to know what she had said, or had not said; so that, *in a Word*, I was obliged to sit and hear her tell all the Story of *Roxana*, that is to say, of myself, and not know at the same Time, whether she was in earnest or jest; whether she knew me or no; or, in short, whether I was to be exposed, or not exposed.

She began only in general, with telling where she lived; what a Place she had of it; how gallant a Company her Lady had always had in the House; how they used to sit up all Night in the House, gaming and dancing; what a fine Lady her Mistress was; and what a vast deal of Money the upper Servants got; as for her, she said, her whole Business was in the next House, so that she got but little; except that one Night, that there was twenty Guineas given to be divided among the Servants, when she got two Guineas and a half for her Share.

She went on, and told them how many Servants there was, and how

how they were ordered; but, she said, there was one Mrs. *Amy*, who was over them all; and that she being the Lady's Favourite, got a great deal; she did not know, she said, whether *Amy* was her Christian Name, or her Sir Name, but she supposed it was her Sir Name; that they were told, she got threescore Pieces of Gold at one Time, being the same Night that the rest of the Servants had the twenty Guineas divided among them.

I put in at that Word, and said, 'twas a vast deal to give away why, says I, 'twas a Portion for a Servant: O Madam! says she, it was nothing to what she got afterwards; we that were Servants, hated her heartily for it, that is to say, we wish'd it had been our Lott, in her stead: Then I said again, Why, it was enough to get her a good Husband, and settle her for the World, if she had Sence to manage it: So it might, to be sure, Madam, says she; for we were told, she laid up above 500 l. But, I suppose, Mrs. *Amy* was too sensible that her Character would require a good Portion to put her off.

O, said I, if that was the Case, 'twas another thing.

Nay, says she, I don't know, but they talk'd very much of a young Lord that was very great with her.

And pray what came of her at last? said I; for I was willing to hear a little (seeing she would talk of it) what she had to say, as well of *Amy*, as of myself.

I don't know, Madam, said she, I never heard of her for several Years, till t'other Day I happened to see her.

Did you indeed! says I; (and made mighty strange of it) what, and in Rags, it may be, said I, that's often the End of such Creatures.

Just the contrary, Madam, says she, She came to visit an Acquaintance of mine, little thinking, I suppose, to see me, and, I assure you, she came in her Coach.

In her Coach! said I! upon my word she had made her Market then; I suppose she made Hay while the Sun shone; was she marry'd, pray?

I believe she had been marry'd, Madam, says she, but it seems she had been at the East Indies, and if she was marry'd, it was there to be sure; I think she said she had good luck in the Indies.

That is, I suppose, said I, had buried her Husband there.

I un-

I understand it so, Madam, says she, and that she had got his Estate.

Was that her good Luck? said I; it might be good to her, as to the Money indeed, but it was but the Part of a Jade, to call it a good Luck.

Thus far our Discourse of Mrs. Amy went, and no farther, for she knew no more of her; but then the Quaker unhappily, tho' undesignedly, put in a Question, which the honest good humour'd Creature would have been far from doing, if she had known that I had carry'd on the Discourse of Amy, on purpose to drop Roxana out of the Conversation.

But I was not to be made easie too soon: The Quaker put in, but I think thou said'st, something was behind of thy Mistress; what did'st thou call her, Roxana, was it not? Pray what became of her?

Ay, ay, Roxana, says the Captain's Wife; pray Sister let's hear the Story of Roxana; it will divert my Lady, I'm sure.

That's a damn'd Lye, said I to myself; if you knew how little 'twould divert me, you would have too much Advantage over me: Well, I saw no Remedy, but the Story must come on, so I prepar'd to hear the worst of it.

Roxana! says she; I know not what to say of her; she was so much above us; and so seldom seen, that we could know little of her, but by Report, but we did sometimes see her too; she was a charming Woman indeed; and the Footmen us'd to say, that she was to be sent for to Court.

To Court, said I, why she was at Court, wa'n't she? the Pallmall is not far from Whitehall.

Yes, Madam, says I, but I mean another way.

I understand thee, says the Quaker; Thou mean'st, I suppose, to be Mistress to the King; yes, Madam, says she.

I cannot help confessing what a Reserve of Pride still was left in me; and though I dreaded the Sequel of the Story, yet when she talked how handsome and how fine a Lady this Roxana was, I could not help being pleas'd and tickled with it; and put in Questions two or three times, of how handsome she was? and was she really so fine a Woman as they talked of? and the like, on purpose to hear her repeat what the People's Opinion of me was how I had behav'd.

Indeed,

Indeed, says she at last, she was a most beautiful Creature, as ever I saw in my Life. But then, *said I*, you never had the Opportunity to see her, but when she was set out to the best Advantage.

Yes, yes, Madam, *said she*, I have seen her several times in her *Disshabille*, and I can assure you she was a very fine Woman; and that which was more still, every body said she did not paint.

This was still agreeable me one Way; but there was a devilish Sting in the Tail of it all, and this last Article was one; wherein *she said*, she had seen me several times in my *Disshabille*. This put me in Mind, that then she certainly know me, and it would come out at last; which was Death to me but to think of.

Well, but Sister, *said the Captain's Wife*, tell my Lady about the Ball, that's the best of all the Story; and of *Roxana's* dancing in the fine outlandish Dress.

That's one of the brightest Parts of her Story indeed, *said the Girl*; the Case was this: We had Balls and Meetings in her Ladyship's Apartments, every Week almost; but one Time my Lady invited all the Nobles to come at such a Time, and she would give them a Ball; and there was a vast Crowd indeed, *said she*.

I think you said the King was there, Sister, did not you.

No, Madam, *said she*, that was the second Time, when they said the King had heard how finely the *Turkish* Lady danced, and that he was there to see her; but the King, if his Majesty was there, came disguised.

That is what they call *Incog*, *said my Friend the Quaker*, thou can't not think the King would disguise himself. Yes, *said the Girl*, it was so, he did not come in Publick, with his Guards, but we all knew which was the King, well enough, *that is to say*, which they said was the King.

Well, *said the Captain's Wife*, about the *Turkish* Dress; pray let us hear that: Why, *said she*, my Lady sat in a fine little Drawing-Room, which opened into the Great Room, and where she received the Compliments of the Company; and when the Dancing began, a great Lord, *said she*, I forget who they call'd him (but he was a very great Lord or Duke, I don't know which) took her out, and danced with her; but after a while, my Lady on a sudden shut the Drawing-Room, and run up Stairs with her Woman, Mrs. *Amo*, and though she did not stay long (for I suppose she had contrived

trived it all beforehand) she came down dressed in the strangest Figure that ever I saw in my Life; but it was exceeding fine.

Here she went on to describe the Dress, as I have done already; but did it so exactly, that I was surprized at the Manner of her telling it; there was not a Circumstance of it left out.

I was now under a new Perplexity; for this young Slut gave so compleat an Account of every thing in the Dress, that my Friend the Quaker colour'd at it, and looked two or three times at me, to see if I did not do so too; for (as she told me afterwards) she immediately perceived it was the same Dress that she had seen me have on, as I have said before: However, as she saw I took no Notice of it, she kept her Thoughts private to herself; and I did so too, as well as I could.

I put in two or three Times, that she had a good Memory, that could be so particular in every Part of such a Thing.

O Madam! said she, we that were Servants, stood by ourselves in a Corner; but so, as we could see more than some Strangers; besides, said she, it was all our Conversation for several Days in the Family, and what one did not observe, another did. Why, said I to her, this was no Persian Dress; only, I suppose, your Lady was some French Commedien, that is to say, a Stage Amazon, that put on a counterfeit Dress to please the Company, such as they used in the Play of Tamerlane, at Paris, or some such.

No indeed, Madam, said she, I assure you, my Lady was no actress; she was a fine modest Lady, fit to be a Princess; every body said, if she was a Mistress, she was fit to be a Mistress to none but the King; and they talked her up for the King, as if it had really been so: Besides, Madam, said she, my Lady danced a Turkish Dance, all the Lords and Gentry said it was so; and one of them swore, he had seen it danced in Turkey; so that it could not come from the Theatre at Paris; and then the Name Roxana, said she, was a Turkish Name.

Well, said I, but that was not your Lady's Name, I suppose.

No, no, Madam, said she, I know that; I know my Lady's Name and Family very well; Roxana was not her Name, that's true indeed.

Here she run me a-ground again; for I durst not ask her what was Roxana's real Name, lest she had really dealt with the Devil, and

and had boldly given my own Name in for Answer: So that I was still more and more afraid that the Girl had really gotten the Secret somewhere or other; though I could not imagin neither, how that could be.

In a Word, I was sick of the Discourse, and endeavour'd many Ways to put an End to it, but it was impossible; for the Captain's Wife, *who called her Sister*, prompted her, and pressed her to tell it, most ignorantly thinking, that it would be a pleasant Tale to all of us.

Two or three times the *Quaker* put in, That this Lady *Roxana* had a good Stock of Assurance; and that 'twas likely, if she had been in Turkey, she had lived with, or been kept by some great *Bassa* there: But still she would break in upon all such Discourse, and fly out into the most extravagant Praises of her Mistress, the fam'd *Roxana*. I run her down, as some scandalous Woman; that it was not possible to be otherwise; but she would not hear of it; her Lady was a Person of such and such Qualifications; that nothing but an Angel was like her, *to be sure*; and yet, *after all she could say*, her own Account brought her down to this, That, in short, her Lady kept little less than a Gaming-Ordinary; or, *as it would be called in the Times since that*, an Assembly for Gallantry and Play.

All this while I was very uneasie, *as I said before*, and yet the whole Story went off again without any Discovery, only that I seemed a little concerned, that she should liken me to this gay Lady, whose Character I pretended to run down very much, even upon the foot of her own Relation.

But I was not at the End of my Mortifications yet neither; for now my innocent *Quaker* threw out an unhappp Expression, which put me upon the Tenters again: *Says she to me*, This Lady's Habit, *I fancy*, is just such a one as thine, by the Description of it; *and then turning to the Captain's Wife*, said she, *I fancy*, my Friend has a finer Turkish or Persian Dress, a great deal. O! *says the Girl*, 'tis impossible to be finer; my Lady's, *says she*, was all covered with Gold, and Diamonds; her Hair and Head-Dress, *I forgot the Name they gave it*, said she, shone like the Stars, there was so many Jewels.

I never wish'd my good Friend the *Quaker* out of my Company before

before now; but indeed, I would have given some Guineas to have been rid of her just now; for beginning to be curious in comparing the two Dresses, she innocently began a Description of mine; and nothing terrify'd me so much, as the Apprehension lest she should importune me to show it, which I was resolved I would never agree to.

But before it came to this, she pressed my Girl to describe the Tybala, or Head-Dress; which she did so cleverly, that the Quaker could not help saying, *Mine was just such a one*; and after several other Similitudes, all very vexatious to me, out comes the kind Motion to me, to let the Ladies see my Dress; and they joined their eager Desires to it, even to Importunity.

I desired to be excused; though I had little to say at first why I declined it; but at last, it came into my Head to say, *It was pack'd up with my other Cloaths that I had least Occasion for, in order to be sent on board the Captain's Ship*; but that if we lived to come to Holland together (which, *by the Way*, I resolved should never happen) then, I would them, at unpacking my Cloaths, they should see me dressed in it; but they must not expect I should dance in it, like the Lady Roxana, in all her fine Things.

This carried it off pretty well; and getting over this, got over most of the rest, and I began to be easie again; and, in a Word, that I may dismiss the Story too, as soon as may be, I got rid at last, of my Visitors, who I had wished gone two Hours sooner than they intended it.

As soon as they were gone, I ran up to Amy, and gave Vent to my Passions, by telling her the whole Story, and letting her see what Mischiefs one false Step of hers had like, unluckily, to have involved us all in, more perhaps than we could ever have lived to get through. Amy was sensible of it enough, and was just giving her Wrath a Vent another Way, viz. by calling the poor Girl all the damn'd Jades and Fools (and sometimes worse Names) that she could think of; in the middle of which, up comes my honest good Quaker, and put an end to our Discourse: The Quaker came in smiling (for she was always soberly cheerful) Well said she, *Thou art deliver'd at last; I came to joy thee of it; I perceived thou wert tired grievously of thy Visitors.*

Indeed, said I, so I was; that foolish young Girl held us all in

a *Canterbury Story*, I thought she would never have done with it. Why truly, I thought she was very careful to let thee know she was but a Cookmaid. Ay, says I, and at a Gaming-House, or Gaming Ordinary, and at other end of the Town too; all which (by the way) she might know, would add very little to her good Name among us Citizens.

I can't think, says the Quaker, but she had some other Drift in that long Discourse; there's something else in her Head, I am satisfied of that. Thought I, Are you satisfied of it? I am sure I am the less satisfied for that; at least, it is but small Satisfaction to me to hear you say so: What can this be? said I; and when will my Uneasiness have an End? But this was silent, and to myself, you may be sure. But in Answer to my Friend the Quaker, I returned, by asking her a Question or two about it. As what she thought was in it? And why she thought there was any thing in it? For, said I, she can have nothing in it relating to me.

Nay, said the kind Quaker, if she had any View towards thee, that's no Business of mine; and I should be far from desiring thee to inform me.

This alarmed me again; not that I feared trusting the good-humour'd Creature with it, if there had been any thing of just Suspicion in her; but this was a Secret I cared not to communicate to any body. However, I say, this alarmed me a little; for as I had concealed every thing from her, I was willing to do so still; but as she could not but gather up abundance of Things from the Girl's Discourse, which looked towards me, so she was too penetrating to be put off with such Answers as might stop another's Mouth: Only there was this double Felicity in it: First, That she was not inquisitive to know, or find any thing out; and not dangerous, if she had known the whole Story: But, as I say, she could not but gather up several Circumstances from the Girl's Discourse; as particularly the Name of Amy, and the several Descriptions of the Turkish Dress, which my Friend the Quaker had seen, and taken so much Notice of, as I have said above.

As for that, I might have turned it off by jelling with Amy, and asking her, Who she lived with before she came to live with me. But that would not do; for we had unhappily anticipated that way of talking by having often talked how long Amy had lived with

me; and which was still worse, by having owned formerly, that I had had Lodgings in the *Pallmall*; so that all those things corresponded too well. There was only one thing that helped me out with the *Quaker*, and that was, the Girl's having reported how rich Mrs. *Amy* was grown, and that she kept her Coach; now as there might be many more Mrs. *Amy*'s besides mine, so it was not likely to be my *Amy*, because she was far from such a Figure as keeping her Coach; and this carry'd it off from the Suspicions which the good Friendly *Quaker* might have in her Head.

But as to what she imagined the Girl had in her Head, there lay more real Difficulty in that Part, a great deal; and I was alarmed at it very much; for my Friend the *Quaker* told me, She observed that the Girl was in a great Passion when she talked of the Habit, and more when I had been importun'd to show her mine, but declined it. She said, she several times perceived her to be in Disorder, and to restrain herself with great Difficulty; and once or twice she muttered to herself, that *she had found it out*, or, that *she would find it out*, she could not tell whether; and that she often saw the Tears in her Eyes; that when I said my Suit of *Turkish* Cloaths was put up, but that she should see it when we arrived in *Holland*, she heard her say softly, She would go over on purpose then.

After she had ended her Observations, I added, I observed too, that the Girl talked and looked oddly, and that she was mighty inquisitive; but I could not imagine what it was she aimed at. Aimed at, said the *Quaker*, 'tis plain to me what she aims at; she believes thou art the same Lady *Roxana* that danced in the *Turkish* Vest, but she is not certain. Does she believe so? said I; if I had thought that, I would have put her out of her Pain. Believe so? said the *Quaker*, Yes; and I then began to believe so too, and should have believed so still, if thou hadst not satisfy'd me to the contrary, by thy taking no Notice of it, and by what thou hast said since. Should you have believed so? said I, warmly, I am very sorry for that; why, would you have taken me for an *Actress*, or a *French Stage-Player*? No, says the good kind Creature, thou carriest it too far; as soon as thou madest thy Reflections upon her, I knew it could not be; but who could think any other, when she described the *Turkish* Dress which thou hast here, with the Head-Tire and Jewels; and when she named thy Maid *Amy* too,

too, and several other Circumstances occurring? I should certainly have believed it said she, if thou hadst not contradicted it; but as soon as I heard thee speak, I concluded it was otherwise. That was very kind, said I, and I am obliged to you for doing me so much Justice; 'tis more it seems than that young talking Creature does. Nay, says the Quaker, indeed she does not do thee Justice; for she as certainly believes it still as ever she did. Does she, said I? Ay, said the Quaker, and I warrant thee she'll make thee another Visit about it. Will she, said I? then I believe I shall downright affront her. No, thou shalt not affront her, said she (full of her good Humour and Temper) I'll take that Part off thy Hands, for I'll affront her for thee, and not let her see thee. I thought that was a very kind Offer, but was at a Loss how she would be able to do it; and the Thought of seeing her there again half distracted me; not knowing what Temper she would come in, much less what Manner to receive her in; but my fast Friend, and constant Comforter, the Quaker, said, she perceived the Girl was impertinent, and that I had no Inclination to converse with her; and she was resolved I should not be troubled with her. But I shall have occasion to say more of this presently; for this Girl went farther yet than I thought she would.

It was now Time, as I said before, to take Measures with my Husband, in order to put off my Voyage; so I fell into Talk with him one Morning as he was dressing, and while I was in Bed; I pretended I was very ill; and as I had but too easie a Way to impose upon him, because he so absolutely believed every thing I said; so I managed my Discourse so, as that he should understand by it, I was a breeding, though I did not tell him so.

However, I brought it about so handsomely, that before he went out of the Room, he came and sat down by the Bed-side, and began to talk very seriously to me, upon the Subject of my being so every Day ill; and that, as he hoped I was with Child, he would have me consider well of it, whether I had not best alter my Thoughts of the Voyage to Holland; for that being Sea-sick, and which was worse, if a Storm should happen, it might be very dangerous to me; and after saying abundance of the kindest Things that the kindest Husband in the World could say; he concluded, That it was his Request to me, that I would not think any more of going,

ing, till after all should be over; but that I would, on the contrary, prepare to Lye in where I was; and where I knew as well as he, I could be very well provided, and very well assisted.

This was just what I wanted; for I had, *as you have heard*, a thousand good Reasons why I should put off the Voyage, *especially* with that Creature in Company; but I had a Mind the putting it off should be at his Motion, not my own; and he came into it of himself just as I would have had it. This gave me an Opportunity to hang back a little, and to seem as if I was unwilling. I told him, I could not abide to put him to Difficulties and Perplexities in his Business; that now he had hired the Great Cabin in the Ship, and perhaps, paid some of the Money; and, *in my ke*, taken Freight for Goods; and to make him break it all off again, would be a needless Charge to him; *or perhaps*, a Damage to the Captain.

As to that, *he said*, it was not to be named, and he would not allow it to be any Consideration at all; that he could easily pacify the Captain of the Ship, by telling him the Reason of it; and that if he did make him some Satisfaction for the Disappointment, but should not be much.

But my Dear, *said I*, you have not heard me say I am with Child, neither can I say so; and if it should not be so at last, then I shall have made a fine Piece of work of it indeed; besides, *says I*, the two Ladies, the Captain's Wife and her Sister, they depend upon our going over, and have made great Preparations, and all in Compliment to me; What must I say to them?

Well my Dear, *says he*, if you should not be with Child, tho' I hope you are, yet there is no harm done; the staying three or four Months longer in *England* will be no Damage to me, and we can go when we please, when we are sure you are not with Child, or when it appearing you are with Child, you shall be down and up again; and as for the Captain's Wife and Sister, leave that Part to me, I'll answer for it, there shall be no Quarrel raised upon that Subject; I'll make your excuse to them by the Captain himself; so all will be well enough there, I'll warrant you.

This was as much as I could desire; and thus it rested for a while: I had indeed some anxious Thoughts about this impertinent Girl; but believed that putting off the Voyage would have put an End to it all; so I began to be pretty easie; but I found myself mistaken,

taken, for I was brought to the Point of Destruction again, and that in the most unaccountable Manner imaginable.

My Husband, as he and I had agreed, meeting the Captain of the Ship, took the Freedom to tell him, That he was afraid he must disappoint him, for that something had fallen out, which had obliged him to alter his Measures, and that his Family could not be ready to go time enough for him.

I know the Occasion Sir, *says the Captain*, I hear your Lady has got a Daughter more than she expected; I give you Joy of it. What do you mean by that? *says my Spouse*. Nay, nothing *says the Captain*, but what I hear the Women tattle over the Tea-Table; I know nothing, but that you do not go the Voyage upon it, which I am sorry for; but you know your own Affairs, *added the Captain*, that's no Business of mine.

Well but, *says my Husband*, I must make you some Satisfaction for the Disappointment and so pulls out his Money. No, no, *says the Captain*, and so they fell to straining their Compliments one upon another; but, *in short*, my Spouse gave him thræ or four Guineas, and made him take it; and so the first Discourse went off again, and they had no more of it.

But it did not go off so easily with me; for now, *in a Word*, the Clouds began to thicken about me, and I had Alarms on every Side: My Husband told me what the Captain had said; but very happily took it, that the Captain had brought a Tale by halves, and having heard it one way, had told it another; and that neither could he understand the Captain, neither did the Captain understand himself; so he contented himself to tell me, *he said*, Word for Word, as the Captain delivered it.

How I kept my Husband from discovering my Disorder, you shall hear presently; but let it suffice to say just now, that if my Husband did not understand the Captain, nor the Captain understand himself, I understood them both very well; and to tell the Truth, it was a worse Shock than ever I had yet: Invention supply'd me indeed, with a sudden Motion to avoid showing my Surprise; for as my Spouse and I was sitting by a little Table, near the Fire, I reached out my Hand, as if I had intended to take a Spoon which lay on the other Side, and threw one of the Candles off of the Table; and then snatching it up, started up upon my Feet, and stoop-

ed to the Lap of my Gown, and took it up in my Hand; O! *says I*, my Gown's spoiled; the Candle has greas'd it prodigiously: This furnished me with an Excuse to my Spouse, to break off the Discourse for the present, and call *Amy* down; and *Amy* not coming presently, *I said to him*, My Dear, I must run up Stairs and put it off, and let *Amy* clean it a little; so my Husband rose up too, and went into a Closet, where he kept his Papers and Books, and fetched a Book out, and sat down by himself to read.

Glad I was that I had got away; and up I run to *Amy*, who, as it happened, was alone; O *Amy!* *says I*, we are all utterly undone; and with that, I burst out a crying, and could not speak a Word for a great while.

I cannot help saying, that some very good Reflections offered themselves upon this Head; it presently occurred, What a glorious Testimony it is to the Justice of Providence, and to the Concern Providence has in guiding all the Affairs of Men (*even the least as well as the greatest*) that the most secret Crimes are, by the most unforeseen Accidents, brought to light, and discovered.

Another Reflection was, How just it is, that Sin and Shame follow one another so constantly at the Heels, that they are not like Attendants only, but like Cause and Consequence, necessarily connected one with another; that the Crime going before, the Scandal is certain to follow; and that it is not in the Power of human Nature to conceal the first, or avoid the last.

What shall I do, *Amy*, said I, as soon as I could speak? and what will become of me? And then I cry'd again so vehemently, that I could say no more a great while. *Amy* was frightened almost out of her Wits, but knew nothing what the Matter was; but she begged to know, and persuaded me to compose myself, and not cry so: Why Madam, if my Master should come up now, said she, he will see what a Disorder you are in; he will know you have been crying, and then he will want to know the Cause of it; with that I broke out again, O! he knows it already, *Amy*, said I, he knows all! 'tis all discovered! and we are undone! *Amy* was Thunder-struck now indeed: Nay, said *Amy*, if that be true, we are undone indeed; but that can never be; that's impossible, I'm sure.

No, no, said I, 'tis far from impossible, for I tell you 'tis so; and

and by this time being a little recovered, I told her what Discourse my Husband and the Captain had had together, and what the Captain had said: This put *Amey* into such a Hurry, that she cry'd; she rav'd; she swore and curs'd like a mad thing; then she upbraided me, that I would not let her kill the Girl when she would have done it; and that it was all my own doing, and the like. Well, however, I was not for killing the Girl; yet, I could not bear the Thoughts of that neither.

We spent half an Hour in these Extravagances, and brought nothing out of them neither; for indeed we could do nothing, nor say nothing, that was to the Purpose; for if any thing was to come out of this Way, there was no hindring it, nor help for it; so after thus giving a Vent to myself by crying, I began to reflect how I had left my Spouse below, and what I had pretended to come up for; so I changed my Gown that I pretended the Candle fell upon, and put on another, and went down.

When I had been down a good while, and found my Spouse did not fall into the Story again, as I expected, I took Heart, and call'd for it: My Dear, said I, the Fall of the Candle put you out of your History; won't you go on with it? What History? said he: Why, said I, about the Captain: O! said he, I had done with it; I know no more, than that the Captain told a broken Piece of News that he had heard by halves, and told more by halves than he heard it; namely, of your being with Child, and that you could not go the Voyage.

I perceived my Husband entered not into the thing at all, but took it for a Story, which being told two or three times over, I was puzzled, and came to nothing; and that all that was meant by it was, what he knew, or thought he knew already, viz. that I was with Child, which he wished might be true. His Ignorance was a Cordial to my Soul; and I cursed them in my Thoughts, that should ever undeceive him; and as I saw him willing to have the Story end there, was not worth being farther mentioned, I told it no more; and said; I supposed the Captain had it from this Wife; she might have found somebody else to make her Remarks upon, and so it passed off with my Husband well enough, and I was still safe there, where I thought myself in most Danger; but had two Uneasinesses still; the first was, lest the Cap-
tain

tain and my Spouse should meet again, and enter into farther Discourse about it: And the second man, left the house, impatient that the Girl should come again, and when she came, how to prevent her seeing *Amy*, which was an Article as material as any of the rest; for seeing *Amy* would have been as fatal to me, as her knowing all the rest.

As to the first of these, I knew the Captain could not stay in Town above a Week; but that his Ship being already full of Goods, and fallen down the River, he must soon follow; I contriv'd to carry my Husband somewhere out of Town for a few Days, that they might be sure not to meet. My greatest Concern was, where we shou'd go; at last I fix'd upon North-Hall; not, I said, that I would drink the Waters, but that I thought the Air was good, and might be for my Advantage. He, who did every thing upon the Foundation of obliging me, readily came into it, and the Coach was appointed to be ready the next Morning; but as we were settling Matters, he put in an ugly Word that thwarted all my design; and that was, That he had rather I wou'd stay till Afternoon, for that he shou'd speak to the Captain next Morning, if he cou'd do, and be back again about Twelve a-Clock.

I said, Ay, by all means; but it was but a Cheat on him, and my Voice and my Heart differ'd; for I resolv'd, if possible, he shou'd not come near the Captain, nor see him, whatever came of it.

In the Evening therefore, a little before we went to Bed, pretended to have alter'd my Mind, and that I wou'd not go to North-Hall, but I had a mind to go another way; but I told him, I was afraid his Business wou'd not permit him; he wanted to know where it was; I said, I wou'd not tell him, lest it shou'd oblige him to hinder his Business: He answer'd, with the same Temper, but with infinitely more Sincerity, that he had no Business of so much Consequence, as to hinder him going with me any where that I had a mind to go: Yes, said I, you were to speak with the Captain before he goes away: Why that's true, said he, so I do, and wait'd a while; and then added, But I'll write a Note to a Man, that does Business for me, to go to him; 'tis only to get some Bills of Lading sign'd, and he can do it: When I saw I had gain'd my Point, I seem'd to hang back a little; my Dear, said I, don't hinder

an Hour's Business for me; I can put it off for a Week or two, rather than you shall do yourself any Prejudice. *No, no, said he, you shall not put it off an Hour for me; for I can do my Business by Proxy with any body, but my Wife; and then he took me in his Arms and kissed me:* How did my Blood flush up into my Face! when I reflected how sincerely, how affectionately this good humour'd Gentleman embraced the most cursed Piece of Hypocrisy that ever came into the Arms of an honest Man? His was all Tenderness, all Kindness, and the utmost Sincerity: Mine all Grimace and Deceit; a Piece of meer Masquerade, and framed Conduct, to conceal a past Life of Wickedness, and prevent his discovering, that he had in his Arms a She-Devil, whose whole Conversation for twenty-five Years had been black as Hell, a Complication of Crime; and for which, had he been let into it, he must have abhor'd me, and the very mention of my Name: But there was no help for me in it; all I had to satisfy myself was, that it was my Business to be what I was, and conceal what I had been; that all the Satisfaction I could make him, was to live virtuously for the Time to come; not being able to retrieve what had been in Time past; and this I resolved upon, though had the great Temptation offered, as it did afterwards, I had reason to question my Stability: *But of that hereafter.*

After my Husband had kindly thus given up his Measures to mine, we resolved to set out in the Morning early; *I told him, that my Project, if he liked it, was to go to Tunbridge;* and he, being entirely passive in the Thing, agreed to it with the greatest willingness; *but said, If I had not named Tunbridge, he would have named Newmarket; (there being a great Court there, and abundance of fine Things to be seen)* I offered him another Piece of Hypocrisy here, for I pretended to be willing to go thither, *as the Place of his Choice,* but indeed, I would not have gone for a Thousand Pounds; for the Court being there at that Time I durst not run the Hazard of being known at a Place where there were so many Eyes were that had seen me before: So that, *after some Time,* I told my Husband, that I thought Newmarket was so full of People at that Time, that we should get no Accommodation; that seeing the Court, and the Croud, was no Entertainment at all to me, unless as it might be so to him; that if he thought fit, we would

rather put it off to another Time; and that if, when he went to *Holland*, we should go by *Harwich*, we might take a round by *Newmarket* and *Bury*, and so come down to *Ipswich* and go from thence to the Sea-side: He was easily put off from this, as he was from any thing else, that I did not approve; and so with all imaginable Facility he appointed to be ready early in the Morning, to go with me for *Turnbridge*.

I had a double Design in this, *viz.* first, To get away my Spouse from seeing the Captain any more; and secondly, To be out of the way myself, in case this impertinent Girl, who was now my Plague, should offer to come again, as my Friend the Quaker believed she would; and as indeed, happened within two or three Days afterwards.

Having thus secured my going away the next Day, I had nothing to do, but to furnish my faithful Agent, the Quaker, with some Instructions what to say to this Tormentor (for such she proved afterwards) and how to manage her, if she made any more visits than ordinary.

I had a great mind to leave *Amy* behind too, as an Assistant, because she understood so perfectly, what to advise upon any Emergency; and *Amy* importuned me to do so; but I know not what secret impulse prevailed over my Thoughts against it, I could not dot so it, for fear the wicked Jade should make her away, which my very Soul abhorred the Thought of; which however, *Amy* found means to bring to pass afterwards; as I may in time relate more particularly.

It is true, I wanted as much to be delivered from her, as ever a sick Man did from a Third-Day Ague; and had she dropped into the Grave by any fair Way, as I may call it; I mean had she died by any ordinary Distemper, I should have shed but very few Tears about her: But I was not arrived to such a Pitch of obstinate Wickedness, as to commit Murther, especially such, as to murder my own Child, or so much as to harbour a Thought so barbarous in my Mind. But, as I said, *Amy* effected all afterwards, without my Knowledge, for which I gave her my hearty Curse, though I could do little more; for to have fallen upon *Amy*, had been to have murdered myself. But this Tragedy requires a longer Story than I have room for here: I return to my Journey.

My

My dear Friend, the *Quaker*, was kind, and yet honest, and would do any thing that was just and upright, to serve me, but nothing wicked, or dishonourable; that she might be able to say boldly to the Creature, if she came, she did not know where I was gone, she desired I would not let her know; and to make her Ignorance the more absolutely safe to herself, and likewise to me, I allowed her to say, that she heard us talk of going to *Newmarket*, &c. She liked that Part, and I left all the rest to her, to act as she thought fit, only charged her, that if the Girl entered into the Story of the *Pallmall*, she should not entertain much Talk about it; let her understand, that we all thought she spoke of it a little too particularly; and that the Lady, *meaning me*, took it a little ill, to be so liken'd to a publick Mistress, or a Stage-Player, and the like; and so to bring her, *if possible*, to say no more of it. However, though I did not tell my Friend the *Quaker* how to write to me, or where I was, yet I left a sealed Paper with her Maid to give her, in which I her a Direction how to write to *Any*, and so in effect, to myself.

It was but a few Days after I was gone, but the impatient Girl came to my Lodgings, on Pretence to see how I did, and to hear if I intended to go the Voyage, *and the like*. My trusty Agent was at home, and received her coldly at the Door; *but told her*, That the Lady, who she supposed she meant, was gone from her House.

This was a full Stop to all she could say for a good-while; but as she stood musing some time at the Door, considering what to begin a Talk upon, she perceived my Friend the *Quaker* looked a little uneasy, as if she wanted to go in and shut the Door, which stung her to the quick; and the wary *Quaker* had not so much as asked her to come in; for seeing her alone, she expected she would be very Impertinent; and concluded, that I did not care how coldly I received her.

But she was not to be put off so: *She said*, If the Lady was not to be spoke with, she desired to speak two or three Words with her, *meaning my Friend the Quaker*. Upon that the *Quaker* civilly, but coldly, asked her to walk in, which was what she wanted. *Note*, She did not carry her into her best ParLOUR, as before, but into a little Outer Room, where the Servants usually waited.

By the first of her Discourse she did not stick to insinuate, as if she believ'd I was in the House, but was unwilling to be seen; and press'd earnestly that she might speak but two Words with me; to which she added earnestly Entreaties, and at last, Tears.

I am sorry, says my good Creature the Quaker, thou hast so ill an Opinion of me, as to think I wou'd tell thee an Untruth, and say, that the Lady ——— was gone from my House, if she was not? I assure thee I do not use any such Method; nor does the Lady desire any such kind of Service from me, as I know of: If she had been in the House, I should have told thee so.

She said little to that, but said, it was Business of the utmost Importance, that she desir'd to speak with me about; and then cried again very much.

Thou seem'st to be sorely afflicted, says the Quaker, I wish I cou'd give thee any Relief; but if nothing will comfort thee but seeing the Lady ———, it is not in my Power.

I hope it is, says she again; to be sure it is of great Consequence to me, so much, that I am undone without it.

Thou troubl'st me very much, to hear thee say so, says the Quaker; but why then did'st thou not speak to her apart, when thou wast here before?

I had no Opportunity says she, to speak to her alone, and I cou'd do it in Company; if I cou'd have spoken but two Words to her alone, I wou'd have thrown myself at her Foot, and ask'd her Blessing.

I am surpriz'd at thee; I do not understand thee, says the Quaker.

O! says she, stand my Friend, if you have any Charity, or if you have any Compassion for the Miserable; for I am utterly undone!

Thou terrify'st me, says the Quaker, with such passionate Expressions; for verily I cannot comprehend thee.

O! says she, She is my Mother; She is my Mother; and she does not own me.

Thy Mother! says the Quaker, and began to be greatly mov'd indeed; I am astonish'd at thee; what do'st thou mean?

I mean nothing but what I say, says she, I say again, She is my Mother! and will not own me; and with that she stopp'd, with a Flood of Tears.

Not

Not own thee! says the Quaker; and the tender, good Creature wept too; why, she says she does not know thee, and never saw thee before.

No, says the Girl, I believe she does not know me, but I know her; and I know she is my Mother.

It's impossible! Thou talk'st Mystery, says the Quaker; wilt thou explain thyself a little to me?

Yes, yes, says she, I can explain it well enough; I am sure she is my Mother, and I have broke my Heart to search for her; and now to lose her again, when I was sure I had found her, will break my Heart more effectually.

Well, but if she be thy Mother, says the Quaker, How can it be, that she should not know thee?

Alas! says she, I have been lost to her ever since I was a Child: She has never seen me.

And hast thou never seen her? says the Quaker.

Yes, says she, I have seen her, often enough, I saw her; for when she was the Lady Roxana, I was her House-Maid, being a Servant, but I did not know her then, nor she me, but it has all come out since; has she not a Maid nam'd Amy? (note the honest Quaker was nonpluss'd, and greatly surpriz'd at that Question.)

Truly, says she, the Lady — has several Women-Servants, but I do not know all their Names.

But her Woman, her Favourite, adds the Girl; is not her Name Amy?

Why truly, says the Quaker, with a very happy turn of Wit, I do not like to be examin'd; but lest thou should'st take up any Mistakes, by reason of my backwardness to speak, I will answer thee for once, That what her Woman's Name is, I know not; but they call her Cherry.

N. B. My Husband gave her that Name in jest, on our Wedding-Day, and we had called her by it ever after; so that she spoke literally true at that time.

The Girl replied very modestly, That she was sorry if she gave her any Offence in asking; that she did not design to be rude to her, or pretend to examine her; but that she was in such an Agony at

this Disaster, that she knew not what she did or said; and that she should be very sorry to disoblige her; but begged of her again, as she was a Christian, and a Woman, and had been a Mother of Children, that she would take Pity on her, and if possible, assist her, so that she might but come to me, and speak a few Words to me.

The tender-hearted Quaker told me, the Girl spoke this with such moving Eloquence, that it forced Tears from her; but she was obliged to say, That she neither knew where I was gone, or how to write to me; but that if she did ever see me again, she would not fail to give me an Account of all she had said to her, or that she should yet think fit to say; and to take my Answer to it, if I thought fit to give any.

Then the Quaker took the Freedom to ask a few Particulars about this wonderful Story, as she called it; at which, the Girl beginning at the first Distresses of my Life, and indeed of her own, went thro' all the History of her miserable Education; her Service under the Lady *Roxana*, as she called me, and her Relief by Mrs. *Amy*; with the Reasons she had to believe, that as *Amy* own'd herself to be the same that lived with her Mother, and especially, that *Amy* was the Lady *Roxana's* Maid too, and came out of *France* with her, She was by those Circumstances, and several others in her Conversation, as fully convinced, and that the Lady *Roxana* was her Mother, as she was that the Lady — at her House (the Quaker's) was the very same *Roxana* that she had been Servant to.

My good Friend the Quaker, tho' terribly shocked at the Story and not well-knowing what to say, yet was too much my Friend to seem convinced in a Thing, which she did not know to be true, she could see plainly I had a mind should not be known; so she turned her Discourse to argue the Girl out of it: She insisted upon the slender Evidence she had of the Fact itself, and the Rudeness of claiming so near a Relation of one so much above her, and of whose Concern in it she had no Knowledge, at least, no sufficient Proof; that as the Lady at her House was a Person above any Disguises, so she could not believe that she would deny her being her Daughter, if she was really her Mother; that she was able sufficiently to have provided for her, if she had not a mind to have her known; and therefore, seeing she had heard all she had said of the Lady *Roxana*, and was so far from owning herself to be the Person,

so

so she had censured that Sham-Lady as a Cheat, and a Common Woman; and that 'twas certain she could never be brought to own a Name and Character she had so justly exposed.

Besides, she told her, that her Lolger, meaning me, was not a Sham-Lady, but the real Wife of a Baronet; and that she knew her to be honestly such, and far above such a Person as she had describ'd: *She then added, that she had another Reason why it was not very possible to be true, and that is, says she, Thy Age is in the way; for thou acknowledgest, that thou art four and twenty Years old; and that thou wast the Youngest of three of thy Mother's Children; so that, by thy Account, thy Mother must be extremely Young, or this Lady cannot be thy Mother; for thou seest, says she, and any one may see, she is but a Young Woman now, and cannot be supposed to be above Forty Years old, if she is so much, and is now big with Child at her going into the Country; so that I cannot give any Credit to thy Notion of her being thy Mother; and if I might counsel thee, it should be to give over that Thought, as an improbable Story that does but serve to disorder thee, and disturb thy Head; for, added she, I perceive thou art much disturbed indeed.*

But this was all nothing: She cou'd be satisfied with nothing but seeing me; and the Quaker defended herself very well, and insisted on it, that she could not give her any Account of me; and finding her still importunate, she affected at last, being a little disgusted that she should not believe her, and added, That indeed, if she had known where I was gone, she would not have given any one an Account of it, unless I had given her Orders to do so; but seeing she has not acquainted me, *says she, where she is gone, 'tis an Intimation to me, she was not desirous it should be publicly known; and with this she rise up, which was as plain a desiring her to rise up too, and be gone, as could be express'd, except the downright showing her the Door.*

Well, the Girl rejected all this, *and told her, She cou'd not indeed expected that she (the Quaker) should be affected with the Story she had told her, however moving; or that she should take any Pity on her: That it was her Misfortune, that when she was at the House before, and in the room with me, she did not beg to speak a Word with me in private, or throw herself upon the Floor,*

Elbow, at my Feet, and claim what the Affection of a Mother would have done for her; but since she had slip'd her Opportunity, she would wait for another; that she found by her (the Quaker's) Talk, that she had not quite left her Lodgings, but was gone into the Country, she suppos'd, for the Air; and she was resolv'd she would take so much *Knight-Errantry* upon her, that she wou'd visit all the Airing-Places in the Nation, and even all the Kingdom over, ay, and *Holland* too, but she wou'd find me; for she was satisfied she could so convince me that she was my own Child, that I wou'd not deny it; and she was sure I was so tender and compassionate, I wou'd not let her perish after I was convinc'd that she was my own Flesh and Blood; and in saying she wou'd visit all the Airing Places in *England*, she reckon'd them all up by Name, and began with *Tunbridge*, the very Place I was gone to; then reckoning up *North-Hall*, *Barnet*, *Newmarket*, *Bury*, and at last, the *Bath*: And with this she took her Leave.

My faithful Agent the Quaker, failed not to write to me immediately; but as she was a cunning, as well as an honest Woman, it presently occur'd to her, that this was a Story, which, whether True or False, was not very fit to come to my Husband's Knowledge; that as she did not know what I might have been, or might have been call'd in former Times, and how far there might have been something or nothing in it, so she thought if it was a Secret, I ought to have the telling it myself; and if it was not, it might as well be publick afterwards, as now; and that, at least, she ought to leave it where she found it, and not hand it forwards to any-body without my Consent: These prudent Measures were inexpressibly kind, as well as seasonable; for it had been likely enough that her Letter might have come publickly to me, and tho' my Husband wou'd not have open'd it, yet it would have looked a little odd that I should conceal its Contents from him, when I had pretended so much to communicate all my Affairs.

In Consequence of this wise Caution, my good Friend only wrote me in few Words, That the impertinent Young woman had been with her, as she expected she would; and that she thought it would be very convenient that, if I could spare *Cherry*, I would send her up, (meaning *Any*) because she found there might be some Occasion for her.

As

As it happened, this Letter was enclosed to *Amy* herself, and not sent by the way I had at first ordered; but it came safe to my Hands; and tho' I was allarmed a little at it, yet I was not acquainted with the Danger I was in of an immediate Visit from this teasing Creature, till afterwards; and I run a greater Risque indeed, than ordinary, in that I did not send *Amy* up under thirteen or fourteen Days, believing myself as much conceal'd at *Tunbridge*, as if I had been at *Vienna*.

But the Concern my faithful Spy, (*for such my Quaker was now, upon the meer Foot of her own Sagacity*) I say, her Concern for me, was my Safety in this Exigence, when I was, as it were, keeping no Guard for myself; for finding *Amy* not come up, and that she did not know how soon this wild Thing might put her design'd Ramble in Practice, she sent a Messenger to the Captain's Wife's House, where she lodged, to tell her that she wanted to speak with her: She was at the Heels of the Messenger, and came eager for some News; and hoped, she said, the Lady, (meaning me) had been come to Town.

The Quaker, with as much Caution as she was Mistress of, not to tell a downright Lie, made her believe she expected to hear of me very quickly; and frequently by the by, speaking of being Abroad to take the Air, talked of the Country about *Bury*, how pleasant it was; how wholesome; and how fine an Air: How the *Downs* about *Newmarket* were exceeding fine, and what a vast deal of Company there was, now the Court was there; till at last, the Girl began to conclude, that my Ladyship was gone thither; for, she said, She knew I loved to see a great-deal of Company.

Nay, says my Friend, thou tak'st me wrong, I did not suggest, says she, that the Person thou enquirest after, is gone thither, neither do I believe she is, I assure thee: Well, the Girl smiled, and let her know, that she believed it for all that; so, to clench it fast, Verily says she, with great Seriousness, Thou do'st not do well, for thou suspectest every-thing, and believest nothing: I speak solemnly to thee, that I do not believe they are gone that Way; so if thou giv'st thyself the Trouble to go that Way, and art disappointed, do not say that I have deceived thee: She knew well enough, that if this did abate her Suspicion, it would do little more than amuse her; but by this she kept her in suspence till *Amy* came up, and that was enough.

When *Amy* came up, she was quite confounded, to hear the Relation which the Quaker gave her, and found means to acquaint me of it; only letting me know, to my great Satisfaction, that she would not come to *Tunbridge* first; but that she would certainly go to *Newmarket* or *Bury* first.

However, it gave me very great Uneasiness; for as she resolved to ramble in search after me, over the whole Country, I was safe nowhere, no, not in *Holland* itself; so indeed, I did not know what to do with her: And thus I had a bitter in all my sweet, for I was continually perplexed with this *Hussy*, and thought she haunted me like an Evil Spirit.

In the mean time, *Amy* was next-door so stark-mad about her; she durst not see her at my Lodgings, for her Life; and she went Days without Number, to *Spittle-Fields*, where she us'd to come, and to her former Lodgings, and could never meet with her; at length, she took up a mad Resolution, that she would go directly to the Captain's House in *Redriff*, and speak with her; it was a mad Step, that's true, but, as *Amy* said, she was mad, so nothing she could do, could be otherwise: For if *Amy* had found her at *Redriff*, she (the Girl) would have concluded presently, that the Quaker had given her Notice, and so that we were all of a Knot, and that in short, all she had said was right: But as it happened things came to better than we expected; for that *Amy* going out of a Coach, to take water at *Tower-Warf*, meets the Girl just come on Shoar, having crossed the Water from *Redriff*: *Amy* made as if she would have passed by her, tho' they met so full that she did not pretend she did not see her, for she looked fairly upon her first; but then turning her Head away, with a Slight, offered to go from her; but the Girl stopped, and spoke first, and made some Manners to her.

Amy spoke coldly to her, and a little angry; and after some Words, standing in the Street, or Passage, the Girl saying, she seemed to be angry, and would not have spoken to her: Why, says *Amy*, How can you expect I should have any more to say to you, after I had done so much for you, and you have behaved so to me? The Girl seemed to take no Notice of that now, but answered, I was going to wait on you now: Wait on me! says *Amy*; what do you mean by that? Why, said she again, with a kind of Familiarity, I was going to your Lodgings.

Amy

Amy was provoked to the last Degree at her, and yet she thought it was not her time to resent, because she had a more fatal and wicked Design in her Head, against her; which indeed, I never knew till after it was executed, nor durst Amy ever communicate it to me; for as I had always expressed myself vehemently against hurting a Hair of her Head, so she was resolved to take her own Measures, without consulting me any more.

In order to this, Amy gave her good Words, and concealed her Resentments as much as she could; and when she talk'd of going to her Lodging, Amy smiled, and said nothing, but call'd for a Pair of Oars to go to *Greenwich*; and ask'd her, seeing she said she was going to her Lodging, to go along with her, for she was going Home, and was all alone.

Amy did this with such a Stock of Assurance, that the Girl was confounded, and knew not what to say; but the more she hesitated, the more Amy pressed her to go; and talking very kindly to her, *told her*, If she did not go to see her Lodgings, she might go to keep her Company, and she would pay a Boat to bring her back again; so, *in a Word*, Amy prevailed on her to go into the Boat with her, and carried her down to *Greenwich*.

'Tis certain, that Amy had no more Business at *Greenwich* than I had; nor was she going thither; but we were all hampered to the last Degree, with the Impertinence of this Creature; and in particular, I was horribly perplexed with it.

As they were in the Boat, Amy began to reproach her with Ingratitude, in treating her so rudely, who had done so much for her, and been so kind to her; and to ask her, What she had got by it? Or what she expected to get? Then came in my Share, the Lady *Roxana*; Amy jested with that, and bantered her a little; and *asked her*, if she had found her yet?

But Amy was both surprized and enraged, when the Girl told her roundly, That she thanked her for what she had done for her; but that she would not have her think she was so ignorant as not to know that what she [Amy] had done, was by her Mother's Order; and who she was beholden to for it: That she could never make Instruments pass for Principals, and pay the Debt to the Agent, when the Obligation was all to the Original: That she knew well enough who she was, and who she was employed by: That she

she knew the Lady ----- very well (*naming the Name that I now went by*) which was my Husband's true Name, and by which she might know whether she had found out her Mother or not.

Amy wish'd her at the Bottom of the Thames; and had there been no Watermen in the Boat, and no body in sight, *she swore to me*, she would have thrown her into the River: I was horribly disturb'd when she told me this Story, and began to think this would at last, all end in my Ruin; but when *Amy* spoke of throwing her into the River, and drowning her, I was so provok'd at her, that all my Rage turn'd against *Amy*, and I fell thorowly out with her: I had now kept *Amy* almost thirty Years, and found her, on all Occasions, the faithfullest Creature to me, that ever Woman had; *I say* faithful to me; for however wicked she was, still she was true to me; and even this Rage of hers was all upon my Account, and for fear any Mischief should befall me.

But be that how it would, I could not bear the Mention of her Murthering the poor Girl, and it put me so beside myself, that I rose up in a Rage, and bade her get out of my Sight, and out of my House; told her, I had kept her too long, and that I would never see her face more; I had before told her, That she was a Murtherer, and a bloody-minded Creature; that she cou'd not but know that I could not bear the Thought of it, much less the mention of it; and that it was the impudentest Thing that ever was known, to make such a Proposal to me, when she knew that I was really the Mother of this Girl, and that she was my own Child; that it was wicked enough in her; but that she must conclude I was ten times wickeder than herself, if I could come into it: That the Girl was in the right, and I had nothing to blame her for; but that it was owing to the Wickedness of my Life, that made it necessary for me to keep her from a Discovery; but that I would not murther my Child, though I was otherwise to be ruined by it: *Amy* replied somewhat rough and short, Would I not; but she would, *she said*, if she had an Opportunity: And upon these Words it was that I bade her get out of my Sight, and out of the House; and it went so far, that *Amy* pack'd up her Alls, and marched off; and was gone for almost good and all: *But of that in its Order; I must go back to her Relation of the Voyage which they made to Greenwich together.*

They

They held on the Wrangle all the Way by Water; the Girl insisted upon her knowing that I was her Mother, and told her all the History of my Life in the *Pallmall*, as well after her being turned away, as before; and of my Marriage since; and which was worse, not only who my present Husband was, but where he had lived, viz. at *Rome* in *France*; she knew nothing of *Paris*, or of where we was going to live, namely, at *Namurgen*; but told her in so many Words, That if she could not find me here, she would go to *Holland* after me.

They landed at *Greenwich*, and *Amy* carried her into the Park with her, and they walked above two Hours there, in the farthest and remotest Walks; which *Amy* did, because as they talked with great Heat, it was apparent they were quarrelling, and the People took Notice of it.

They walked till they came almost to the Wilderness, at the South side of the Park; but the Girl perceiving *Amy* offered to go in there, among the Woods, and Trees, stopped short there, and would go no farther; but said, she would not go in there.

Amy smiled, and asked her What was the Matter? She replied short, She did not know where she was, nor where she was going to carry her, and she would go no farther; and without any more Ceremony, turns back, and walks apace away from her; *Amy* owned she was surprized, and came back too, and called to her; upon which the Girl stoppt, and *Amy* coming up to her, asked her, What she meant?

The Girl boldly replied, She did not know but she might murther her; and that, in short, she would not trust herself with her; and never would come into her company again, alone.

It was very provoking; but however, *Amy* kept her Temper, with much Difficulty, and bore it, knowing that much might depend upon it, so she mocked her foolish Jealousie, and told her, she need not be uneasy for her, she would do her no Harm, and would have done her Good, if she would have let her; but since she was of such a refractory Humour, she should not trouble herself, for she should never come into her Company again; and that neither she, or her Brother, or Sister, should ever hear from her, or see her any more; and so she should have the Satisfaction of being the Ruin of her Brother and Sister, as well as of herself.

The Girl seem'd a little mollified at that; and said, That for herself, she knew the worst of it; she could seek her Fortune; but it was hard her Brother and Sister should suffer on her Score; and said something that was tender, and well enough on that Account. But *Amy* told her, It was for her to take that into Consideration; for she would let her see, that it was all her own; that she would have done them all Good, but that having been used thus, she would do no more for any of them; and that she should not need to be afraid to come into her Company again, for she would never give her any Occasion for it any more; *by the way*, this was false in the Girl too, for she did venture into *Amy's* Company again after that, once too much; *as I shall relate by itself.*

They grew cooler however afterwards, and *Amy* carried her into a House at *Greenwich*, where she was acquainted, and took an Occasion to leave the Girl in a Room a while, to speak to the People in the House, and so prepare them to own her as a Lodger in the House; and then going in to her again, told her, There she lodg'd; if she had a mind to find her out; or if any body else had any thing to say to her; and so *Amy* dismiss'd her, and got rid of her again; and finding an empty Hackney Coach in the Town, came away by Land to *London*; and the Girl going down to the Water-side, came by Boat.

This Conversation did not answer *Amy's* End at all, because it did secure the Girl from pursuing her Design of hunting me out; and tho' my indefatigable Friend the *Quaker*, amus'd her three or four Days, yet I had such Notice of it at last, that I thought fit to come away from *Tunbridge* upon it, and where to go, I knew not; but in short, I went to a little Village upon *Epping Forest*, call'd *Woodford*, and took Lodgings in a Private House, where I liv'd retir'd about six Weeks, till I thought she might be tir'd of her Search, and have given me over.

Here I receiv'd an Account from my trusty *Quaker*, that the Wench had really been at *Tunbridge*; had found out my Lodgings; and had told her Tale there in a most dismal Tone; that she had followed us, as she thought, to *London*; but the *Quaker* had answered her, That she knew nothing of it, which was indeed true; and had admonished her to be easie, and not hunt after People of such Fashion as we were, as if we were Thieves; that she might

be assured, that since I was not willing to see her, I would not be forced to it; and treating me thus would effectually disoblige me. And with such Discourses as these she quitted her; and *she (the Quaker)* added, that she hoped I should not be troubled much more with her;

It was in this Time that *Amy* gave me the History of her *Greenwich Voyage*, when she spoke of drowning and killing the Girl, in so serious a Manner, and with such an apparent Resolution of doing it, that, *as I said*, put me in a Rage with her, so that I effectually turned her away from me, *as I have said above*; and she was gone; nor did she so much as tell me whither, or which Way she was gone; on the other Hand, when I came to reflect on it, that now I had neither Assistant or Confident to speak to, or receive the least Information from, *my Friend the Quaker* excepted, it made me very uneasy.

I waited and expected, and wondered, from Day to Day, still thinking *Amy* would one Time or other think a little, and come again, or *at least*, let me hear of her; but for ten Days together I heard nothing of her; I was so impatient, that I got neither Rest by Day, or Sleep by Night, and what to do I knew not; I durst not go to Town to the Quaker's, for fear of meeting that vexatious Creature, *my Girl*, and I could get no Intelligence, where I was; so I got my Spouse, upon Pretence of wanting her Company, to take the Coach one Day, and fetch my Quaker to me.

When I had her, I durst ask her no Questions, nor hardly knew which End of the Business to begin to talk of; but of her own accord she told me, that the Girl had been three or four times haunting her, for News from me; and that she had been so troublesome, that she had been obliged to show herself a little angry with her, and *at last told her plainly*, that she need give herself no Trouble in searching after me, by her Means; for she (the Quaker) would not tell her, if she knew; upon which she refrained a-while: But on the other hand, *she told me*, it was not safe for me to send my own Coach for her to come in; for she had some Reason to believe, that she (*my Daughter*) watched her Door Night and Day, nay, and watched her too every Time she went in and out; for she was so bent upon a Discovery, that she spared no Pains; and she believed she had taken a Lodging very near her House, for that Purpose.

I could

I could hardly give her a Hearing of all this, for my Eagerness to ask for *Amy*; but I was confounded when she told me she had heard nothing of her; 'tis impossible to express the anxious Thought that rowled about in my Mind, and continually perplexed me about her; particularly, I reproached myself with my Rashness, in turning away so faithful a Creature, that for so many Years had not only been a Servant, but an Agent; and not only an Agent, but a Friend, and a faithful Friend too.

Then I considered too, that *Amy* knew all the Secret History of my Life; had been in all the Intrigues of it, and been a Party in both Evil and Good, and at best, there was no Policy in it, that as it was very ungenerous and unkind, to run Things to such an Extremity with her, and for an Occasion too, in which all the Fault she was guilty of, was owing to her Excess of Care for my Safety; so it must be only her steady Kindness to me, and an Excess of Generous Friendship for me, that should keep her from ill-using me in return for it; which ill-using me was enough in her Power, and might be my utter Undoing.

These Thoughts perplexed me exceedingly; and what Course to take, I really did not know; I began indeed to give *Amy* quite over, for she had now been gone above a Fortnight; and as she had taken away all her Cloaths, and her Money too, which was not a little, and so had no Occasion of that kind, to come any more, so she had not left any Word where she was gone, or to which Part of the World I might tend to hear of her.

And I was troubled on another Account too, viz. That my Spouse and I too had resolved to do very handsomely for *Amy*, without considering what she might have got another Way at all; but we had said nothing of it to her; and so I thought, as she had not known what was likely to fall in her Way, she had not the Influence of that Expectation to make her come back.

Upon the whole, the Perplexity of this Girl, who hunted me, as it were, like a Hound, she had had a hot Scent, but was now at a Taint; I say, that Perplexity, and this other Part, of *Amy* being gone, issued in this, I resolved to be gone, and go over to *Holland*; there I believed, I should be at rest: So I took Occasion, one Day, to tell my Spouse, that I was afraid he might take it ill that I had amused him thus long, and that, at last, I doubted I was not with
Child;

Child; and that since it was so, our Things being packed up, and all in order for going to *Holland*, I would go away now, when he pleased.

My Spouse, who was perfectly easy, whether in going or staying, left it all entirely to me; so I considered of it, and began to prepare again for my Voyage; but alas! I was irresolute to the last Degree; I was, for want of *Amy*, destitute; I had lost my right Hand; she was my Steward, gathered in my Rents, *I mean my Interest Money*, and kept my Accompts, and, *in a Word*, did all my Business, which I had to transact abroad; and without her, *indeed*, I knew not how to go away, not how to stay. But an Accident thrust itself in here, and that even in *Amy's* Conduct too, which frightened me away, and without her too, in the utmost Horror and Confusion.

I have related how my faithful Friend the Quaker was come to me, and what Account she gave me of her being continually haunted by my Daughter; and that, *as she said*, she watched her very Door, Night and Day; *the Truth was*, she had set a Spy to watch so effectually, that she (the Quaker) neither went in or out, but she had Notice of it.

This was too evident, when the next Morning after she came to me (*for I kept her all Night*) to my unspeakable Surprise, I saw a Hackney-Coach stop at the Door where I lodg'd, and saw her (*my Daughter*) in the Coach all-alone: It is a very good Chance in the middle of a bad one, that my Husband had taken out the Coach that very Morning, and was gone to *London*; as for me, I had neither Life or Soul left me; I was so confounded, I knew not what to do, or to say.

My happy Visitor had more Presence of Mind than I; and ask'd me, If I had made no Acquaintance among the Neighbours? I told her, Yes, there was a Lady lodged two Doors off, that I was very intimate with. But hast thou no Way out backward to go to her? *says she*. Now it happened there was a Back-Door in the Garden by which we usually went and came to and from the House; so I told her of it: *Well, well*, says she, *Go out and make a Visit then, and leave the rest to me*. Away I run; told the Lady (for I was very free there) that I was a Widow to Day, my Spouse be-

ng gone to *London*, so I came not to visit her, but to dwell with her that Day; because also, our Landlady had got Strangers come from *London*: So having tramed this orderly Lye, I pulled some Work out of my Pocket; and added, I did not come to be Idle.

As I went out one Way, my Friend the Quaker went the other, to receive this unwelcome Guest: The Girl made but little Ceremony; but having bid the Coachman ring at the Gate, gets down out of the Coach, and comes to the Door; a Country-Girl going to the Door (belonging to the House) for the Quaker forbid any of my Maids going: *Madam* asked for my Quaker by Name; and the Girl asked her to walk in.

Upon this, my Quaker seeing there was no hanging-back, goes to her immediately, but put on all the Gravity upon her Countenance, that she was Mistress of; and that was not a little indeed.

When she, the Quaker, came into the Room (*for they had shew'd my Daughter into a little Parlour*) she kept her grave Countenance, but said not a Word; nor did my Daughter speak a good-while; but after some time, my Girl began, and said, I suppose you know me, *Madam*.

Yes, says the Quaker, I know thee; and so the Dialogue went on.
Girl. Then you know my Business too.

Quaker. No verily, I do not know any Business thou can'st have here with me.

Girl. Indeed my Business is not chiefly with you.

Qu. Why then dost thou come after me thus far?

Girl. You know who I seek. [*And with that she cry'd.*]

Qu. But why should'st thou follow me for her, since thou knowest, that I assured thee more than once, that I knew not where she was?

Girl. But I hoped you could.

Qu. Then thou must hope that I did not speak Truth; which would be very wicked.

Girl. I doubt not but she is in this House.

Qu. If those be thy Thoughts, thou may'st enquire in the House; so thou hast no more Business with me; Farewell. [*Offers to go.*]

Girl. I would not be uncivil; I beg you to let me see her.

Qu. I am here to visit some Friends, and I think thou art not very civil in following me hither.

Girl.

Girl. I came in hopes of a Discovery in my great Affair, which you know of.

Qu. Thou camest wildly indeed; I counsel thee to go back again, and be easie; I shall keep my Word with thee, that I would not meddle in it, or give thee any Account, if I knew it, unless I had her Orders.

Girl. If you knew my Distress, you could not be so cruel.

Qu. Thou hast told me all thy Story, and I think it might be no more cruelty to tell thee, than not to tell thee; for I understand she is resolved not to see thee, and declares she is not thy Mother: Will'st thou be owned, where thou hast no Relation?

Girl. O! if I could but speak to her, I would prove my Relation to her, so that she could not deny it any longer.

Qu. Well, but thou can'st not come to speak with her, it seems.

Girl. I hope you will tell me if she is here; I had a good Account that you were come out to see her, and that she sent for you.

Qu. I much wonder how thou couldest have such an Account; if I had come out to see her, thou hast happened to miss the House; for I assure thee, she is not to be found in this House.

Here the Girl importuned her again, with the utmost Earnestness, and cry'd bitterly; insomuch, that my poor Quaker was soften'd with it, and began to persuade me to consider of it, and if it might consist with my Affairs, to see her and hear what she had to say; but this was afterwards: *I return to the Discourse.*

The Quaker was perplexed with her a long Time; she talked of sending back the Coach, and lying in the Town all Night. This my Friend knew would be very uneasy to me, but me durst not speak a Word against it; but on a sudden Thought she offered a bold Stroke, which though dangerous if it had happened wrong, had its desired Effect.

She told her, That as for dismissing her Coach, that was as she pleased, she believed, she would not easily get a Lodging in the Town; but that as she was in a strange Place, she would so much befriend her, that she would speak to the People of the House, that if they had room, she might have a Lodging there for one Night, rather than be forced back to London, before she was free to go.

This was a cunning, though a dangerous Step, and it succeeded accord-

accordingly, for it amused the Creature entirely, and she presently concluded, that really I could not be there then; otherwise she would never have asked her to lie in the House, So she grew cool again presently, as to her lodging there; *and said, No*, since it was so, she would go back that Afternoon, but she would come again in two or three Days, and search that, and all the Towns round, in an effectual a Manner, if she stay'd a Week or two to do it; for, *in short*, if I was in *England*, or *Holland*, she would find me.

It Truth, *says the Quaker*, thou wilt make me very hurtful to thee then. Why so, *says she*? Because wherever I go, thou wilt put thyself to a great Expence, and the Country to a great deal of Trouble. Not unnecessary, *says she*. Yes truly, *says the Quaker*, it must be unnecessary, because it will be to no Purpose; I think I must abide in my own House, to save thee that Charge and Trouble.

She said little to that, except that, *she said*, she would give her as little Trouble as possible; but she was afraid she should sometimes be uneasy to her, which she hoped she would excuse. My Quaker told her, she would much rather excuse her, if she would forbear; for that, if she would believe her, she would assure her, she should never get any Intelligence of me, by her.

That set her into Tears again; but after a while recovering herself, *she told her*, Perhaps she might be mistaken; and she (the Quaker) should watch herself very narrowly, or she might, one Time or other, get some Intelligence from her, whether she would or no; and she was satisfied she had gained some of her by this Journey; for that if I was not in the House, I was not far off; and if I did not remove very quickly, she would find me out. Very well, *says the Quaker*; then if the Lady is not willing to see thee, thou givest me Notice to tell her, that she may get out of thy Way.

She flew out in a Rage at that, *and told my Friend*, that if she did, a Curse would follow her, and her Children after her; and denounced such horrid Things upon her, as frightened the poor tender-hearted Quaker strangely, and put her more out of Temper than ever I saw her before; so that she resolved to go home the next Morning; and I, that was ten times more uneasy than she,

resolved to follow her, and go to *London* too; which however, upon second Thoughts, I did not; but took effectual Measures not to be seen or owned, if she came any more; but I heard no more of her for some Time.

I staid there about a Fortnight, and in all that Time I heard no more of her, or of my Quaker about her; but after about two Days more, I had a Letter from the Quaker, intimating, that she had something of Moment to say, that she could not communicate by a Letter, but wished I would give myself the Trouble to come up; directing me to come with the Coach into *Goodman's-Fields*, and then walk to her Back-Door on Foot, which being left open on purpose, the watchful Lady, if she had any Spies, could not well see me.

My Thoughts had for so long Time been kept as it were waking, that almost every thing gave me the Alarm, and this especially, so that I was very uneasie; but I could not bring Matters to bear, to make my coming to *London* so clear to my Husband as I would have done; for he liked the Place, and had a Mind, *he said*, to stay a little longer, if it was not against my Inclination; so I wrote my Friend the Quaker Word, *That I could not come to Town yet*; and that besides, I could not think of being there under Spies, and afraid to look out of Doors; and so, *in short*, I put off going for near a Fortnight more.

At the end of that Time she wrote again, *in which she told me*, That she had not lately seen the *impertinent Visitor*, which had been so troublesome; but that she had seen my *Trusty Agent*, *Amy*, who told her, she had cry'd for six Weeks without Intermission; that *Amy* had given her an Account how troublesome the Creature had been; and to what Straights and Perplexities I was driven, by her hunting after, and following me from Place to Place, as she had done.

After this, *Amy* told her, That notwithstanding I was angry with her, and had used her so hardly, for saying something about her of the same kind; yet there was an absolute Necessity of securing her, and removing her out of the Way; and that, *in short*, without asking my Leave, or any body's Leave, she would take Care she should trouble her Mistress, *meaning me*, no more; and

that after *Amy* had said so, she had indeed, never heard any more of the Girl; so that she supposed *Amy* had managed it so well, as to put an End to it.

The innocent well-meaning Creature, my *Quaker*, who was all Kindness and Goodness, in herself, and particularly to me, saw nothing in this, but she thought *Amy* had found some Way to persuade her to be quiet and easie, and to give over teasing and following me, and rejoyc'd in it, for my sake; as she thought nothing of any Evil herself, so she suspected none in any body else, and was exceeding glad of having such good News to write to me: But my Thoughts of it run otherwise.

I was struck as with a Blast from Heaven, at the reading her Letter; I fell into a fit of trembling, from Head to Foot; and I ran raving about the Room like a Mad-Woman; I had no-body to speak a Word to, to give Vent to my Passion; nor did I speak a Word for a good-while, till after it had almost overcome me; I threw myself on the Bed, and cried out, *Lord be merciful to me, she has murdered my Child*; and with that, a Flood of Tears burst out, and I cried vehemently for above an Hour.

My Husband was very happily gone out a hunting, so that I had the Opportunity of being alone, and to give my Passions some Vent, by which I a little recovered myself: But after my Crying was over, then I fell in a new rage at *Amy*; I called her a thousand Devils, and Monsters, and hard-hearted Tygers; I reproached her with her knowing that I abhorred it, and had let her know it sufficiently, in that I had, as it were, kicked her out of Doors, after so many Years Friendship and Service, only for naming it to me.

Well, after some time my Spouse came in from his Sport, and I put on the best Looks I could to deceive him; but he did not take so little Notice of me, as not to see I had been crying, and that something troubled me; and he pressed me to tell him; I seemed to bring it out with Reluctance, but told him, My Backwardness was, more because I was asham'd that such a Trifle should have any Effect upon me, than for any Weight that was in it: So I told him, I had been vexing myself about my Woman *Amy's* not coming again, that she might have known me better, than not to believe I should have been Friends with her again, and the like; and that, in short, I had

had lost the very best Servant by my Rashness, that ever Woman had.

Well, well, says he, if that be all your Grief, I hope you will soon shake it off; I'll warrant you, in a little while we shall hear of Mrs. Amy again; and so it went off with me; for I was uneasie, and terrified to the last Degree, and wanted to get some farther Account of the thing: So I went away to my sure and certain Comforter, the *Quaker*, and there I had the whole Story of it; and the good innocent *Quaker* gave me joy of my being rid of such an unsufferable Tormentor.

Rid of her! Ay, says I, if I was rid of her fairly and honourably; but I don't know what she has done; sure she han't made her away: O fie! says the my *Quaker*, how can'st thou entertain such a Notion? No, no, made her away! Amy didn't talk like that; I dare say, thou may'st be easie in that, Amy has nothing of that in her Head, I dare say, says she; and so threw it, as it were out of my Thoughts.

But it would not do; it run in my Head continually, Night and Day I could think of nothing else; and it fixed such a Horror of the Fact upon my Spirits, and such a Detestation of *Amy*, who I looked upon as the Murtherer, that, *as for her*, I believe, if I cou'd have seen her, I should certainly have sent her to *Newgate*; or to a worse Place, upon Suspicion; indeed, I think I could have kill'd her with my own Hands.

As for the poor Girl herself, she was ever before my Eyes; I saw her by Night, and by Day; she haunted my Imagination; if she did not haunt the House; my Fancy show'd her me in a hundred Shapes and Postures; sleeping or waking, she was with me: Sometimes I thought I saw her with her Throat cut; sometimes with her Head cut, and her Brains knock't out; other times drown'd in the Great Pond at *Camberwell*: And all these Appearances were terrifying to the last Degree; and that which was still worse, I could really hear nothing of her: I sent to the Captain's Wife in *Redriff*, and she answered me, she was gone to her Relations in *Spittle-Fields*; I sent thither, and they said, she was there about three Weeks ago; but that she went out in Coach with the Gentlewoman that us'd to be so kind to her, but whether she was gone, they

they knew not; but she had not been there since I sent; back the Messenger for a Description of the Woman she went out with; and they described her so perfectly, that I knew it to be *Amy*, and none but *Amy*.

I sent word again, That Mrs. *Amy*, who she went out with, left her in two or three Hours; and that they should search for her, for I had reason to fear she was Murdered: This frightened them all intollerably; they believed *Amy* had carryed her to pay her a Sum of Money, and that somebody had watched her after her having received it, and had Robb'd and Murder'd her.

I believed nothing of that Part; but I believed as it was, That whatever was done, *Amy* had done it; *in short*, *Amy* had made her away; and I believed it the more, because *Amy* came no more near me, that confirm'd her Guilt by her Absence.

Upon the whole, I mourn'd thus for her, for above a Month; but finding *Amy* still come not near me, and that I must put my Affairs in a Posture that I might go to *Holland*, I open'd all my Affairs to my dear trusty Friend the Quaker, and placed her, in Matters of Trust, in the room of *Amy*, and with a heavy, bleeding Heart for my poor Girl, I embarked with my Spouse, and all our Equipage and Goods, on-board another *Holland's-Trader*, not a Packet-Boat, and went over to *Holland*; where I arrived as I have said.

I must put in a Caution however, here, that you must not understand me as if I let my Friend the Quaker into any Part of the Secret History of my former Life; nor did I commit the Grand reserv'd Article of all, to her, *viz.* That I was really the Girl's Mother, and the Lady *Roxana*; there was no need of that Part being expos'd; and it was always a Maxim with me, *That Secrets should never be opened, without evident Utility*: It could be of no manner of Use to me, or her, to communicate that Part to her; besides she was too honest herself, to make it safe to me; for tho' she lov'd me very sincerely, and it was plain, by many Circumstances, that she did so, yet she would not lie for me upon Occasion, as *Amy* would, and therefore it was not advisable on any Terms to communicate that Part; for if the Girl, or any one else, should have come to her afterwards, and put it home to her, Whether she knew that I

was

was the Girl's Mother or not; or was the same as the Lady *Roxana*, or not; she either would have done it with so ill a Grace, such Blushing, such Hesitations, and Faultring in her Answers, as would have put the Matter out of doubt, and betrayed herself and the Secret too.

For this Reason, I say, I did not discover any thing of that kind to her; and I placed her, as I have said, in Amy's stead, in the other Affairs of receiving Money, Interests, Rents, and the like, and she was as faithful as Amy could be, and as diligent.

But there fell out a great Difficulty here, which I knew not how to get over; and this was, how to convey the usual Supply, or Provision and Money, to the Uncle and the other Sister, who depended, especially the Sister, upon the said Supply, for her Support; and indeed, tho' Amy had said rashly, that she would not take any more Notice of the Sister, and would leave her to perish, as above, yet it was neither in my Nature, or Amy's either, much less was it in my Design; and therefore I resolved to leave the Management of what I had reserved for that Work, with my faithful Quaker, but how to direct her to manage them, was the great Difficulty.

Amy had told them in so many Words, That she was not their Mother, but that she was the Maid Amy, that carried them to their Aunt's; that she and her Mother went over to the *East-Indies* to seek their Fortune, and that there good Things had befallen them; and that their Mother was very rich and happy; that she (Amy) had married in the *Indies*; but being now a Widow, and resolving to come over to *England*, their Mother had obliged her to enquire them out, and do for them as she had done; and that now she was resolved to go back to the *Indies* again; but that she had Orders from their Mother to do very handsomely by them; and, in a word, told them She had 2000 *l.* a piece for them, upon Condition that they proved sober, and married suitably to themselves, and did not throw themselves away upon Scoundrals.

The good Family in whose Care they had been, I had resolved to take more than ordinary Notice of; and Amy, by my Order, had acquainted them with it, and obliged my Daughters to promise to submit to their Government, as formerly, and to be ruled by the honest Man, as by a Father and a Counsellor; and engaged him

to treat them as his Children; and to oblige him effectually to take Care of them, and to make his Old-age comfortable both to him and his Wife, who had been so good to the Orphans: I had ordered her to settle the other 2000*l.* that is to say, the Interest of it, which was 120*l.* a Year, upon them; to be theirs for both their Lives; but to come to my two Daughters after them: This was so just, and was so prudently managed by *Amy*, that nothing she ever did for me, pleased me better: And in this Posture, leaving my two Daughters with their ancient Friend, and coming away to me, (*as they thought to the East-Indies*) she had prepared everything in order to her going over with me to *Holland*; and in this Posture that Matter stood when that unhappy Girl, *who I have said so much of*, broke in upon all our Measures, *as you have heard*; and by an Obstinacy never to be conquered or pacified, either with Threats or Persuasions, pursued her Search after me (*her Mother*) *as I have said*, till she brought me even to the Brink of Destruction, and would, in all Probability, have traced me out at last, if *Amy* had not by the Violence of her Passion, and by a Way which I had no Knowledge of, and indeed abhorred, put a Stop to her; of which I cannot enter into the Particulars here.

However, notwithstanding this, I could not think of going away, and leaving this Work so unfinished as *Amy* had threatened to do, and for the Folly of one Child, to leave the other to starve; or to stop my determined Bounty to the good Family I have mentioned: So, *in a word*, I committed the finishing it all, to my faithful Friend the Quaker, to whom I communicated as much of the old Story, as was needful to empower her to perform what *Amy* had promised; and to make her talk so much to the Purpose, as one employed remotely than *Amy* had been, indeed to do.

To this Purpose, she had first of all a full Possession of the Money, and went first to the Honest Man and his Wife, and settled all the Matter with them; when she talked of Mrs. *Amy*, she talked of her as one that had been empowered by the Mother of the Girls, in the *India*, but was obliged to go back to the *Indies*, and had settled all sooner, if she had not been hindered by the obstinate Humour of the other Daughter; that she had left Instructions with her for the rest; but that the other had affronted her so much, that

she was gone away without doing any thing for her; and that now, if any thing was done, it must be by fresh Orders from the *East-Indies*.

I need not say how punctually my new Agent acted; but which was more, she brought the Old-man and his Wife, and my other Daughter, several times to her House, by which I had an Opportunity, *being only there as a Lodger, and a Stranger*, to see my other Girl, which I had never done before, since she was a little Child.

The Day I contriv'd to see them, I was dress'd up in a Quaker's Habit, and look'd so like a Quaker, that it was impossible for them, who had never seen me before, to suppose I had ever been any thing else; also my Way of talking was suitable enough to it, for I had learned that long before.

I have not Time here to take Notice what a Surprize it was to me, to see my Child; how it worked upon my Affections; with what infinite Struggle I mastered a strong Inclination that I had to discover myself to her; how the Girl was the very Counterpart of myself, only much handsomer; and how sweetly and modestly she behaved; how on that Occasion I resolv'd to do more for her, than I had appointed by *Amy* and the like.

'Tis enough to mention here, that as the settling this Affair made Way for my going on-board, notwithstanding the Absence of my old Agent *Amy*, so however, I left some Hints for *Amy* too, for I did not yet despair of my hearing from her; and that if my good Quaker should ever see her again, she should let her see them; wherein particularly ordering her to leave the Affair of *Spittle-Fields* just as I had done, in the Hands of my Friend, she should come away to me, upon this Condition nevertheless, that she gave full Satisfaction to my Friend the Quaker, that she had not murdered my Child; for if she had, I wou'd never see her Face more: How, notwithstanding this, she came over afterwards, without giving my Friend any of that Satisfaction, or any Account that she intended to come over.

I can say no more now, but that, *as above*, being arrived in *Holland*, with my Spouse and his Son, formerly mentioned, I appeared there with all the Splendor and Equipage suitable to our new Prospect, *as I have already observed*, where we lived many Years in flourishing Cir-

Circumstances, 'till a Lady, whom my Husband took into the House, as a Companion to me, had created some Differences between us, the Consequence of which will be related hereafter; in the mean Time, the following History of this Lady, I believe, will not be disagreeable to the Reader; and as she was allied to some of the noblest Families in *England*, makes it necessary to call her only *Belinda*.

BELINDA, a young Lady of a considerable Fortune, in *Warwickshire*, being oblig'd by some Business to come to *London*, which she had never seen before, was recommended, by some of her Country Acquaintance, to a House where she might board. The Pleasantness of the Situation, and the good Company she found in it, gave her at once the Charms both of the Town and Country; but being naturally of a reserved Temper, and having something in her Mind which seem'd to engross her Thoughts, she grew not presently acquainted with any Body. And tho' she observ'd, that at every Meal, a Plate of whatever came to Table was carried away, before any other Person was help'd, yet she never had the Curiosity to ask to whom it was sent; 'till one Day, some Gentlemen happening to dine there, who formerly had been Boarders, they began to enquire, of the Gentlewoman of the House, how the Recluse did, ——— if she continued her Solitary Course of Life, — and if she had yet been able to find out the Cause of her Retirement. To which the Landlady reply'd, that she was still in the same Mind, in which they left her ——— and that to discover the Mystery of her concealing herself, she believ'd an utter Impossibility. Indeed, (said one of the Gentlemen) to know the Certainty of such an Affair may be a little difficulty, but I think it no hard Matter to form a very probable *Conjuncture*. In my Opinion, no Motive, but *ill requited Love*, cou'd induce a Lady (so young and beautiful, as you describe this to be) to such an obstinate and peevish Resignation of all the Pleasures of Life. I had rather think (answer'd a young Lady who happen'd to be there) 'tis the Effects of Grief for the Death of some near Relation, a Parent perhaps, or ——— How Madam (interrupted the other Gentleman hastily) produce me but one Example, since the Fall of *Adam*, of such a Constancy in Grief, and I shall willingly acquiesce to the Sentiments of so fine a Lady; and as I am positive you cannot,

give

give me leave to say, it is not only impracticable, but also unnatural. Nor can I agree any more with my Friend's Notion of the Matter, than with your's: All kinds of Passion, every Body knows, wear off with Time; and Love, of all others, as 'tis the gentlest, and is subsisted only by *Delight*, of course must dye when Delight is at an End. How then, can it be possible that a Woman, who has for a whole Twelvemonth liv'd in a Retirement, where she neither has seen any Body, nor been seen, if it were so that Love was the Occasion, should not by this be weary both of the Cause and the Effect? No, no, (continued he laughing) I rather think my Landlady, to divert herself, and amuse us, has formed this Story of a beautiful young Creature, whom if the Truth were known, I dare swear is some wither'd Hag, past the Use of Pleasures, and keeps herself in private, lest her Countenance should terrify. Very well (answer'd the good old Gentlewoman) you may be as merry as you please with Age; but, Sir, I fancy if you could have persuaded me to have contrived some means for you to have come to the Sight of this Hag, as you call her, she has Eyes, which wou'd have convinc'd you, that there is Power in Love, beyond what now you seem to imagine of that Passion. All Dinner, and some time after, was past in this sort of Conversation; which, tho' *Belinda* had but a small Share in, yet it fall'd not to excite her Curiosity to a Desire of knowing as much as she could of this Adventure, and as soon as the Company were gone, and she had an Opportunity of entertaining the Landlady alone, she took an Occasion to enquire what sort of Woman the *Recluse*, as they call'd her, really was, — how long she had been there, and by what manner introduc'd. I shall make no Scruple (said she) of informing you as far as I am able; but the Account I can give is so small, that it will only serve to encrease your Desire of knowing more: About a Year past, being told a Lady in a Chair ask'd to speak with me, I went to the Door, but not knowing her, look'd a little surpriz'd, fancying she might be mistaken; I believe she guessed what my Thoughts were, and before I had Time to disolose 'em, Madam! (said she) I have something to communicate to you, which I am not willing any Person shou'd know, but take it as a favour, if you would give me an Opportunity of discoursing you. I then immediately desir'd her to come into the Parlor; and the Door being shut, I am, (resum'd

she) an utter Stranger to you, and indeed design to continue so to all the World; it was but by an Accident I heard of the Accommodation you have for Boarders, and gladly would become one, if you approve of it on the Conditions I shall propose. They must be very strange ones (answered I) that could make me refuse the Company of a Lady such as you appear to be, there are too many Charms in that Countenance, not to give me an Ambition of a nearer Acquaintance. I beg therefore, that you will put me out of the Pain of believing there is a Possibility that any thing could oblige me to deny myself that Honour. She returned this little Compliment only with a Bow, but which had something in it more graceful and obliging than any Words could be; and, after a Pause, the Conditions I mean, said she, are only these. *First*, That you never will endeavour to know more of me, than I am willing to reveal; ——— That you will suffer no one to enter the Apartment ordered for me, but the Servant who shall bring me in my Meat, for I will never dine at Table, and give that Attendance which is necessary. And *Lastly*, That you will be satisfied to accept of a Quarter's Payment, of whatever we shall agree on, always beforehand, for your Security in taking a Person so altogether unknown to you into your House. I will give you, continued she, thinking I look'd amazed, Time to consider on of what I have said, and in a Day or two will wait on you for an Answer; as she spoke these Words, she went hastily into her Chair; leaving me in as great a Consternation at her Behaviour, as ever I remember myself to have been in at any thing in my whole Life. *Belinda* could not here forbear interrupting her, by asking a thousand Questions as to her Dress, her Beauty, and whether she observed any thing of that Melancholly in her Countenance the first Time, which she has since discovered. To all which the Landlady replied, that the Surprise she was in at that Time, hindered her from taking much Notice, either of her Garb or Person; but that, since her being in the House, she was always dressed Rich, but extremely Careless, and would often go with only her Hair and a Nightgown for many Days together. But in Spite, said she, of the little Care she seems to take of herself, Heaven never formed a Creature more exactly lovely; nor do I think it possible for the nicest Eye to discover the least Defect, either in her Face or Shape. What is she, resumed *Belinda*,

as to her Wit and Conversation? I have already told you, answered the other, that she refuses to let us know her Perfections that way, by never stirring from her Apartment, nor permitting any of us to come into it; but if we may form a Judgment of her Genius, by the Entertainment which alone she seems to take Delight in, that of reading the best Authors, we must believe it to be very Elegant; she has an admirable Collection of Books; and my Maid, who waits on her, tells me she never goes in, without finding her engaged in some one of them. Then you ventured, said *Belinda*, to take her, without any farther Knowledge? I considered, replied she, that there could be no great Hazard in it; and, besides, there was something so inexpressibly engaging in her Mien and manner of Address, that I believe it almost an Impossibility she should be refused any thing.

This Account gave *Belinda* the greatest Desire imaginable to be acquainted with her, and never left soliciting the *Landlady* to use her Interest to procure it. The old Gentlewoman, who was extremely good-humour'd, promised to use her Endeavours, but said withal, that she was afraid it was a Work she should not be able to accomplish. You must tell her, said *Belinda*, and perhaps with more Truth than you imagine, that you have a Person in your House, who justly may be termed one of the most unfortunate on Earth,—that I am charmed with her manner of Life—that I could like nothing so much as to partake of such a Retirement—and that if she would permit me, sometimes, to mingle my Tears with hers, I would be satisfied with the Opportunity of indulging my Grief, without any farther Intrusion on her Secrets, than she shall give leave.

This, answered the *Landlady*, if any thing, will do-----and as you have so ingeniously contrived the Plot, it must be entirely owing to my want of Ability in carrying it on; if it should miscarry; and, continued she, I go about it with the more Courage, because that reserved, and indeed too grave Look, for so young and fine a Lady, which you always wear, will, if she consents to see you, give some Credit to my Words. You need not indeed, resumed *Belinda* with a deep Sigh, be under any Apprehensions, that my Behaviour will be in the least contradictory to whatever you shall tell her of my Disposition to indulge a Melancholy, which I have
but

but too much Reason for: You may talk after what manner you please, said the other, but I am too well acquainted with your Circumstances, not to know that you can have no real Causes for that Penitiveness, which, to deal freely with you, very much obscures the Lustre of your Charms.

I know not indeed, continued she with a Smile, what Imaginary ones your Fancy may suggest. Young People, too often, take Pleasure, as it were, in finding out something to afflict themselves with. — I am afraid you have seen some Gentlemen too lovely for your Repose; and, perhaps, he may be, for Love is a blind Deity, of a Quality above your Hopes, or of a Degree below your Discretion to make Choice of — or, 'tis possible, may have proved ungrateful — or engaged — or else — She would, doubtless, have run on with all the Circumstances that can make a young Woman in Love unhappy; if *Belinda*, a little too nearly touched, putting on a more than ordinary Severity in her Countenance, had not interrupted her by saying, Madam! whatever the Occasion of my Melancholly may be, I am so much of the *Recluse's* Mind, as to resolve to keep it Secret. Pardon me, resumed the Landlady, perceiving she was nettled, my Words were meant no otherwise than to divert; and to make what Reparation I can for the Inadvertency of them, will confess, that if a Person of your Age is too apt to seek Occasions of tormenting herself, one of mine is liable to as great a Fault, that of talking too much of Affairs which are not any way her Business. Some Company happening to come in, broke off the Conversation. *Belinda* retired to her Chamber, and the Landlady remained with her Head full of Contrivance, by what means she should bring about the Performance of her Promise.

The next Day an Opportunity offer'd very lucky for her Purpose; the *Recluse* sent for her to pay her some Money; and as soon as that Affair was dispatched, she began to labour the Success of the other, and was so fortunate in her Negotiation, that as much averse as she found the *Recluse* at first, the Assurances she gave her that *Belinda's* Desire of her Society sprung only from a Belief that there was a Sympathy in their Afflictions, at last prevailed on her to receive a Visit from her. Having obtained this Grant, the good old Gentlewoman, eager to acquit her self of the Promise she had made
entreated

entreated that *Belinda* might have leave to wait on her that Night; to which the *Recluse*, having permitted her coming at all, easily consented.

The meeting of these two Ladies was something particular for Persons of the same Sex; each found, at first Sight, so much to admire in the other, that it kept both from speaking for some Moments. The *Recluse* consider'd *Belinda*, as indeed she is, one of the most lovely Persons on Earth; and *Belinda* found the *Recluse* so far beyond the *Landlady's* Description, something so majestic, and withal so sweet and attractive in her Air — such a Mixture of the most forceful Fire, and most enchanting Softness in her Eyes, that she became wholly lost in speechless Wonder; till the *Recluse* (who, tho' as young as *Belinda*, was Mistress of a much greater Presence of Mind) broke Silence in these Words.

If, Madam, (said she, with a Voice and Accent no less charming than her Person) you are enough in Love with misery, to wish to be Partaker of it with me, I heartily can bid you welcome to this Scene of Woe; but if your Grievs are of a Nature that will admit Relief, the Society of a Wretch like me, will be far from adding to your Consolation. To forget the Misfortunes I lament (reply'd *Belinda*) wou'd be, perhaps, a greater Ill than any I yet have known — 'tis my Desire always to remember them, and nothing sure can so well enable me to do it with Patience, as the Knowledge that so many excellent Qualities, as you appear to be Mistress of, cannot be exempted from Calamities. Alas! (resum'd the *Recluse*, bursting into Tears) 'tis the little Knowledge you have of me inclines you to so favourable an Opinion. Believe me, Madam (contin'd she, weeping still more) were you acquainted with the History of this Wretch you see before you, you wou'd allow that as none like me has ever suffer'd, so also none ever has like me deserv'd to suffer. I believe, Madam! (answer'd *Belinda*) one of the greatest Impossibilities you can attempt is, that of persuading me, or indeed any body that sees you, to that Opinion. These little Civilities being over, they fell into a Conversation suitable to that Melancholly their Misfortunes had involv'd them in; and they agreed so perfectly in their Sentiments concerning the Instability of all human Happiness — the little Confidence there was to be put in the Protestations of Friend-

4 He I has now you ob (ship

ship——— and that the only way to attain true Content, was in an absolute Retirement from the World, and a Disregard of every thing in it; that when they parted (as *Belinda* thought it improper, to make her first Visit very long) it was with a mutual Satisfaction, and each began to conceive for the other, a real Tenderness, which has ever since remain'd unshaken.

The next Day (being desir'd to do so by the *Recluse*) *Belinda* made her a second Visit, and, after some Discourse like what had pass'd the Evening before, the Conversation turn'd, perhaps undesignedly by either of them, on *Love*; but when once enter'd, neither seem'd to grow weary of the Subject; and both spoke in so feeling a manner, that if a third Person had been Witness of what they said, she need not have been very quick of Apprehension to discover what was the Source of both these Ladies troubles. They sat together till past Midnight; and when *Belinda* took her Leave, it was not without making an Appointment to pass the next Evening as they had done this.

As soon as *Belinda* was alone, she began to run over in her Mind all the Particulars of the Conversation she had with the *Recluse*, and was now confirm'd in what she before imagin'd, that *Love* had been the sole Cause of her Retirement: She wou'd have given almost one of her Eyes, to have been let into the Secret of the whole Affair, but durst not attempt to ask it, for fear of disobliging her; if the *Recluse*, who was little behind her in Curiosity, had not, at the next Visit, purposely given her an Opportunity.

I know not, Madam! (said she, soon after they were together) whether there be a Possibility for you to imagine from what Cause the Miseries you see me in have proceeded, but I am half positive, that I can more than guess the Origine of that Melancholly which induces you to support the Society of a Wretch like me! —

I cannot doubt, Madam, (reply'd *Belinda*, blushing, yet pleas'd she had so favourable an Opportunity of speaking her Mind without Offence) your Penetration in a much great Matter, since I, who have but a little Discernment, and less Experience, have been bold enough in my Imagination, to assure my self that whatever the *Effects* may be, the *Cause* of both our Sorrows is the same. I am so much of your Mind (resum'd the other) that I am willing to put it to the Tryal. Here (continued she, taking Pens and Paper) do you write, and I will do the same, and by reading what each

each other have set down, both will avoid the Confusion of speaking first. Agreed! (said *Belinda*, and immediately did as the *Recluse* desir'd:) on Exchange of the Papers, *Belinda* read in that which the *Recluse* had writ; *Undone by Love, and the Ingratitude of Faithless Man*. And the *Recluse* found in that which the other had writ, these Words; *For ever lost to Peace by Love; and my own fond Belief*. As I expected, cry'd they out both together; and after a little Pause, Not all the Ills (rejoin'd the *Recluse*) which Fortune watches to oppress us with, are half so ruinous, so destructive, as this one Passion! Nothing, indeed, (replied *Belinda*, weeping) is to our Sex so fatal. Oh Love! continued she, Thou gilded Poison, which kills by slow Degrees, and makes each Moment of our Life a Death! Why, Oh why do we suffer our fond Hearts to harbour thee? — Why are we not like Man, resumed the *Recluse*, bearing her Company in Tears, inconstant, changing, and hunting after Pleasure in every Shape? — Or, if our Sex, more pure, and more refined, disdains a Happiness so gross, why have we not Strength of Reason too, to enable us to scorn what is no longer worthy our Esteem? In these, and the like Exclamations, they pass'd some Time; and had doubtless, given a greater Loose to the over-boiling Passions of their Souls, if their mutual Curiosity to know each other's Adventures, had not obliged them to leave off.

The *Recluse* wou'd fain have persuaded *Belinda* to relate her Story first; but that Lady excus'd herself, in Terms so obliging, and full of Respect, that the other cou'd not press her any farther, and only said, I should hardly be prevail'd on to a Recital of those Misfortunes which, indeed, have fallen on me but too justly, till by knowing yours I should have hope to find Excuse: But, as I am confident no Woes were ever like mine, I have Good nature enough to acquaint you with *em* first, to the End that the Knowledge of mine may make your own seem less, and enable you with more Ease to the Relation of them. *Belinda* answered her only with a Bow, and a little shaking of her Head, at once to thank her for her Civility, and shew that she thought it impossible for any Affliction to exceed that which she endured: And the *Recluse*, after having paid a Tribute of Sighs, which the Remembrance of her Misfortunes always exacted from her, began to satisfy her Companion's Impatience in these Words.

The Story of CLEOMIRA.

TO make you perfectly comprehend the Truth of my Affairs (said she) I must acquaint you of what Condition my Parents were: Though their Names I shall beg leave to conceal, lest by declaring to any one that so deservedly unhappy a Creature is their Child, I should disturb the sacred Quiet of their Ashes. She could not speak this without bursting into a Torrent of Tears, which, for some Moments, hindered her from proceeding: But as soon as she had a little repelled the Violence of her Grief, You must know (continued she) that my Father was a younger Branch of a Family which boasts a Place among the Prime of the Nobility; and my Mother was descended from Ancestors whose noble Actions merited Titles, though they were none, but that of being the Best and most Ancient of the Gentry. They had both been from their Infancy accustomed to a Court, and had Spirits far above their Circumstances, which made them unable to endure the Thoughts either of a Retirement, or appearing in Publick with an Equipage any way inferior to what those of the same Rank maintained. Thus was I, who was their only Child, bred up in all the Pomp and Pride of Quality; and great Part of what should have been reserved for my Fortune, spent in my Education, lavished on those unnecessary Ornaments and Expences, which all young Girls, who are fond of making a Show, affect. I was not much above thirteen when my Father died: His Loss was so real a Grief to my Mother, that for a long Time she remained inconsolable, nor did her former Gaiety ever return. Instead of entertaining any Thoughts of a second Marriage, she transplanted all the Tenderness she had born my Father on me; and the Consideration how improbable it was for her to match me according to my Birth, or the Expectations I had been bred to, (my Father being able to leave me no more than three thousand Pounds) every Day increased her Affliction: Nor were these Reflections unaccompanied with Fears, that my Youth, and some Attractions, which her Love made her Fancy she saw about me, might draw on Temptations to the Disadvantage of my Reputation; she therefore resolv'd on the sudden to quit the Court, as a Place too dangerous.

gerous for a young Woman to continue in, who had not a Fortune sufficient to entitle her to the honourable Affections of the *Great*, and too much Pride to listen to the Solicitations of the *Inferiour* Sort who frequented it.

That the less Notice might be taken of the Change of her Humour, she pretended an Indisposition, and that the *London* Air did not agree with her, and in a short Time took a House about six Miles distant from it. This was like present Death to me, but all I could say was of no Effect; the more pressing I appeared to stay, the more she thought it needful I should go; and the passionate Fondness I expressed for the Town Diversions, and Disdain of a Country Life, confirmed her, that it was absolutely necessary at once to prevent the Danger she imagined threatned me, and repel the Growth of that Ambition which she found had already taken too deep a Root in my youthful Heart.

In fine, we went; and this so sudden and disagreeable an Alteration in my Manner of Living, gave me a Shock which I knew not how to express. My Mother, entirely throwing off the *fine Lady*, began to practice the meer *Country Gentlewoman*, and used her utmost Endeavour to make me do so too. She was continually telling me, that my Fortune, joined with all she could be able to do for me, could entitle me to no greater Hopes.---That it was Time for me to learn to play the good Housewife, and forget that there ever were such Things as Balls, Plays, Masquerades, or Assemblies. All this, which was the Effect of her Prudence, I looked upon as a Whimsy; and the Restraint she laid me under, of not visiting or being visited by any Persons, whom she could have the least Apprehension of, I considered as an Affront to my Understanding. I am obliged, said she, my dear *Belinda*, to enter into these Particulars, because this sudden Change from all the Liberties in the World, to the most strict Confinement, is all the Excuse I can make for my ill Conduct.---But why, continued she, after a Pause, should I alledge that for my Vindication, which Time, perhaps, and Consideration, might have made easie to me, if a more fatal Enemy to my Repose as well as my Interest, my Honour, and my Virtue, had not made it more hateful to me.

Here was her Speech, a second Time, interrupted by her tempestuous

pestuous Grief; and *Belinda* was forced to make use of all the Arguments she was Mistress of, to persuade her to Moderation.

At last, getting leave to resume her Discourse, One Day, said she, one fatal Day----- would to God it had been the last of my Life, as it was of my Repose, two Ladies came to visit my Mother, and speaking of a magnificent Ball that Night at Court, told her they were come on Purpose to entreat her to permit me to accompany them. By the Account I have given, you may judge how little Probability there was she should consent; but whether she was really overcome by their Reasons, or only consented to their Persuasions, being Persons she very much esteemed, I know not; but when I least expected it, she ordered me to make myself ready to wait on them.

Never was any Prisoner, who long had languished in a Dungeon, more rejoiced to see the open Air, than I to find myself once more in Court, where every Body welcomed me, every Body caressed and, indeed, I believe some of them with a good deal of Sincerity: For not being of a Quality great enough to create *Envy*, nor so mean as to beget *Contempt*, and tolerably well humour'd; I am sensible there were many whose kind Wishes I heartily possessed. I had my Admirers too; at least, there were several young Sparks, and those not of the lowest Rank, who took Pleasure in making me believe so. Not that my Heart was any way affected with what they said, though I had Vanity enough to encourage it: Love was a Passion I had so little Notion of, that I considered it no more than as a Fiction, and only dress'd up by the Poet in such Variety of Shapes, to make the Amusement more entertaining: But this, alas! was the unlucky Hour in which I was to be convinced of the real Being of that Power I so slightly had regarded; and soon learned to pity, by my own, those Pains which, with an unregarding Ear, I often had heard others mourn.

About the Middle of the Ball, as I was dancing with a young Nobleman, who had done me the Honour to take me out, I saw, on a sudden, the Eyes of the whole Company turned towards the Door; but being too busily engaged in what I was about, had not Time to consider what the Meaning might be, till having ended my Dance, and it being my Turn to take a Partner, a Lady of my

Acquaintance whispered me, and said, There is the fine young Lord--- I will not call him by any other Name than that of *Lysander*. He is lately, continued my Friend, come from his Travels, and but this Moment entered; it will be an envied Gallantry if you lead him out. While she was speaking, I directed my Eyes where I perceived she looked, and saw a Form which appeared more than Man, and nothing inferior to those Ideas we conceive of Angels; his Air! his Shape! his Face! were more than human-- Myriads of lightning Glories darted from his Eyes as he cast them round the Room, yet tempered with such a streaming Sweetness! such a descending Softness, as seemed to entreat the Admiration he commanded! A thousand Times have I attempted since to speak what it was I felt at this first fatal Interview, but Words could never do Justice to the Wonders of his Charms, or half describe the Effect they wrought on me: Oh! had his Soul been worthy of that lovely, that transporting Outside, I should have been too blest, been *happy* to as superlative a Degree, as now I am curst and wretched. But not to tire you with unavailing Wishes, or fruitless Exclamations, I lov'd--- was plunged in a wild Sea of Passion before I had Time to know or stem the Danger. I had so many disordered Motions in my *Heart*, that I am amaz'd my *Feet* keep any just Measure with the Musick; or, that so little us'd as I had ever been to disguise my Thoughts, my *Eyes* did not betray the Confusion of my *Soul*, and make visible to the whole Company what I was not yet acquainted with my self: But whether the great Concourse of much finer Ladies who were there, hinder me from being much regarded, or those Changes which, I am very sure, appear'd in my Countenance, were only taken for the Effects of Bashfulness in dancing with a Person who was altogether a Stranger, I cannot tell, but I 'scap'd that Raillery, which I must have expected to have met with, if any Body had been sensible of the true State of my Condition. When I had done dancing, I mingled with those Ladies who came with me, and some others of my Acquaintance: *Lysander* soon joined us, and entered into a Conversation which shew'd his wit was, if possible, superior to his Beauty: He was perfectly well-bred, obliging and gallant, and had something of I know not what peculiarly graceful and enchanting in his Voice and Manner of Address; and what added to his other Engagements, at least en-
deared

deared 'em to my (already doating) Heart was; that, though he said nothing in particular to me at that Time, yet I cou'd easily discern he aimed at pleasing only me. But he behaved not in so general a Manner the whole Night.

A little after, perceiving I was separated a good Distance from the Persons I had been with, he came up to me, and making a low Bow, Madam, said he, how fortunate am I, who after having been in many Courts, where I have seen Ladies who justly may be call'd Beautiful, and since my return home have met with nothing that could bring me into good Humour with my Native Country, have now the Blessing of beholding a Face, which not only sums up all the different Lovelinesses of other Charmers, but has also an immense divine Treasure of its own! ----- Others may move the Heart by slow Degrees, and with some one Perfection captivate the Sense; but you have Graces which strike the very Soul, and at first Sight subdue each Faculty. Blush not, fair Excellence! continued he, finding I was silent, as indeed I had no Power to speak, I tell you but the Sense of all Mankind---but what Millions of Tongues are full of, and what your happy Glass, as often as you look in it, informs you.

If, my Lord, replied I, recollecting myself as well as I was able, there were a Possibility of being unacquainted with my own Defects, so goodnatur'd a Compliment might give me Graces which before I wanted: But as I have the Misfortune of knowing my self: but too well, all the advantage I can gain by it, is the Honour of being in the Company of a Person whose Wit can find something to praise in those the least praise-worthy. Oh most Angelick (resum'd he, tenderly pressing my unresisting Hand) most adorable of your Sex! rob not the brightest Temple of the Deity, your Divine Self, of your just Due----If (but that's impossible) you can distrust the Force of your so potent Charms, the Effects they have on me will quickly tell you what they are---Cou'd those inspiring Eyes but look into my Soul, they wou'd perceive their Power---Pardon this Declaration; a vulgar Passion, and for a vulgar Object, may wait on the dull Formalities of Decorum, but what I feel for you bursts out, and blazes too fierce to be conceal'd---It is not to be express'd---it is not to be imagin'd how he look'd while he was speaking these Words, and much less in what Manner I behav'd at hearing them:

Slip-

Surprize, Joy, Hope, Fear and Shame at once assaulted me, and hurried my wild Spirits with such Vehemence, that had I answer'd at all, it must have been something strangely incoherent; but happily for me, some Company came that Instant to the place where we were standing, deliver'd me from the greatest Perplexity I could be in. I did not, however, recover my self in the whole Time of my being there; yet so much was I infatuated, so lost to all Thought of Reason or Discretion, that whenever he approach'd me, I had not Courage to avoid him, as I might easily have done without being taken Notice of. 'Tis sure he took all Opportunities of entertaining me in the Manner he had begun, and without doubt, as he has since own'd to me, he saw enough in my Eyes to make him know, the Pleasure I took in hearing him speak far exceeded my Confusion on what he said.

It was almost Morning when the Ball broke up; and there being no Possibility of my going Home till next Day, I pass'd that Time at the Lady's House who brought me out: But tho' the Fatigue and Hurry of the Night would at another Season have made me glad of Rest, I had *now* enough to keep me waking. *Lysander's* Charms, his Beauties, his Wit, the Declaration he had made me, and the Manner in which I had receiv'd it, gave me sufficient Matter of Reflection: I could not think I had listned to any Protestations of Love from a Man I had never seen before, without inexpressible Shock to my Modesty; but these Considerations soon gave Place to others even more destructive to my Peace: *Lysander* was too lovely, and appear'd too deserving, for me to repent, for any long Time, the Complaisance I had shov'd him, and my greatest Trouble was the Fear that I shou'd never see him more.

I resolv'd to say nothing to my Mother, of what had pass'd, believing, with Reason enough, that she wou'd not only condemn me for Mismanagement, but also take such Measures as shou'd for ever deprive me of the Sight of him: Love taught me a cunning which before I was a Stranger to; and though I burn'd with Desire to be talking something of my ador'd *Lysander*, and vent some Part of the Overflowings of my ravi'd Soul, yet I so well observ'd, that at my Return Home I never mention'd the least Syllable which cou'd give Suspicion; and contented my self, as well as I was able, with the Belief that *Lysander* (who, I found by his calling me by my

Name had enquir'd who I was) wou'd find some Means to send to me: Nor did that Hope deceive me.

The very next Day, happening to be at a Window, I perceiv'd a Fellow walking backwards and forwards, before our House; it presently came into my Head, that there was a probability he might be a Messenger from *Lysander*. I observ'd his Motions a good while, and finding he still lurk'd about, with his Eyes continually fix'd on our Door, I made a Pretence to go down; and standing there a little, the Man drew nearer, but with a Circumspection which confirm'd me my Conjectures were true: No body being within Hearing, I call'd to him, and ask'd him if he wanted any thing. Madam, (answer'd he softly, and pulling a Letter out of his Pocket) by the Description which was given me, I believe *this* is design'd to you. It is, it is, (cry'd I, as soon as I saw the Supercription) and immediately ran in, too much transported to say any more, I into an Arbor in the Garden, to peruse the dear contents, which I very well remember, and are too deeply engraven in my Mind ever to be forgotten.

To the Divine CLEOMIRA.

IF the most adorable *Cleomira* wanted any Proof of the Dominion of her Charms, besides the just Title they have to reign over the Souls of all Mankind, this had come to convince her of a Truth which Yesterday she seem'd so cruelly to doubt. But you are too Divine to be ignorant of your Attributes; and, if there is any thing in you, which is not of a Piece with Heaven, it is that you are not sufficiently stored with Mercy to look favourably on a Man who has no other Merit than his Zeal. It is with an inconceivable Terror I look back on that Declaration, which the Force of the most violent Passion that ever was oblig'd me to make in so unpolite and unprepared a Manner; and tremble when I consider how much Reason you have to condemn the Presumption of this. But, if as many Years of humble faithful Services as Fate has allotted for my Life may purchase a Pardon for the Sin of my Temerity, I devote them intirely to you.—Henceforward rule my every Word and Action.—I had almost said every Wish; but Oh! that

is not in your Power, vast as it is! for shou'd you command me to cease burning with impatient Desires to obtain the Blessing of pleasing you, I freely own, I could not — nay, I would not, in that, obey you — in spite even of your self-I must for ever Love, for ever Worship you — Permit me then to owe to your Bounty, what else my own Obstinacy will give me, the Title of the

Most excellent Cleomira's truest, and everlasting Vorary
 Lyfander.

There was a *Postscript* (continued the *Recluse*) in which he press'd very strenuously for an Answer, the Words of which I do not very well remember; and indeed 'twas needless to have troubled you with this, or many others of the like Nature; but as there are some of his Letters, which in the Course of my Story I shall be obliged to repeat, I thought it proper to let you see the Difference 'twixt *Hoping* and *Possessing*; to what an elevated Height the Wings of Fancy soar, while in Pursuit; and how long, how drooping is their Flight, when there is nothing farther to be obtained. I will not pretend to tell you what my Transports were while I was reading; if, as you confess, you really know the Power of Love, *your own Heart* will make you comprehend what 'twas mine felt much more than any Words cou'd do. I was almost distracted for fear the Messenger should be gone, and I have no Opportunity to send an Answer; but he was better instructed by his Master; and when I opened the Door, he presently started out from behind a great Tree that grew before the House. I made a Sign to him that he shou'd stay, and went to my Chamber to write: I durst not allow Time for Thought, lest any Interruption should happen, and only following the Dictates of my inconsiderate, and transported Passion, returned an Answer in these Words.

To the Noble L Y S A N D E R,

IF *Cleomira* were half so worthy Adoration as *Lyfander* truly is, she might, without any Difficulty, be brought to believe all you say to her; but, as I am sensible I have no other Graces
 than

than those your Fancy is pleas'd to bestow on me, you cannot blame me, if I am a little Diffident of the Continuance of a Passion so weakly grounded——I shall not, however, desire you to desist giving me any farther Testimonies of it; because, as you say, while you are possess'd of it, Entreaties of that kind wou'd be altogether unavailing. I think my self extremely oblig'd to you for the Caution with which your Letter was delivered, and if you favour me with any more, hope you will make Use of the same, which will be of the greatest Consequence to the Peace of

Cleomira.

Notwithstanding the Violence of my Passion, there were some Intervals in which I endured severe Upbraidings from my Modesty, for engaging thus precipitately in Love Affairs; but they lasted not long, and at every Return grew weaker than before: *Lyfander's* Idea would suffer nothing but it self to have any Prevalence in my Soul; and the Glory, methought, of appearing amiable in his Eyes, was more Happiness than all the World beside could give.

The next Morning, almost the first Person I saw, was the Messenger again, walking as he had done the Day before, I made no doubt, but he had another *Billet* for me, and the first Moment I had an Opportunity, went down to receive it: I was not deceived, for as soon as I had opened the Door, he slip't a Paper into my Hand, and retired to his Covert quick as Lightning: The Words of this were;

To my Ador'd CLEOMIRA.

HOW much was I mistaken while I believed it impossible there was a Charm more touching than your *Wit* and *Beauty*; your *Goodness* ravishes beyond both!——the Brightness of your Eyes inflame the Heart——the Harmony of your Voice enchants the Ear——but this divine Sweetness of your Nature diffuses Heaven, and gives Raptures with *Angels* only, and the happier *Man* whom *Cleomira* favours, can be blest'd with!——Say, with what Words, thou wondrous Abstract of Perfection! Thou loveliest, wisest,——best of all created Beings! Shall I repay a Condescension so unhop'd

hop'd——unmerited? To be permitted to adore you, is Ecstasy too great to bear in Silence!—— Oh give my impetuous Transports leave to vent themselves, —— let me beneath your Feet declare the mighty Sense I have of so unvalued an Obligation—— let, on that happy Earth you tread on, my humble *Body* avow the lower Prostration of my devoted *Soul*, and never rise till by some Arguments forcible as my Passion, I have convinced you with how much Truth, Purity, and everlasting Zeal, I am your Slave. I have not been so sparing of my Enquiries as not to know it will be almost impossible to obtain the Blessing I entreat at *your* House; but if you can think of any *other*, where with Convenience I may be favoured, let the same unequal'd Excellence of Disposition, which has already done such Miracles for me, incline you to let me know it by the Bearer: As also if you will feast my longing Eyes with a transient View from your Window, as I pass by To-morrow Morning on Horseback. Tho' your *Idea* has never been absent from my *Soul* since the first Moment I beheld you, yet my impatient *Sense* reproaches me that I have lived these two Days, without endeavouring at least a greater Proportion of Felicity and testifying by all the Ways, I am able, how much I am the never-too-much deified *Cleomira's*

Eternally devoted and most passionate

Lyfander.

Any Body but me, wou'd have been too much alarmed at the reading those Lines, to have returned any Answer, unless it were such a one as should have entirely taken away those Hopes my Complaisance had inspired. The Boldness of desiring me to appoint a Meeting was so great, as all the fine things he said to me could not atone for; and was sufficient to have taught me, how dangerous it was to make any Condescensions of this kind to a Man I had so little Knowledge of. To *another*, I say, this might have been a timely Warning; but alas! I was so blinded with my Passion, that I could think of nothing but which way I should gratify it, and without any Struggles from that Bathfulness, which till now never had forlook me, writ him a Reply in this Manner.

To the Worthy *LYSANDER*.

THE Gratitude you express for that, perhaps, too great Compliance you have found in me, is infinitely obliging; for I wou'd much rather you shou'd impute it to any thing, than to that of Vanity, which too often influences a Woman of my Age to encourage Addressees her *Heart* is no way affected with; and, tho' it may appear too free a Declaration, I am so little acquainted with disguising the Truth, that I cannot forbear telling you, it is to your Merits alone you are indebted for the Liberty of a Correspondence, which you are pleas'd to think agreeable. Your Information, that it is impossible for me to receive the Honour you wou'd do me at our House, has not deceiv'd you, and I must also let you know I am too strictly confin'd to promise it at any other. I must therefore leave it entirely to Fortune, to procure me any farther Pleasure in your Conversation than what your Letters affords; but in the mean time shall not fail being at the Window that overlooks the Road, in the Hope of seeing a Person whose Regard shall always be most valuable to,

CLEOMIRA

When I had sent this away, I feign'd my self a little indispos'd, to avoid the Necessity of Talking; for Speech was now become a Pain, since I durst not employ it in the Praise of ador'd *Lysander*. I pass'd the whole Day, and good part of the Night, in contemplating the Happiness I shou'd enjoy next Morning; and it cou'd be call'd scarce Dawn when I got up, and took my Post at the appointed Window, whence I believe it wou'd have been impossible for any thing to have remov'd me. My Mother was no sooner up, than she enquir'd after my Health; her Tenderness making her doubt the Disorder I complain'd of was encreas'd, because I, who us'd her with utmost circumspection, had not been in her Chamber, as it was my Custom every Morning, to entreat her Blessing; and being told where I was, came in to me, not a little surpris'd to find me in a Room, which by reason of the great Dust of the Highway, was very seldom made use of, and the least Pleasant of the

the house. She d'd ot fail to ask the Cause of being there; and I told her, that not being very well, I hop'd some Benefit from the Air, which I thought blew fresher on that Side of the house, than on the other.

She cou'd have no Suspicion of the Truth, and this Excuse pass'd well enough. Breakfast being ready, she sent a Servant to call me; but I not being prevail'd onto come, she order'd it shou'd be brought where I was.

This vex'd me to the Heart, for I was not willing that any Body, much less that she shou'd be a Witness of this Interview, tho' at such a Distance, with *Lysander*. I knew she had discerning Eyes, and fear'd she might discover more than I wish'd she shou'd, in one, or both of our Faces. I refus'd to drink Tea, scarce spoke, or if I did, it was so peevishly and unmannerly, that I am amaz'd she did not leave me in rage to indulge my ill humour; but she taking my Behaviour for the Effect of Vapours, continued to soothe me by a thousand endearing Expressions, which were wholly lost upon me: I had no Eyes, no Ears, no Heart open for any thing but *Lysander*.

At length he came, and with a Mein, and Air, so soft, so sweet, so graceful, that Painters might have Copy'd *Adonis* from him, fit indeed to charm the Queen of Beauty. He was dress'd in a strait Jockey-Coat of green Velvet, richly embroider'd at the Seams with Silver, the Buttons were *Brilliant*s, neatly set in the Fashion of Roses; his Hair, which is black as Jet, was ty'd with a green Ribond, but so strait ly, but that a thousand little Ringlets stray'd o'er his lovely Cheeks, and wanton'd in the Air; a crimson Feather in his Hat set off, to vast Advantage, the dazzling Whiteness of his Skin! In fine he was all over Charms——all over glorious, and I believe it impossible for the most Insensible to have beheld him without adoring him——what then became of me?——Oh God! how fruitless wou'd any Endeavours be to represent what 'twas I felt!——Transplanted——Ravish'd? I Wonder the violent Emotions of my Soul did no bear my Body out of the Window——O wou'd it had been so, that Love and Life might then had an end, and 'scap'd Woes which both have since endur'd.

The great Trampling which the Horses made (for he had four Servants in rich Liveries and gallantly mounted attended him) oblig'd

oblig'd my Mother to rise from her Chair, what it was that occasion'd it. She came to the Window the Moment that *Lysander* was making me a profound Reverence: I know not how I return'd it, but doubtless with a confusion suitable to what I felt within and which was but too visible to Mother's Observation; for after he was pass'd by, and my Eyes were pursuing him as far as I was able, she rous'd me from the enchanting Dream I had been in, by pulling me by the Sleeve from the Window, and looking earnestly in my Face, as tho' she wou'd have penetrated into my Soul, bad me tell her who that Gentleman was. I know not Madam; (answer'd I, with a Voice which sufficiently discovered the Insincerity of my Words.) I am afraid (said she, changing her Countenance to more Severity than ever I had seen her wear) you know him but too well acquaint me therefore this Morning with the Truth, where, when, and how often you have seen him.

I could not immediately gather Courage to make any Reply to this Command; and, when I had assured her, as I truly might, that I had never seen him but at the Ball; she was so far from giving Credit to what I said, that she flew into the greatest passion I had ever seen her in, and after she had a little vented it in some Exclamations on the Follies of Love, and Disobedience to Parents, left me alone to meditate on her Words.

This was a dreadful Allay to the Pleasure I had lately enjoy'd; I perceiv'd the Secret I had taken so much Pains, and fancy'd myself so artful in concealing, was by my own inadvertency discovered. — I could not reflect on the indignation of a Mother, who, having the Restraint she laid me under, I had Reason to think a most Affectionate one, without a concern very near Remorse, for doing any thing to occasion it; but when I reflected on the Injustice she did me (for so my Love taught me to consider it) in condemning my Admiration of a Person so every way deserving as *Lysander* appear'd to be; I regretted nothing but the Power she had over me, lest she should exert it yet more, and deprive me of any future means of seeing him, I had been happy never to have been more deceiv'd than I was in my Conjecture, that she would take all possible Precaution to prevent my having any Conversation with a Person, whom she so justly believed dangerous.

I had not pass'd many hours in contemplating the Misfortunes I fancy'd

cy'd myself in, before an old Woman (formerly my Governess) and now a sort of Overseer in the Family, came into the Room, and took upon her to reprove me, in Terms I could not well support, on my giving her some tart Replies, she told me, that she had Orders from my Mother to confine me to my Chamber, till I had learned the Lesson of Humiliation. I was forced to obey, and indeed was well enough contented to be any where, to avoid the hearing of such Sermons. All that I thought an Affliction was, that 'twould be impossible for me to receive or answer any Letters from *Lysander*; and it was only on this Account that I pass'd three Days of my Confinement in mortal Inquietudes: On the fourth, I saw the *Mercury* to my *Jove*, mounted on a little heap of Rubbish that the Gardener had thrown out, and peeping over the Wall. The poor Fellow, as I since understood, had been every one of those Days watching about the House, but not being able to get a Sight of me, either at the Door, or Windows, he at last came round that way. The Appearance of this Man made me almost mad, till casting in my mind, if there were not a possibility of giving him notice of my Condition, Invention furnished me with this. I opened the Window, and thrusting myself out as far as I could, made a Sign to him, that he should tarry a little where he was, then taking a Piece of Paper, writ in it these Words.

I Know who you come from, and therefore guess your Business—
 Let your Lord know I am in the strictest Confinement imaginable on his Account—I fear it will be impossible for me to continue the Happiness of a Correspondence with him.—It will be to no Purpose for you to stay, or return any more on the Design you are sent on, but if you are taken Notice of, may occasion worse Usage, if possible, than what I now endure.

CLEOMIRA.

I pulled a Lead out of the Sleeve of my Gown, and wrapping it up in this Paper to give it Weight, made a shift to hurt it to the Place where he could reach it. He took a Letter out of his Pocket, and held it up to shew me, making several Motions, by which I understood he was charged to give it me; but by shaking my Head, and putting my Handkerchief to my Eyes, I testified the Im-

possibility of his Attempt, and Part of the Concern I was in: I say but Part; for after he was gone, and I began to reflect that, indeed, I never should be able to see *Lysander* more, no Tongue can Express the Emotions of my Soul: For many Days I did nothing but weep, and that in so violent a Manner, that the Servants whom my Mother sent in to wait on me, apprehended I should fall into Fits. This, when it was told her, gave so considerable an Alarm to her Tenderness, that it half dissipated her Anger; and, when I least expected it, she ordered I should come down into the Parlour, and receiving me with her usual Affability. You have suffered enough (said she) for the Imprudence of contracting an Acquaintance without my Approbation; but as I shall forget it, at least so far as never to reproach you with it; so I would have you remember it enough to make you avoid, for the future, any Faults of the like Nature. And, to convince me that there is nothing farther between you and this Gentleman than what you would have me believe, you must resume that Chearfulness which is becoming your Youth, and the little Cause you have met with to be otherwise. My Heart was too full to suffer me to make any other Reply to these Words than a low Curt'sy; but when I had gathered Courage enough to speak, I endeavoured to assure her, that my Melancholly proceeded from no other Cause, than being of a sudden deprived of all those Diversions I had ever been accustomed to; but that, since it was her Pleasure, I would use my utmost Efforts to make it easy to me.

She seemed satisfied with what I said; and, perhaps, believing she had been a little too severe, from that Time took me abroad with her where-ever she went; she carried me to visit several Relations, and a great many Acquaintance, whose Society I formerly took Delight in: But alas! this now could afford no Comfort to my Heart; it rather encreased than diminished the Anguish of my secret Discontent; and since I could not see *Lysander*, I could have been better pleased to have seen no body. There was no Possibility of conveying a Letter to him; I knew not where to direct; or if I had, notwithstanding the Priviledges my Mother now allowed me, she scarce ever trusted me out of her Sight. Thus for two Months did I languish out my Nights in fruitless Wishes, and my Days in the most tormenting (of all) Employments, that of being obliged

obliged to wear a seeming Gaiety, when all my Soul was full of Horror and Distraction.

In this Time a new Family came into the Neighbourhood, they soon made an Acquaintance with ours, and my Mother was so well pleased with the good Breeding and Gravity of the Master and Mistress of it, that she entered into an Intimacy with them much sooner than was her Custom to do with any body. They visited frequently at our House, and my Mother always made me accompany her to return them, though much against my Inclination; for, as I have already told you, my own Thoughts, unquiet as they were, gave me more Satisfaction than any Company but *Lyfander's* could bestow.

Both the Man and the Woman seemed wonderfully charmed with me; and Mrs. *Marvir* (for that was the Name they were called by) would often engage me in particular Conversations, which I, as carefully as I could without being rude, avoided: 'Till one Day. she began a little kind of Raillery, on my affecting a Demureness in my Behaviour, which, she said, she was sure was not in my Nature. My Mother, who was willing to take all Opportunities of persuading me to cheerfulness, joined with her in this Assertion, and between them both I was pretty much put to it (so inwardly perplexed as I was) to make any Defence, which, by the Awkwardness of it, would not discover that I had, indeed, something at my Heart that clouded the Gaiety of my Looks. I am afraid (said Mrs. *Marvir* to my Mother) that your Daughter is in Love: I warrant if we should search her Chamber, we should find a Number of amorous Books, and Epistles of the same Nature. I never had that Curiosity (replied my Mother) but I hope she would receive none of the latter without my Knowledge, and I have taken Care to instill such Principles in her Mind as will not let her be over fond of the other. Will you give me leave to hunt? resumed she Laughing. Yes, with all my Heart (answered I, glad to put an End to the Discourse.) I waited on her up Stairs, where, after she had a little looked about her, and praised the Pleasantness of the Chamber, having a full Prospect of the Garden; I told you, (said she) that I should find something here more tender than you would have the World be sensible of. I dare Swear (continued she, taking a Letter from my Toilet, and giving it to me) the Con-

tents of this may justly be called *Amorous*. I had no sooner cast my Eyes on the Direction, than I knew the Hand to be *Lysander's*. The Consternation I was in may be more easily imagined than expressed: I had no Power to break the Seal, but continued looking sometimes on her, sometimes on the Table, and sometimes on the Letter, as wondring by what Means it had been conveyed there. Cease your Surprise (resumed she) it was no other who laid the Letter on your Toilet than she who took it off, and delivered it to your Hand, and she who you need make no Scruple to confide in, since your *Lysander* has thought me worthy of the Trust of bearing you his Soul, his Vows, and everlasting Faith. I will make some Excuse (continued she) for leaving you above, that you may have Time both to read this and return an Answer, which I have engaged to bring him. I could not get leave from my Astonishment, to make and Reply to what she said; but when she was gone, had my Senses enough about me to lock the Door, and then fed my impatient and transported Wishes with these Lines.

To my Soul's only Treasure, the adorable
CLEOMIRA.

HOW easily might be spared the Stings—the Scorpions—the never-dying Fires, and all the fancy'd Tortures which Priests invent to ride the frighted World, if any of those Soul-enslavers knew what it was to love like me! Absence from Cleomira is a Hell which all their labour'd Policy wants Skill to paint—Within my burning Breast ten Thousand real Furies rage, and tear me with variety of Anguish—Mad with Desire, and wing'd with daring Hopes, sometimes I could tear down the envious Walls, and baffle all Impediments which hold you from me—Sometimes, despairing, chill'd with deadly Horror, I fancy you regardless of my Woe, and easy under this Restraint—One Moment I imagine I see a favour'd Rival bask in your Smiles! gaze on your Eyes in happy tranquil Transport! and kiss that Hand, which but to touch I would forego my Life—The next, distracted, think I behold you dragg'd by a cruel Mother to some detested Choice your Soul abhors; then soften into Female Tendernefs, and weep for you and for myself.

self:—*Ob* Gleaner! All the Names of *Misery*! of *Woe*! of *Anguish* insupportable; are poor to what, indeed, my Soul endures for you—My *Passion*, and my *Pains*, are like your *Charms*, unutterable! and only can be felt.—This Age of *Absence* has been spent in nothing but *Contrivances* to shorten it, 'till these good People, whose *Fidelity* you may rely on, were so fortunate to get into your *Acquaintance*.—O then, thou dearest! brightest! loveliest of thy Sex! indulge the same *Design*, and let them not be less regarded by you, now you know they are the *Instruments* by which you must receive the *Testimonies* of a *Passion* too sublime to be inspired by any, but your *divine Self*, and which can be felt, in so high a Degree, by none but you.

Your eternally devoted

LYSANDER.

I need not tell you the *Raptures* of my over-joy'd Soul at reading this Letter; my Answer to it will sufficiently inform you that I had no Consideration but of the *Ecstasy* it produced.

To the most Excellent LYSANDER:

YOU paint the *Woes* of *Love* in so extravagant a Manner, that one had need be more than ordinarily sensible of that *Passion*, to be able to give any Credit to a Description so far beyond what is commonly conceived of it. I am afraid *Lysander* is too well acquainted with his *Perfections* not to know the *Effects* they must produce, and but feigns to feel what he alone is capable of inspiring: Were I really possessor of as many *Charms*, as you all powerful Wit wou'd dress me up in, you have a thousand Opportunities of diverting your *Thoughts*; *Business*—Variety of *Objects*—and gay *Conversation*, make your *Hours* slide away in vastly different *Entertainments*—while I, of much the softer Sex, and consequently susceptible of a deeper *Impression*, have nothing to do but to indulge a *Passion*, which in the Beginning seems *delectable*.—The *Dawn*, indeed, promises ten thousand future Joys!—what the *Meridian* will be, is wholly in your Faith and honour to be prov'd—But I have so implicit a Dependence on both, that I will make no Scruple to confess the *Trans-*

ports of hearing from you again, is more than Recompence for all those Inquietudes you have so perfectly represented in yours, and which I hope will be no more the Portion of

Your Obedient A. S.

When I had finish'd this I went down to the Company, and soon found an Opportunity, unperceiv'd, to slip into Mrs. *Martin's* Hand. Scarce a Day pass'd after this without my receiving a Letter, either through hers, or her Husband's Means. I will not trouble you with the Repetition of them, being of no great Consequence to my Story, and wou'd draw it into a Length too tedious for your Patience: By those you have heard, you may guess the Purport of the rest; so shall only tell you, that every one of his grew more pressing for an Engagement of my Affection, and mine still more complying. I pass'd my Time contently enough, though not so *happily* as I wish'd. The continual assurances he gave me of his Passion, and the Hopes that through these People meant I shou'd soon enjoy the Blessing of his Presence, were Cordials sufficient to keep a Love less ardent than mine alive. And, indeed, I had no great Exercise for my Patience: *Lysander* was too eager, and his Agents too industrious, to permit me to grow cool in my Desires, or imagine him to be so.

One Evening, my Mother and I, being invited to sup at *Martin's* House, while he engag'd her in a serious Discourse, his Wife took me into the Garden: The Transports of my beating Heart inform'd me to what End I was brought there, before she had Time to tell me that *Lysander* waited my Approach in the Arbor. But, when I came near enough to see him, no Confusion sure was ever equal to mine! — The Reflection that this was but the third Time I had seen him — but the *second* in which I had an Opportunity to speak to him — the Condescensions of my Letters — and that of which I now gave of meeting him, came all at once into my Head, and I was ready to sink with Shame. But never did any Votary approach the Image of the Saint he worshipp'd with more Humanity and awful Reverence than *Lysander* me! He fell at my Feet, — embrac'd my Knees, and kiss'd my Hands with such a tender Transport — such an enchanting Mixture of Delight and Fear, as one wou'd think no false Love cou'd feign, and was

was impossible to behold unmov'd: My Spirits were in too violent an Agitation to suffer me to raise him from the Posture he was in, 'till gaining Confidence to do it himself, and intercepting my Disorders in his Favour, he took me in his Arms, all blushing, trembling, and incapable of Defence, and laying his Head upon my panting Bosom, seem'd to breath out all his Soul in fervent Tenderneſs. He held me thus ſome Moments before I knew what I was doing; and when, at laſt I ſtruggled to get free, it was ſo faintly, that he might eaſily perceive the Liberties he had taken were not unpardonable: I look'd for Mrs. Marvir, deſigning to upbraid her for the Boldneſs her Guelt had been guilty of; but ſhe was gone, and the Reproaches I made him, were ſuch as did not diſcourage him from a Repention of his Crime. In ſhort, all the Time of our being together (which I believe was above an Hour) was paſt in nothing but offending and forgiving: I found by my ſelf, that Love is a Paſſion that diſdains Reſtraint, and thought it unjuſt to be angry at almoſt any thing the Force of it might influence him to commit. To go about to tell you what he ſaid — in what Manner he look'd — and with what Graces every thing he did, and ſpoke were accompanied, would be to wrong him; for no Words, no Accents, no Motions but his own, can give you any juſt Idea of his Perfections. Never was any ſo form'd to Charm, and to Betray — never was ſuch foul Deceit, Hypocriſy, and Villany, couch'd in ſuch ſeeming Sweetneſs, Softneſs, and Sincerity. — Heaven! with what a counterfeited Vehemence has he exclaim'd againſt the Inconſtancy of his Sex! — With what an Appearance of Sanctity and Truth has he invoc'd the Saints and Angels, to be a Witneſs of his Vows! when, laſh of them, he has a thouſand — thouſand times proteſted, that *Cleomira* ſhould ever be more dear to him than Life! Oh record 'em, all ye bleſſed Spirits! and in the laſt great Day, when I alone can hope for Juſtice, bring 'em in dreadful Teſtimony againſt him, and force his black, his leprous Soul to own Conviction.

Here the Remembrances of ſome Paſſages made this unhappy Lady wholly unable to proſecute her Diſcourſe; and all that *Belinda* cou'd ſay to mitigate the Rage of Temper ſhe was rais'd to, prov'd of no Effect, 'till a Shower of new returning Tears in part allay'd the Tempeſt: When ſhe was a little come to herſelf; After

this

this (return'd me) I had many Opportunities, by Mrs. Maron's Confrivance, of indulging my fond Wishes in *Elysander's* Presence; and so zealous was he in making me believe the Passion he pretend- ed was sincere, that in those Days, when there was no other way to see me, he would come disguis'd, and walk before the House till I had taken Notice of him; then by some Motion discover who he was, and tell me by his Eyes, a thousand tender Things, nor far from the Place till by my withdrawing myself he saw it was proper he should stay no longer, I cannot but say, hence as my Pas- sion was before, this uncommon Assiduity of his made a vast Ad- dition to it, and I thought it the greatest Hardship in the World, that I could not have the Freedom of conversing with him, with- out all this Difficulty on both sides. Mrs. Maron who kept con- tinual Watch over my Humour, took this Advantage of my Dis- content, and whenever we were alone endeavour'd to heighten it; She was always representing the Injustice my Mother did me, in debarring me from all those Liberties young Ladies in this King- dom are permitted to enjoy, and made use of all her Cunning to convince me, that those Restrictions were laid upon me, only to wear me by degrees from the Pleasures of the World; that I might be the more willing to accept of a Husband, who, she told me, my Mother had provided for me. By what I can guess from her Discourse (said she) you are to be married to a Country Gen- tleman, and that in so short time as will amaze you. She spoke in such a Manner, as gave me no Suspicion of the Truth; and re- collecting how much my Mother had labour'd to persuade me into a good Opinion of a Country Life, was assur'd in my Mind that she had really some Body in View, to whom she design'd to sacri- fice me. And 'tis impossible to represent the Perplexity this Be- lief involv'd me in. If any such thing happen'd, Madam (said I) how should I avoid it? I know (answer'd this wicked Woman, having brought me to the Point she aim'd at) unless by chusing a Guar- dian, you entirely divert your Mother of the Power of disposing of you. She said no more at this Time, because my Mother hap- pen'd to come into the Room; but whenever they had an Oppor- tunity, it was with such like Speeches both she and her Husband entertain'd me, till at last, the Fears of what they had infused into my Imagination — the Hopes of enjoying my beloved Li- berty

berty, and my infinitely more beloved *Lysander's* Company uncon-
 troul'd, made me resolve to do as they advis'd. I could think of
 no Person so proper for me, to make Choice of for a Guardian as
Marvir himself. It was not very difficult to persuade him to it,
 (it being the only thing he wanted) tho' at first he seem'd averse.
 Every thing being concluded on, one Morning, before my Mother
 was out of Bed, I left her House and went to *Marvir's*, whence
 immediately I took Coach with him for *London*; and by electing
 him according to Law, put it out of her Power to oblige me to
 return. Her Behaviour, on the first Knowledge of what I had
 done, was all Distraction; she fell into Fits, rav'd, came to *Mar-*
vir's House, and without any Regard to that Decorum she was us'd
 so strictly to observe, loudly exclaim'd against their Treachery, and
 my Ingratitude and Disobedience: I had not Assurance to appear
 before her, and they (having gain'd their End) cou'd endure the
 Brunt of her Upbraidings: In a few Days we remov'd to *Lon-*
don, and I was out of the Fear of meeting her: But her Tender-
 nefs soon getting the better of her Indignation, she sent a Letter to
 me, full of Persuasions in the most endearing Terms, to return to
 her again. I had the Courage to write to her, tho' I had not to
 see her, and returned an Answer of Excuses for the Measures I had
 taken; but told her it was wholly owing to that unreasonable
 Restraint she had laid me under — that I abandoned her, only in
 Pursuit of that innocent Liberty, which all Persons of my Age
 were desirous of enjoying; and that I never would make Use of it
 to the Disadvantage of my Reputation, or the Dishonour of my
 Family: And that in all material Affairs of Life, tho' I had chose
 a *Guardian*, I would do nothing without consulting *Her*. This
 was far from being any Satisfaction to her; she writ me several
 Letters, sometimes entreating, sometimes commanding and threatn-
 ing, and engaged all those Relations, who were near enough to
 Interest themselves in my Behaviour, to come and talk to me: But
 the People I was with took care I should be seen by none of them;
 alledging, as a Proof of their Love to me, that they would not
 have me teased with any Solicitations of that Nature. I was very
 well satisfy'd with their Proceedings; I saw *Lysander* every Day;
 and while I listened to his Vows, shou'd not have been pleas'd
 with an Interruption of any kind. That Ardent, yet Respectful

Passion which appeared in all his Words and Actions, was to me a Heaven, which nothing else could give. I had not, for some Time, any Reason to suspect he had the least dishonourable Thought; for tho' the little Power I had of disguising my Sentiments, had made me guilty of many imprudent Actions, and emboldened him to the taking greater Freedoms, than otherwise he would have dared to have attempted, yet he offered nothing which justly could be called offensive to Virtue; till one Night — Oh ever be accurst that Night — that Hour — that damn'd undoing Minute, when all good Angels slept, and left to Fiends the Fate of *Cleomira*! I had undress'd, and thrown my self on the Bed, restless, and uneasy that *Lysander* had not been to visit me that Day; for it was now become an inconsolable Affliction to me to pass four and twenty Hours without seeing him; I was so bury'd in Thought, that I heard not the Tread of any Body coming into my Chamber, till I saw a Man stand close by me: It was about ten a Clock, at that time of the Year when there is scarce any Darkness, and, willing to indulge Contemplation, I had not call'd for Candles, and cou'd not presently discern who was there; but not suspecting it any other than Mr. *Maroir* (who might be come to call me to Supper) without removing from the Posture I was in, ask'd carelessly what he wanted.

He must be a very ill Judge of Happiness, answer'd he, that cou'd form a Wish beyond the Treasure which this Bed contains. These Words, and the Accent of his Voice, always dear and charming to my Ears, soon told me it was *Lysander*, and oblig'd me to endeavour to rise; but he had thrown himself down by me while he was speaking, and seized both my Hands, and gently forcing them to circle his Waste, join'd his Lips to mine with too strenuous a Pressure, to suffer me to reproach the Liberties he took — What cou'd I do, surprized in this ungarded Moment? — full of Desires and tender Languishments before, his glowing Touch now dissolv'd my very Soul, and melted every Thought to soft Compliance — in short, I suffer'd — or, rather let me say, I could not resist his proceeding from one Freedom to another, till there was nothing left for him to ask, or me to grant. The guilty Transport past, a Thousand Apprehensions all at once invaded me; Remorse and Shame supply'd the Place of Ecstasy — Tears fill'd my Eyes — cold Tremblings seiz'd my Limbs — and my

my Breast heav'd no more with Joy but Horror. — To sure Presages of that future Woe, which this black Hour brought forth. — It was not in the lovely Undeor's Power, dear as he was, to make me satisfied with what I had done; and the whole Time he stay'd with me, which was best part of the Night, I uttered nothing but Reproaches: The next Day, and many following ones, I entertain'd him in no other Manner; and it was some Weeks before all his Wit, his Tendernefs and seeming Truth, could make me hope I had not done a Deed, I shou'd, all my Life, have Occasion to repent. But what is it a Woman may not in time be persuaded to by the Man she loves! He behav'd himself in such a Manner, so kind, so soft, so ravishingly tender, respectful and engaging — made so many solemn Protestations of eternal Faith, and imprecated such unheard-of Curses on his Falshood, if ever he shou'd give me Cause to tax him with it, that one wou'd think, indeed, the most harden'd Villain cou'd not thus have dared to dress his Perjuries in such a Form of Sanctity! — How could I then, who loved him, disbelieve him? — No, it was not in Nature — it was not in Reason, that, after what he had sworn, I could be doubtful of his Sincerity, or Honour; and I must have considered him as monstrously unworthy of my Love, before I could think there was a Possibility he shou'd ever cease to love me. Thus was I, at last, rais'd to the highest Pinnacle of human Felicity! an Assurance of the real and everlasting Tendernefs of the Man who took up all my Wishes: But when I thought myself most happy — most secure, I was on a sudden thrown from all my Height of Transport, to the lowest Stand of Misery and Despair.

Ever since my being at *Marvir's* House, I had not pass'd one Day without seeing *Lysander*; and the first Absence, which was about a Week, fill'd me with most terrible Suspensions. I did not fail to acquaint him with them by Letters, which he answer'd with the same Fondness he had accus'd me to; and make Excuses for not visiting me in that Time, which seem'd plausible enough. When next I saw him, nothing seem'd more endearing — nothing more ardent than he seem'd to be, yet he pretended some Business, and stay'd not with me so long as he was wont. After he was gone, happening to cast my Eyes on the Ground, I saw a Paper lying, which I, imagining it might be dropt by him, hastily took up;

part of it had been torn off, and what remained was so blotted that I could scarce read it; I discovered, however, that it was a most passionate Declaration of Love to some Woman, but who, I was altogether a Stranger, for there was no Name --- You may believe (my dear *Belinda*) this was enough to give a Heart so truly tender as mine, a most terrible Alarm! I laid it up carefully, designing to shew it him when he shou'd come next Day, as he had promis'd he would; but alas! I expected him many succeeding ones in vain! 'till growing quite out of Patience, I writ to him according to the Dictates of my Jealousy and Discontent: This indeed engaged a Visit from him; and after he had again made some slight Pretences for his Absence, began to rally me, with so much Artifice, for the Imagination I had formed'd of his being in love in another Place, that I was weak enough, on his swearing it was so, to believe the Letter I had found was only a foul Copy of one he intended to send to me, in that time when he had not an Opportunity of seeing me; and was pretty well satisfy'd as to his Constancy: But tho' I assured him, my whole Dependance on the Truth of what he said hung on the Proof of his visiting me as usual, and he seemed willing I should judge his Truth by that Testimony, yet I saw him not again in another Week. Now the Mist my good Opinion of him had cast before my Eyes began to wear off, and *Reason*, unobscured by *Passion*, shewed me how truly wretched I had made myself, ----- but what did it avail? My Fame, my Virtue, and my Peace of Mind were lost, no more to be retriev'd: Penetration was but the Merriour which shew'd me my Deformity, but cou'd direct me to no Means which could restore those Beauties, which Guilt and shame had utterly defaced. From seeing me every Day he had already fallen to once a Week; soon he came but once a Fortnight; afterwards a Month; and that too was to be accounted a Favour,

Soft as I am by *Nature*, and made more so by *Love*, this Usage turned me all to Indignation: I raved, upbraided, threatned, said I knew not what, and sometimes was resolved to revenge my Injuries by his Death: But, alas! he grew not less lovely, for his being less faithful; and whatever I determined against him in his Absence, was in his Presence all dissolv'd. 'Tis true, he never came without renewing his former Protestations of eternal Faith, and

coin'd

corn'd each Time some new-invented Oath to assure me he was still the same.

He seemed to mourn the Necessity of being so often absent, with a Tenderness equal to that I truly felt; but as perfect a Master as he was in the Art of feigning, I was too well acquainted with the Force of Love, not to know that where it is sincere, no Obstacles would impede the Gratification of it; and one Day, when he had been telling me a tedious Tale of Business, and Hurry of Affairs, and I know not what, which had prevented his coming, I could not restrain the Violence of my just Resentment; ungrateful Man, said I, when watchful for my Ruin, no Business had the Power to hold you all Day, and every Day, each flying Minute was Witness of your Vows---but now,--now, when I have given up all my Soul---am lost to all the World but you; I may alone, unpitied, mourn my Fate, and curse the Fondness that betrayed me to your Scorn---

He would not suffer me to go on long in this Strain, but taking me in his Arms, and tenderly embracing me, Unjust and cruel Charmer, interrupted he, if I could be capable of the Coldness, the Perfidy you reproach me with, I could not sure have the Courage to appear before you.---Nor could you, if you really believed me guilty, with that dear, that Angel-Look behold me.---No, 'tis the Height of Passion only makes you talk thus; as such I take it, and though I grieve to see you rend your gentle Breast with causeless Agonies, yet I consider it with a kind of Transport, since it assures me I am indeed more valuable to you, than any Merit but my Truth can give me Title too.

Oh the Dissembler! with what an Air of Tenderness did he utter these and a Thousand the like Expressions, and with what inexpressible Endearments were they accompanied?---Enraged and Stormy as I was before, my Soul, now all becalmed again, believed--and was again, deceived.

In this Manner did I continue for a considerable Time, sometimes hoping---sometimes despairing---but never certain or confirmed in any Thing---all Horror in his Absence,--all Ecstasy in his Presence--the Business he pretended, which was attending at Court, where he daily expected my Referment, was feasible enough; but then I thought it impossible that no Hour, no Moment in a Week, or in so many

Weeks, could be spared-----in fine, my Brain was in a perpetual Whirl-----Reflection, lost in wild Uncertainty, became disjointed quite; and though I was always Musing, yet I was often without the Power of Thinking-----all my Days were spent in doubtful Expectation, and my Nights in Tears, and Heart-rending Agonies, too terrible for Description-----and if sometimes Nature, over-wearied, sunk into a Slumber, it could no be called Rest; for even then my ever-wakeful Fancy hurried my Spirits with confused Ideas in tormenting Dreams-----*Lysander's* Image was never from my Sight, and always he appeared unkind, and far unlike the Dear---the Soul-enslaving Lover he had been, and still would feign.

To add to my Affliction I was with Child, and every Motion of the unborn Innocent encreased at once my Tenderness and Grief---'Tis not in Thought to form any just Notion of what I felt. All Passions but Hatred took their Turn to prosecute me; and sure, had not Heaven reserved me for an Example of its Power in lengthening Woe to a Degree beyond what could be imagined, I could not have survived the Torments of an Hour.

On his first declining to visit me, I writ often to him, but of late had desisted from giving him that Trouble, because he had told me, his Father, whose Hands they might possibly fall into, would have Curiosity enough to open them. Whether this was Reality, or whether he said so only to spare himself the Pain of Counterfeiting a Tenderness, any other than he was obliged to it, in my Presence, I know not; but I had that implicit Obedience to his Will in every thing, that I very seldom put it to the Venture. But one Day, after silently enduring an Absence of five Weeks, I was no longer able to restrain the impatient Struggles of my Soul, and sent him these Lines.

To my dear *L Y S A N D E R*.

Pardon me, if, convulsed and torn with Pangs too dreadful for Expression, the Anguish of my Soul, in spite of me, breaks forth into Complaining --- Am I for ever to live this Life of curst Uncertainty? --- Is there a Necessary your *Actions* must always contradict your *Words*? Oh! be once sincere, and tell me which I must believe --- There was a Time when with a thousand Vows
you

you swore, that Absence was the severest Tryal a Lover cou'd go through --- yet now you bear it --- bear it with Ease --- with Unconcern! --- and can I then still hope you love? --- O Heav'n! it is not, cannot be, by your own Arguments you stand convicted, and I endeavour to deceive myself in vain --- Heart-rending Thought! I long have held you true --- believed your Oaths with such a Faith as what we pay to the Divine Mysteries of Salvation, and 'tis very Difficult --- 'tis wondrous to think you can be False! What then must be the Proof? Madness! --- Confusion! --- Everlasting Woe! --- Horror without a Name! --- Save --- save me from it! Dissemble yet a little longer; my Fears will quickly send me to my Grave; let not Despair weigh down my sinking Soul as well as my Body --- If I no longer have the Power to please you, let the Remembrance of those happy Moments in which I had, engage, at least, your Gratitude --- If not your Love, bless me with your Friendship --- Pity me; if no more; for, my *Lysander*, sure I merit that --- The Thoughts of you anticipate my earliest Prayers, and still continue for my Evening Theme --- How often, when all have slept, and nothing but the Stars and silent Moon were conscious of my Watchings, have I poured out the Anguish of my bleeding Heart; and to those dumb and unavailing Witnesses vented the wild Extravagance of my Passion, rather than wound your Ears with the unwelcome Tale! It is harder to accuse you than to die --- Yet, while I have Breath, it will all be spent in Wailings, if you are still cruel enough to suffer me to linger in a Condition which justly gives me the Title of

The most Injured,

and most Miserable.

CLEOMIRA.

At the Return of my Messenger, I received an Answer which you will scarce believe could be writ by the same Hand, or dictated by the same Heart from which those you have already heard proceeded.

To

To the lovely CLEOMIRA.

YOUR Sexes Souls are of such narrow Space, that the least Passion swells them even to bursting: I would have the Woman I admire endeavour to enlarge her Genius, and find Room for other Views than Love. — I will see you in a few Days, and, if possible, convince you that I am

Your most Faithful

LYSANDER.

One would think I needed no other Proof but the Stile and the Shortness of this Billet, to inform me, that I was indeed as wretched as I could be; but spite of Reason, I must join in his Barbarity, and be my own Tormentor — my Soul, too curious, would search deeper still, though sure to find what would but more distract me. The Fellow whom I employed to carry my Letter, told me, that not finding *Lysander* at home, he was directed to the Place where he was, and delivered it him in the Presence of a young Lady, whom he was then leading to a Chariot; and that as soon as he had writ the Answer they went out together.

This was enough to give my already justly suspecting Heart a jealous Curiosity; and I immediately dispatched him again to find out, if possible, who the Lady was. He was so successful in his Enquiry, that he brought me Word that her Name was *Melissa*, and that *Lysander* was frequently with her. That they had been seen together at the Play, at the Ring, in the Mall, and several other Public Places. If I was before alarmed, What now became of me, at this Information?

I had formerly an acquaintance with this Woman, and knew her Temper to be the most Intriguing upon Earth; and though from a mean Fortune, and worse Character, a Gentleman of good Estate had raised her to an envied State of Grandeur; she had neither Gratitude nor Conduct sufficient to prevent her from coqueting with every Man that thought her worth taking notice of: Nay, she was so notoriously Imprudent, I may say Shameless, that she sought all Opportunities of dishonouring her Husband; and could not hear

of a Man famed for any Perfection, without desiring to engage him; she would write to the most absolute Strangers, and her being often repulsed by those whose Discretion made them despise her, did not discourage her from attempting others. This is (*Belinda*) the true Character of this vile Woman; and the Reflection, that a Creature so every way undeserving should rob me of his Heart, roused that little Pride, which all Women have some share of, to a Disdain, which, not able to overcome my more superior Softness, gave me Disorders which cannot be expressed.

Since I am to be abandoned (said I to myself) I ought to be pleased that he has abandoned me for a Creature whom none will envy him the Possession of—One, who is not of a Humour to regard any one farther than the Reputation of being admired by him—One, to whom all Men are alike, and, as charming as he is, will not fail to sacrifice him to the next that makes his Addresses to her. And yet, who knows (cry'd I again) but this unfaithful—this inconstant Creature may engage him longer than I, with all my Truth and Tendernefs, could do——She has Arts to which my Innocence is a Stranger, and will, no doubt, make use of them all to secure a Conquest so much to the Advantage of her Glory. In this manner did I torment myself; and though I thought nothing could add to what I felt before, yet now I found that to be neglected for another was a Sting more terrible than the Neglect itself. Once I believed that the Death of *Lysander* would be the extreamest of all Woes; but now I wished him dead rather than in the Possession of a Rival.

When next I saw my Traitor, I uttered all that my Rage and Jealousy suggested; but with his usual Artifice, he appeared unmoved: And when I upbraided him with the Leisure he had to wait on others, when he had none for me, he swore, that being an intimate Acquaintance of her Husband's, and meeting them by Accident, at a Place where he had Business, he was desired by him to conduct her where she was going; which Piece of Gallantry, he said, he could not handsomely refuse. To give the more Credit to this, he seemed to dislike her Person—ridiculed her Humour—and laughed so heartily at my being capable of any Uneasiness on her Account, that I was half persuaded to believe him. I had not, however, so entire a Dependance on his Truth, but that I employ-

ed (unknown to *Marvin's* People, who I found were his Creatures) the same Man, who had brought me the first Intelligence, to watch him where-ever he went, resolving to be satisfied one way or other. Alas! I fancied, that if I could be once thoroughly assured of his Perfidiousness, I should be able to tear him from my Soul, at least to extirpate all the Tenderness I had for him; but, how little did I know myself?

When, by the Diligence of my Spy, I found out that he visited her often—was with her even at those very Times when he pretended the utmost Regret that he could not be with me—Nay, discovered that they had private Meetings, and by all Circumstances was convinced, not only that she was a Rival infinitely more beloved than I, but also that she was in Possession of all those Joys, which to obtain, I had forfeited my Innocence, my Honour, and my Peace of Mind for ever—in spite, I say, of all these Proofs—these stabbing Proofs of his Ingratitude, I could not—did not love him less: I reproached him, indeed, and endeavoured to make him think my Resentment had extinguished my Tenderness; but he still denied each particular of my Accusation, and at last seemed angry that I distrusted his Sincerity; 'till I, mean-spirited Wretch! was forced to appear satisfied with what he said, lest by persisting to alledge what, I found, he was determined never to confess, I should provoke him never to see me more. And when I consulted my fond doating Heart, found I could better bear to share him with another, than have no Interest in him at all: But what I suffered in such a Submission may perhaps be guessed, but never described.

It was now my Woes fell thick upon me, my Pregnancy began now to discover itself to all who saw me; and *Marvin* and his Wife, who had all this Time counterfeited an Ignorance of what had passed between me and *Lysander*, seemed prodigiously surprized at it, pretended a Concern for the Reputation of their House, used me in a Manner which I little expected from them of all the World, and told me plainly, that I must not continue with them any longer: But if I would go into the Country 'till I was delivered of my Burthen, they would enquire for a Place where I might be in private.

I complained to *Lysander* of their Unkindness; but received ve-

ry little Consolation from him. He only told me, he was sorry they should behave otherwise to me than I had Reason to expect, but that he believed they meant well, and that he could not help joining with them in the Opinion it was best for me to go into the Country.

My Concern for leaving a Place which contained all I valued in the World, and the cool Tranquility with which he advised me to banish myself from him, were new Stabs to my already bleeding Heart; but I had now been a good while accustomed to receive Wounds of that Nature, and My Spirits were too much depressed with a continual Weight of Sorrow, to be able to exert themselves to resent almost any Usage. Besides, What could I do? Helpless as I was! I had no Friend to whom I durst make Application, and must be obliged, in the Condition I was, to do whatever those in whose Power I had put myself would have me. They were so eager for my Departure, that a Place was soon found for me to go to. And in a few Days I took Leave of that Town, and that Person, for whose sake I had renounced every Thing that ought to have been dear to me. *Lyfander* had indeed the Complaisance to accompany me a few Miles on Horseback, and perceiving me ready to die with Grief, made a thousand Promises of coming down to visit me in a short Time; though I had no Reason from his late Behaviour, to hope he would do as he said; yet this seeming Kindness a little revived me, and I went through my Journey with more Fortitude than I imagined I could. As soon as I arrived at the Place destined for my Abode, I writ to him, reminding him of the Promise he had made; and conjuring him, by every tender Plea I could invent, to make it good; but I received no Answer. Always willing to excuse him as far as I was able, I fancied my Letter had miscarried, and sent another, but to as little Purpose as before. Then I grew wild with Grief, and was ready in some ungovernable Sallies of Passion to lay violent Hands on my own Life. I resolved at last, if possible, to extort an Answer from him, and prevailed on a Countryman, for a good Gratification, to ride to Town on purpose to deliver a Letter into his own Hand, and charged him not to return without some Token that he had seen him. The Contents of what I writ were these,

To

TO my Inhuman and Unrelenting Charmer. Should you
 Is it then possible that Lysander, the protesting Lysander, can
 from an Angel change to a very Fiend? For only they delight in
 the Perdition they occasion. Have you with your Love thrown off
 all Pity, too, and Complaisance; what you vouchsafe not to condole,
 at least, the Ruins you have made?—Oh most Ingrateful! Cruel!
 Barbarous of all that ever was called Man! What have I done
 that can deserve such Usage? Is it because I have forsook the Ties
 of Duty, Interest, Honour, given up my Innocence, my Peace, and
 everlasting Hopes, that you despise me? Monster! For whom have
 I done this? Can you respect it, was for you, and your whole Soul
 not melt in Tenderness, and soft Compassion? Yes, yes, you can!
 Wretch that I am! I have cast away all that could make me truly
 Valuable, and now am justly subjected to your Scorn. But though
 I live unworthy of your Love, my Death must surely give you some
 Concern; at least the Manner of it, when you shall know it was for
 you I died; That my last Breath formed nothing but your Name;
 and in the extreamest Agonies of my departing Soul, lamented more
 your Cruelty than all that dreadful Separation could inflict. Oh!
 do not, therefore, trifle with a Passion, which if the Strength of
 Reason in your Sex keeps you from being too deeply concerned with,
 is too impetuous for the Weakness of mine to resist; and who can
 tell how far the Torrent may transport me. History is not without
 Millions of Examples of Women who have dared to die, when Life
 became a Burthen; and sure, if any ever could justify Self-mur-
 der, the wretched Cleomira may. None ever loved, none ever de-
 spaired like me, or had so just a Cause for both! The Means of
 Death are always easy to be attained, and I am this Moment hurried
 to that Rage of Temper, that I know not how long I shall be able to
 refrain the Use of it. O then be quick! and save my Soul the
 Guilt of Murder, and your own the Pangs of never-ending Re-
 morse, which, when I am dead, my Ghost will be before you ever,
 haunt all your Dreams, poison your Pleasures, and distract Reflec-
 tion. Then, though I want a Voice, my Wrongs will speak, and
 rouse your sleeping Conscience to a Remembrance of your Vows:
 Your broken damning Vows! Heaven! That Heaven whose Blessing
 you

you have renounced, whose Curses you have imprecated, if ever you proved false, will then exert the Power of swiftest Vengeance, and Penitence be vain to wash away your Guilt, or call me back to Life — For me, I have nought to fear; I feel already all the Pains of Hell; nor can another World torment me worse than this has done — Horror and Madness overtakes me — I know not what to say, and to my other Crimes am ready to add Blasphemy — could curse Heaven, and Earth, and Man — wish to behold the World in Flames! — the Universe dissolved — For all, all are Foes to wretched Cleomira! — Oh ease me — pity me — write to me — see me! If not for mine, yet for the Sake of the dear yet unborn — the tender Pledge of our once mutual Love — Think how the frightened Innocent Starts at its Mother's Anguish, and is a sad Partaker of all the Sufferings you inflict on me — I will, if possible, support the galling Load of Life 'till the Return of my Messenger; but in your Answer is the Fate of

The undone

CLEOMIRA.

All the Horror and Distraction which I endeavoured to represent in this Letter, was infinitely short of what I truly felt. I had so little Hope of Comfort from him it was sent to, that all the Time of the Fellow's being gone I had one continued Agony, with the Apprehension that at his Return I should be more ascertained of *Lysander's* Cruelty; and had his Stay been long, I believe it would have been impossible for me to have supported it with Life. But the poor Man's Speed out-run my Expectations, eager as they were; and though it was near fifty Miles to *London*, he dispatched his Business, and came back in two Days: as soon as he saw me, he produced a Testimony of his Success in the Business I employed him in, and trembling between Hope and Fear, I found in it these Words.

To the unkind CLEOMIRA.

THE Discovery you make of your causeless Uneasiness gives me an infinite Concern: I had writ to you before, but that

I waited to hear first from you, which, by all that is sacred, I never have done till now: And if you have sent, as your Messenger informs me you have, your Letters have miscarried. Be assured I am still the same I ever was, and if any Part of that Rapidity which in the Days of Courtship I professed, be now abated, it is sufficiently made up by an Encrease of Tenderneſs. — I beg, for the ſake of the dear Infant you mention, and for mine who ſuffer with you in the Knowledge of your Grievs, that you will entirely baniſh them, as Enemies as well to Reaſon as to Happineſs. I hope the Hurry of my Affairs will ſhortly have an End, and I ſhall enjoy the boundleſs Pleaſure of ſeeing you again; till when, I hope you will be ſatisfied with this Assurance, joined to the innumerable others I have given you, that I am

Yours for ever,

LYSANDER.

You will certainly believe I was not in my Senſes, when I ſhall tell you, that theſe few, and indeed but ill-diſſembled Lines of Kindneſs, drove from my Boſom all the Anxiety that had poſſeſt it: I thought of nothing now but Joy and Rapture; and in ſpite of all the Reaſons *Lysander* had given me, accuſed myſelf of Injuſtice for writing to him in the Manner I did; and to make Reparation for the Reproaches of my laſt, dictated another, according to the Transport I now was in — I ought to bluſh at the Memory of ſo ſhameful a Weakneſs; but as I have promiſed you a faithful Relation of my Story, will omit nothing that may give you a juſt Notion of my Folly, or his Perfidiousneſs and Ingratitude. The Lines I writ were theſe.

To my ador'd LYSANDER.

TO make you able to conceive the Ecſtaſy with which I read your dear obliging Letter, I muſt be able to inſpire you with that Sublimity of Paſſion, which Charms like your own have only the Power of doing. But think! *Lysander*! think what a Soul muſt feel, raiſed from the loweſt Hell of Miſery to the higheſt Heaven of Felicity! — Oh! If I may Credit thoſe endearing
Lines

Lines, I have all that Fate can give! — If did I say! — I must — I will — *Lyfander* is all Honour, and he a thousand Times has sworn himself my everlasting Votary — How have I wronged you then? — Divineſt of your Sex! — But you muſt pardon me — I love — am abſent — am unworthy — and in ſuch a Circumſtance, Patience were a Virtue out of Seaſon — O therefore, let it not be too long before you bleſs me with your Prefence, leſt I again relapſe! again be wretched. Haſte to my Arms, while Hopes are quick within me; while vigorous Transport ſparkles in my Eyes, and my Soul glows with pleaſing Expectation. Let not the Fervour of my Joy abate, till in your Arms I have nothing left to Wiſh, and I indeed can ſay thou art mine, as I am thine; My for ever dear *Lyfander*.

Thine in the moſt paſſionate

and tender Manner,

CLEOMIRA.

After this, I lived for ſome Time in more Tranquility than I had known for many Months: And, though it was paſt my doubt that he had intrigued with *Meliſſa*, yet believing it but a tranſient Amour, of which he was now grown weary, found it no Difficulty to pardon him. And this renewing of his Tenderneſs to me, made me aſſure myſelf, it would be in the Power of no Woman, hereafter, to engage him ſo far as to render him forgetful of what he owed to me. But alas! this Peace of Mind was not of any long Continuance; eight or nine Days being elapſed, without my receiving any Letter from him, though I ſtill thought he was coming, and the Hopes of ſeeing him made full amends for the not hearing from him; but after that, my Fears again returned, and I grew reſtleſs as before.

I conſtantly walked out every Evening in a Field that overlooked the Road, my Expectations of meeting him not having quite forſook me. One of the Times that I was thus employed, I encountered a Perſon whoſe Sight gave me as much Surprize, as the News ſhe brought me did Affliction. It was my Nurſe, an honeſt faithful Creature, who hearing I had left *London*, enquired at *Marvir's* Houſe

House where I was gone? but receiving no Satisfaction from them, by diligent asking among the Neighbours, heard by one, who by some Accident had learned it, that I was at —; and so, by describing me to the Stage-Coachman, discovered what Part of the Country I was carried to; and had travelled down on Purpose to acquaint me, that my Mother lay at the Point of Death——That it was believed her Grief for my Behaviour had been the Cause of her Illness, That all she seem'd to lament was the Misfortunes she fear'd would fall upon me, and wished for nothing but to see me before she died. This sad Account, given me by the poor Woman in the most moving Circumstances, struck me to the very Soul. I now began to consider *whom* it was I had abandon'd, and *for* whom! And the more I reflect on *Lysander's* Ingratitude, the more ingrateful did I appear my self! To be the Occasion of a *Parent's* Death——a Parent who had always most tenderly lov'd me, and from whom I never had been absent ('til the Time of my utterly forsaking her) two Days together in my Life, filled me with so just a Horror, that I know not if it would have been even in *Lysander's* Power to have consoled me. How gladly would I have returned to her, and implored her Pardon for my Errors——endeavoured to give her Comfort, and never leave her more; but, alas! the Condition I was in deterred me from the Execution of these pious Wishes; I could entertain no Thoughts of appearing before her 'till I was delivered of that Witness of my Shame; nor could the poor Woman persuade me to it; she rightly judged, that to see me, as I then was, would rather be an Encrease of her Affliction, than any Mitigation of it, and told me she would return without saying she had seen me, since there was no Excuse to be made for my not coming to *London*; but that which had better remain untold.

The Concern which I perceived in the Countenance of this faithful Creature, and the mannerly Freedom which she took in expressing her Grief for the Misfortunes I had brought on myself and Family, obliged me to give her the whole History of my Affairs since the fatal Choice I made of *Marvir* for my Guardian, and withal conjured her to make all possible Enquiry into *Lysander's* Character and Behaviour, and to give me a faithful Account of what she could discover.

But it seems she had never learned to write, and I was unwilling the

the Secret should be trusted to any other Hand, therefore desired she would treasure it up in her Memory till I came to Town, which I resolved to do as soon as I was brought to Bed. I did not think it proper to carry her to the House where I was, but giving her something to refresh herself in her Journey back, took my Leave of her, who parted from me with Tears in her Eyes, and all the Marks of an undissembled Grief.

The more I ruminated on the sad Relation she had made me, the deeper Impression it made in my Soul; and that joined to *Lysander's* Unkindness, who in spite of his Promise neither came nor sent to me, threw me into a Condition which is not to be conceived. The Horrors of my Mind had such an Influence over my Body, that it was impossible I should be able to bring a living Child into the World; my Youth, however, and the natural Goodness of my Constitution brought me through that dangerous State in which those who find most Ease, have little Reason to be assured of Life. I was safely delivered of a Boy; but alas! the Grief-killed Infant never saw the Light, and I knew nothing what it was to be a Mother but the Pains.

It was certainly only my Impatience to be gone from a Place where I could hear nothing of *Lysander*, which made me willing to use any Means proper for the Recovery of my Strength. But the Hopes of seeing him, and knowing from his own Mouth my Doom, invigorated my drooping Spirits, and enabled me to endure Life, rather than die in the terrible Uncertainty I then was in. I found, in a little more than a Month's Time, I was in a Condition to travel, and was too eager to delay a Moment. I would not go to *Marvir's* House; I was assured I should hear nothing there, but what they were ordered by *Lysander* to tell me; and the late Unkindness they had shewed me, made me resolve never to live with them again; but as soon as I had got to *London*, went directly to my Nurse's, where I had the mournful Account of my Mother's Death, told in so tender and moving a Manner, that I too was ready to expire at hearing it.

When the first Hurry of my Grief for so great and irretrievable a Loss was over, I began to question her about *Lysander*. She told me she had neglected nothing that might be conducive to my Peace; but that all she had been able to learn concerning him, was, that he

had lately an Interview with *Melissa*; that by their ill Conduct it had been discovered to her Husband, who, as a just Reward for her Infidelity, entirely cast her off; that she was, now reduced to the same wretched Circumstances this injured Gentleman had took her from; that *Lysander* had little Regard to the Miseries he had contributed to bring her to; and that she was become one of the most exposed and unpitied Women in the World.

I confess, *I* was ungenerous enough to find some little Consolation in the Knowledge of my Rival's Misfortunes; not but, as much Reason as *I* had to hate her, for being the first Occasion of estranging the Affection of *Lysander* from me, *I* should have highly commended him for his Neglect of her in her Affliction, had it fallen on her only through her Love to him; but as *I* knew her Inclination to be so amorous (to give it no worse a Name) that it had influenced her to commit numerous Faults of the like Nature, and even without the least Temptation, *I* looked on her as unworthy Commiseration.—

But to leave her to all the Miseries which attend a common Prostitution, *I* resolved to know how *I* now stood in *Lysander's* Opinion; *I* writ to him, acquainting him that *I* was come to Town, and desired to see him. When *I* had done that, *I* began to consider my Affairs as to my Money. *I* thought it unsafe to be lodged any longer in *Marvir's* Hands, and employed one to bring him to an Accompt; but that Villain had made such Bills, and managed every thing so much to his own Advantage, that of my three thousand Pounds, *I* found *I* had not much more than fifteen hundred remaining. The Person who *I* had engaged in this Business knew very well what my Father left me, and persuaded me have recourse to Law. But the other knew himself secure enough as to that Point; and when it was hinted to him, he writ a Letter to tell me, that if *I* insisted to bring him to any publick Accompt for the Money he had laid out, he could easily prove it had been expended only for my Use; and bid me consider, that in the Condition *I* had been, there was occasion for more than a trifling Sum, to bribe those to Secrecy, who were obliged to be entrusted with the Knowledge of it.

This was enough to let me see, if *I* attempted any thing against him, he would expose me in the most shameful Manner he could;

I was glad therefore to accept what little I could get, without daring to molest him for the rest. But I will not (my dear *Belinda*) detain your Attention with any Particulars of this, which (in Comparison with my others) I looked on as a trifling Vexation.

Above a Week was past since I sent to *Lyfander*, and he had not yet answered my Letter. I was very well assured he had received it; and though I had little Hopes of the Continuance of his Affection: I expected from his Complaisance some sort of an Excuse for the Inhumanity he had been guilty of; my Amazement at this unlooked for Slight was almost equal to my Grief: I now indeed felt more Resentment than I had ever been capable of before. Neither to come to me, nor write after so long an Absence, and all I had suffered on his Account, could make me consider him no otherwise than as the vilest, and most justly to be abhorred of all his Sex. And since I had no other way to revenge, resolved to use my Pen to him in such a Manner as should let him know I was no less insensible of his Indignities, than I had been of his Love; but before I did so, an Accident happened to give me a fresh Theme for my Reproaches.]

Going through the *Strand* one Day in a Chair, it was suddenly stop'd by a Footmun, who told me, his Lady desired to speak with me, and intreated I would come into her Chariot. Neither the Livery nor the Wearer of it were Strangers to me; I knew he belonged to a Lady, who, when I frequented the Court, was one of my greatest Intimates, and I immediately discharged my Chair, and did as she desired.

Nothing could receive me with greater Demonstrations of Kindness than *Semantbe* (for so I shall call her) and after she had gently upbraided me with Breach of Friendship, for not letting her know where I had been all the Time of my absconding, began to ask me a thousand Questions about my Affairs. But mine was a Story very improper to be related to her, who, though I knew she had a great deal of good Nature, was not of a Temper to have approved my Proceedings; and therefore I turned the Discourse, as soon as I could, into an Enquiry after her Affairs, which she very ingenuously informed me of, little suspecting the Effects of what she told me.

I am (said she) very near changing my Condition; but the Person

son who has prevailed on me to do it is so truly deserving, that without a Blush I may confess, that the sooner I yield to his Desires, the sooner I make myself the happiest of my Sex. Ah Madam! (cry'd I, interrupting her) take Care how you depend on the Sincerity of Mankind; it requires more Experience than you or I are Mistresses of, to form any just Judgment of their Deserts. It is no Wonder that you talk so (replied she) since I have not yet told you the Name of my Charmer; but when I have, I doubt not but you will acknowledge, as all the World who know him do, that every Perfection that Heaven can adorn a Mortal with, are centered in my Admired. — Oh God! who was it, but my *Lysander* that she named! — Lightning could not have blasted me more than this one Word, and I believe the most artful of all my Sex, could not in such a Circumstance have dissembled her Confusion; but the Shock was too mighty for my Weakness to sustain, and wholly depriv'd of Speech, I fell against the Side of the Chariot, senseless, and in all Appearance dead, and came not to myself 'till I was brought to *Semantbe's* Lodgings: The first thing I saw when I open'd my Eyes was her, busily employ'd in helping her Maids to use Means for my Recovery. The Sight of her, and the Remembrance of what she had told me, threw me again into Convulsions, which lasted for some Time; and when, at last, I had gather'd Power to speak, it was in such a Fashion, so wild, and so confus'd, that the Stangers-by believ'd I was taken with a sudden Fit of Frenzy. I desir'd a Chair might be call'd to carry me Home; and making some sort of an Apology, I knew not what, for the Trouble I had given, took leave of my happy Rival. My poor Nurse (for I had been at her House ever since I came to Town) was terribly alarm'd at the Condition she beheld me in, and, when I had repeated the Occasion of it, join'd with me in the most bitter Curses we cou'd both invent on the Perfidiousness of Mankind. I remain'd for some Time in mortal Agonies, unable to determine on any thing: Sometimes I was for returning to *Semantbe*, to acquaint her with *Lysander's* Engagements to me, and implore her to forbear any farther Invasion on a Right I had so dearly purchas'd — Sometimes I was for going to *Lysander's* House and by publickly reproaching him with his Vows, deter him from the Breach of them — but Modesty rejected both these Resolutions as soon as

form'd

form'd;—and by my Nurse's Persuasion (who fear'd that proceeding to any Violence would be altogether unavailing, and only serve to expose me more) I contented myself with uttering the Fury I was possess'd of in a Letter; which, tho' incoherent and distracted as my Mind, I believe you will not think it too severe for the Occasion.

To the inconstant, Ungenerous, and Perfidious **LYSANDER.**

I Have so long been accusom'd to Indignities from you, that had I not in Possession your Letters, those Witnesses of your well-dissembled Tenderness, I shou'd believe I had been enchanted with some delightful Dream, and that there never was any such thing in Reality, as that *Lysander* cou'd take the Pains to make me believe he loved me, since for no other Cause, than returning the Passion he pretended, he now can use me with a Brutality as unexampled as my own Meanness of Spirit, which has hitherto suffered me to sit down tamely with my Wrongs, and not endeavour, at least, suitable Revenge——Poisons and Daggers are the Upbraidings you should receive of me.——Yet I, fond Wretch! have still subjected my Will to yours, wrung my own Hands while you have wrung my Heart——And when a thousand Times, with more than Devil-like Cruelty, you have conjured up all that was raging in me, with my own Tears I have appeased that Tempest, which only Blood——your dearest Blood should have Power to quell——Not one Particular of your Baseness is unknown to me——Cold——cold Betrayer!——Dark designing Villain! Your Neglect, your Absence, your Silence, all spring from one Cause, that cursed Mutability of Temper, which damns half your Sex, as fond Belief and Tenderness does ours——I was not Ignorant of your Intrigue with *Melissa*, even from the Beginning, to the guilty Rapture which concluded it——Yet I was patient, and but to Heaven accused you of Perfidiousness——Fool that I was! I hoped, that my Truth, my Constancy, and Softness, in Time, might make a Convert of you——But now, now that I find you are for ever lost; that Marriage is about to give that Title, which alone is due to me, by your own Vows, and by all those Sufferings I have bought it with——Now, I grow, indeed, like you, a very Fiend! and

TO CLEOMIRA.

I Received your Letter with some Surprize, but with none of that Tenderness you seem to aim at inspiring, or what really has possessed my Soul, at reading some of your former ones; nor can blame my Change of Humour, since your own Extravagance has been the Cause: Believe me, Cleomira! whatever in our Days of Courtship we profess, the Excess of any Passion is ridiculous to any Man of Sense; and Love, of all others, more excites our Mirth than our Pity. — That foolish Fondness, with which your Sex so much abound, is before Enamement charming, because it gives us an Assurance of obtaining all we ask; but afterwards its closing, tiresome, and in Time grows odious. — Had your Passion, at least the Show of it, been less violent, mine might have had a longer Continuance; and as there is nothing more unnatural, than that a Woman should expect a Man can be in Love with her always, the best way to retain his Complaisance is, not to take notice of his Alteration, or oblige him, by a troublesome Importunity, to explain himself in the Manner I now am forced to do to you. I confess, indeed, that I am going to be married to a Lady, whose Discretion will, I hope, prevent any of these Discontents and Jealousies, which first made my Amour with you grow uneasy. That I once loved you, I shall ever acknowledge, and desire you would be as just in assuring yourself, that your own Mismanagement was the Cause I could do so no longer. The little Storms of Fury which appear in your Letter, are too frequently met with in Stories, to be wondered at, and are of as little Consequence to move me to either Fear or Pity, as your proclaiming the Occasion would be to the Disadvantage of my Reputation; but if you can resolve to confine your Passion within the Bounds of Prudence; though you lose a Lover, you shall always find a Friend in

LYSANDER.

I am very apt, indeed, to believe that Lysander in this spoke the Sense of all his Sex; and one would think that such an Enclaircissement was enough to have cured me of all Passions, but Disdain and Hate — Nothing sure was ever so insulting, so impudent, so barbarous;

barous; yet was my Soul, and all its Faculties, so truly his, that though at the first Reading I resolved not to think of him but with Detestation, I relapsed immediately, and instead of wishing I had never seen him, found a secret Pleasure, even in the midst of Agony, in the Reflection that he had loved me once: And, if at any Time a Start of just Resentment roused itself within me, when I would give it vent in Curses, a Power superior to Rage arrested the flying Breath, and changed it into Blessings. I still loved him with such an Adoration, that I could not bring myself to think that any thing he could do was wrong, and began indeed to lay the Blame of my Misfortune on my own want of Merit, to engage the Continuance of his Affection, rather than on any Vice in him; and it was with all the Difficulty in the World I forbore writing to him again, to tell him so——Was ever any Infatuation——was ever any Madness equal to mine!—Oh God! the bare Remembrance of it makes me condemn myself, and acknowledge, that a Creature so meanly Sou'd deserved no better Fate.

For some Moments she was able to proceed no farther; a thousand mingled Passions now struggled in her labouring Breast with too much Vehemence to be suppress'd; and throwing herself down on the Couch she sat on, began again to pour out the Anguish of her Soul, in a Torrent of Tears. Though *Belinda* could not forbear sympathizing with her; yet finding that her Griefs were indeed past Remedy, thought nothing she could say would any way avail to her Consolation; and only bore her Company in this dumb Scene of Sorrow: But *Cleomira* had too much Complaisance and Good-nature, to be able to indure the Influence she perceived her Afflictions had over the tender Disposition of the other, and composing herself as well as she could, continued her Discourse in this Manner.

If (said she) I could have found Words of Force sufficient to have vented any of those various Passions which tormented me, my afflicted Soul, perhaps, might have received some little Intervals of Ease; but there were none to express a Condition such as mine!——To love to the highest degree of Tendernefs, what I ought to have abhorred——To adore what I knew deserved my utmost Scorn——To have buried Hope, and wild Desire survive——To have Shame, Remorse, and all the Vultures of conscious Guilt, gnaw on my aking
Thought

Thought-----To with for Madnets, and yet Sense remain, was Mir-
 ery! was Horror sure, without a Name! A thousand Times in a
 Day I was about to put an End to Life, and all its Weight of An-
 guish. Nor was it Reason or Religion, but merely the Considera-
 tion that Death would take from me all Power of hearing what be-
 came of *Lysander*, that preserved me.

Thus did I live, if such a State can be called Life, till the Day
 of *Lysander's* Marriage; but when I heard that, imagin you be-
 hold a Wretch in the most raging fit of Lunacy; and it may give
 you some Idea, though but a faint one, of what I then appeared!
 I tore my Cloaths, my Face, my Hair, threw myself on the Floor,
 beat my Breast, made the House ring with echoing Stricks and
 Lamentations; and was scarce restrained by my Nurse from running
 in this Manner to the Church where the Ceremony was performed;
 and it was not but when I had no longer Strength to rage, that part-
 ly by Force, and partly by Persuasion, she got me into Bed.

The Violence of my Agitations threw me into a Fever; but tho'
 I would take nothing but what I was compelled to, and committed
 Extravagances in this Kindness enough to have killed Twenty of much
 a stronger Constitution than myself, yet I could not die. In spite
 even of myself, I recovered.

But not all the bodily Indisposition I had endured, had been able
 to weaken the Passions of my Soul; I still loved and still despaired
 —My Thoughts were always with *Lysander*, and pursued him
 every where, even to the bridal Bed, that Grave where all my Hopes
 were buried.

My Nurse's House happening unluckily to stand in a Street pret-
 ty near that in which *Lysander* lived, as soon as I had Strength to
 walk about my Chamber, I had the Mortification, from my Window,
 to behold him and *Semanthe*, now his Wife, pass by in their Cha-
 riot, almost every Day. You may believe this Sight gave no small
 Addition to the Horrors of my Despair; but I will not pretend to
 repeat what it was I felt, whenever those grating Objects met my
 Eyes; it shall suffice to say it was more than I could bear, and I re-
 solved to rid myself of what I then endured, without any Appre-
 hensions of what Futurity might give. Death was my determined
 Cure; but in what Manner I should apply it was now my only
 Study; and after a long Debate in my Mind, Poison was the Means

I fix'd on, as being not only the most decent, but also the most private Way I could perform this Deed of Desperation; for I was unwilling the World should be sensible of what I had done, and when I was no more, preserve my Shame still flagrant with those scurrilous Ditties, which Actions of the Kind I was about to do are always Themes for. I took Care to conceal my Intentions from my Nurse; and that she might be the less watchful over me, began to counterfeit a Cheerfulness, which Heaven knows was far from my Heart. The poor Woman was over-joy'd to find me, as she thought, so much more easy than I had been, and I went out one Day, unsuspected, to procure the fatal Drugs; I had recourse to an Apothecary who had been us'd to make up Medicines for our Family, and because I knew how scrupulous People of that Profession are oblig'd to be, I told him, I had a little favourite Dog, which by some Accident was run mad, and having made Use of above a thousand Experiments for a Cure for him in vain, and not enduring to have him destroy'd any other way, I would have something to give him, to put an End to his Misery in the most gentle manner I could; something of a sleeping Potion, I said, which by degrees should seize upon the Seats of Life, and give a sure, but easy Death. The Man look'd on me with a good deal of Surprise, and as I thought, more Penetration than I desir'd he should have; but after a little Pause, went about mixing the Composition: I was very well pleas'd to think I had so artfully deceiv'd him, and came home with the Physick, which I design'd should make a perfect Cure of all my Miseries. As I was going to drink it, I began to think I could not leave the World in Peace without a Farewell to my unjust, but still too dear *Islander*; and taking up some Paper, writ to him these Lines.

To the dear Runner of my Soul and Body.

AS my Passion for you was built on a more lasting Foundation than that of yours to me, so not all your Cruelty can have Power to shake it: I must be yours, though you cease to desire I should be so; and since I cannot *hope*, nay, now you are another's, dare not with any future Testimonies of my Affection shou'd be pleasing, I take the only Means to rid you of the Trouble: A Draught

Draught of Poison stands before me, and the Moment I conclude this Letter, I take my Journey to that World whence there is no Return ——— What will be my Portion there I know not; but sure of this, that if departed Souls have any Intelligence, of what's acted here, your Pity for my Fate will mitigate the sharpest Torments. A tender Sigh sometimes, not even my Rival would deny; and perhaps, a Time may come, when you shall own I merited much more: I do not, however, wish you should be touch'd too deeply with Remorse ——— You are too dear to me, for me to desire to give you Pain ——— Remember me, if you can, with some little Softness ——— Make not my Sufferings the Subject of your Ridicule, nor seem pleas'd if you hear others do so; and whenever my want of Beauty, Wit, or any other Charm, rises as an Evidence against me, let my exalted Tenderness still ballance that Deficiency; and reflect, that as I have *liv'd*, so now I *die*, my dear, dear *Isander*!

Only yours,

CLEOMIRA.

To be short, I kept my Word, indeed: for as soon as ever I had seal'd this up, I drank the Ingredients I had brought home with me ——— I drank it without the least Alarm, or any of those Apprehensions which so terrify the Minds of most People at the Approach of Death; so much had Despair harden'd my Heart, and stupified my Reason.

Though the History of *Cleomira* and *Belinda's* Misfortunes, may be thought foreign to my Affairs, especially considering my being now grown in Years, and my Husband not a young Man; yet it is absolutely necessary I should give it a Place, because it is the Source, or Spring, of many strange and uncommon Scenes, which happened to me, during the remaining Part of my Life, and which I cannot well give an Account of without; and I am the more induc'd thereto for this Reason, that I am resolv'd to give as just a Relation of my future, as I have done of my past Life. I shall likewise relate the Behaviour of my Children, and how *any* managed for me (with them) without my Knowled, and Contrary to my Order, before I left *London*. I therefore break off *Belinda's* Affair,

at

I fix'd on, as being not only the most decent, but also the most private Way I could perform this Deed of Desperation; for I was unwilling the World should be sensible of what I had done, and when I was no more, preserve my Shame still flagrant with those scurrilous Ditties, which Actions of the Kind I was about to do are always Themes for. I took Care to conceal my Intentions from my Nurse; and that she might be the less watchful over me, began to counterfeit a Cheerfulness, which Heaven knows was far from my Heart. The poor Woman was over-joy'd to find me, as she thought, so much more easy than I had been, and I went out one Day, unsuspected, to procure the fatal Drugs; I had recourse to an Apothecary who had been us'd to make up Medicines for our Family, and because I knew how scrupulous People of that Profession are oblig'd to be, I told him, I had a little favourite Dog, which by some Accident was run mad, and having made Use of above a thousand Experiments for a Cure for him in vain, and not enduring to have him destroy'd any other way, I would have something to give him, to put an End to his Misery in the most gentle manner I could; something of a sleeping Potion, I said, which by degrees should seize upon the Seats of Life, and give a sure, but easy Death. The Man look'd on me with a good deal of Surprise, and, as I thought, more Penetration than I desir'd he should have; but, after a little Pause, went about mixing the Composition: I was very well pleas'd to think I had so artfully deceiv'd him, and came home with the Physick, which I design'd should make a perfect Cure of all my Miseries. As I was going to drink it, I began to think I could not leave the World in Peace without a Farewell to my unjust, but still too dear *Lysander*; and taking up some Paper, writ to him these Lines.

To the dear Ruiner of my Soul and Body.

AS my Passion for you was built on a more lasting Foundation than that of yours to me, so not all your Cruelty can have Power to shake it: I must be yours, though you cease to desire I should be so; and since I cannot *hope*, nay, now you are another's, dare not *wish* any future Testimonies of my Affection should be pleasing, I take the only Means to rid you of the Trouble: A Draught

Draught of Poison stands before me, and the Moment I conclude this Letter, I take my Journey to that World whence there is no Return ——— What will be my Portion there I know not; but sure of this, that if departed Souls have any Intelligence of what's acted here, your Pity for my Fate will mitigate the sharpest Torments. A tender Sigh sometimes, not even my Rival would deny; and perhaps, a Time may come, when you shall own I merited much more: I do not, however, wish you should be touch'd too deeply with Remorse ——— You are too dear to me, for me to desire to give you Pain ——— Remember me, if you can, with some little Softness ——— Make not my Sufferings the Subject of your Ridicule, nor seem pleas'd if you hear others do so; and whenever my want of Beauty, Wit, or any other Charm, rises as an Evidence against me, let my exalted Tenderness still ballance that Deficiency; and reflect, that as I have *liv'd*, so now I *die*, my dear, dear *Lysander*.

Only yours,

CLEOMIRA.

To be short, I kept my Word, indeed; for as soon as ever I had seal'd this up, I drank the Ingredients I had brought home with me ——— I drank it without the least Alarm, or any of those Apprehensions which so terrify the Minds of most People at the Approach of Death; so much had Despair harden'd my Heart, and stupified my Reason.

Though the History of *Cleomira* and *Belinda's* Misfortunes, may be thought foreign to my Affairs, especially considering my being now grown in Years, and my Husband not a young Man; yet it is absolutely necessary I should give it a Place, because it is the Source, or Spring, of many strange and uncommon Scenes, which happen'd to me, during the remaining Part of my Life, and which I cannot well give an Account of without; and I am the more induc'd thereto for this Reason, that I am resolv'd to give as just a Relation of my future, as I have done of my past Life. I shall likewise relate the Behaviour of my Children, and how *Amy* managed for me (with them) without my Knowled, and Contrary to my Order, before I left *London*. I therefore break off *Belinda's* Affair,

at

at present, to mention something very particular which happened to myself.

At this Juncture I received a Letter from my late Landlady, in London, the honest Quaker; which, being something Particular, I shall here repeat in her own Words.

My Friend,

THOU knowest it is not my Way, neither is it consistent with my Profession, to give flattering Titles to any; but to do all Things with Decency and Order; which, I fear, is the Reason I have received no Answer from Thee, to any of my former Letters, wherein I told Thee nothing but plain Truth, to the best of my Knowledge; for after the strictest Examination of my own Heart, my Conscience beareth me Witness, that I have done Thee all the Worldly Justice and Service in my Power. Why then art Thou Silent; and wilt not Answer my Letters? Thou knowest they concern Thee; and not myself—— In plain Truth, Friend, I have discharged the Trust Thou reposedst in me very Honestly; and have taken abundance of Pains with Thy People in Spittle-Fields; who, through Mercy, are in a fine Way of doing well, both in this World, and the World to come; and particularly the young Woman, who is of a sweet affable Temper, mighty Sober and Religious, and often goeth with me to Our Meeting, (which is not far from their House) and beareth the Testimony of our Holy Speakers with so upright an Heart, that she calleth me her Spiritual Mother; and saith, Though she should rejoice in Spirit to see her Carnal Mother again; yet would much rather live with me, in Plainness and Sobriety, than among those whom the World call the Beau Monde, in the greatest Splendor and Gaiety—— I have some Proposals to make to Thee, which I hope the Lord will move Thee to comply with, for her Good, my Consolation, and Thy future Quiet, in all Things whatsoever, concerning her.——

I have many more Things on my Spirit to say unto Thee; but am not willing to commit them to Writing, till I have Thy Answer to this, and a particular Direction, that no one may finger them but thyself. This is from thy real, though neglected Friend,

RUTH LOVE.

P. S. Thy old Handmaid, *Amy*, gives, what she calls, her Service to Thee, and her Master, thy Husband; and says, she cannot be at Peace in her Mind, nor die in Quiet, without seeing Thee, and communicating something of great Moment to thyself. Upon this I examined her, very strictly, concerning the Girl I used to call *Thy troublesome Visitor*; and could get nothing from her, but that she was well the last Time she saw her. So I promised *Amy* to acquaint Thee with it, and receive Thy Orders; which, as I told her, I should punctually obey.

I received this Letter, from my now only Confined, the honest *Quaker* (who I had made my Agent, to take Care of my Children, and all my other Affairs in *England*, in *Amy's* stead, as is before related) a few Weeks after my Recovery from a fore fit of Sickness, which the change of Air, and my former irregularity of Life, had brought on me; which Sickness, was the real Cause of my not receiving the former Letters she mentions to have sent: For being now settled in *Holland*, my Husband kept none but *Dutch* Servants in his House, whom I was very careful not to trust with any of my Secrets; lest he should come to the Knowledge of them through their Means, and thereby a Misunderstanding between us might follow, which would entirely Disturb that serenity of Life I at present enjoyed, if not quite Ruin me in the Affections of my Husband: For though he loved me extremely, and used me with all the Tenderneſs imaginable; yet, I say, had he had the least Intimation of the Life I led, after my leaving him in *Holland*, when I was big with Child, and refused to marry him (as is before recited) and living in *England* in that wicked Manner I did, he would have treated me with the utmost Scorn and Abhorrence.

I was very much surprised to find that my youngest Daughter was like to turn *Quaker*; for though I did not much concern myself about Religion, yet I had no liking to that Profession at all; and so well as I loved my *Quaker* Landlady, I by no means approved her Conduct in that Respect; neither could I imagine what it was she could have to propose to me for the Girl's Good, her (the *Quaker's*) Consolation, and my Quiet.

But when I came to the *Postscript*, where it is represented, that *Amy* was disturbed in Mind, I was quite confounded; I rav'd, tore my Hair, and cry'd bitterly; nay, to such a Degree of Fury did Passion hurry me, that had *Amy* been there, I should certainly have killed her with my own Hand directly, let the Consequence have been what it would; for I could not possibly entertain the least Thought but that she had now really murdered my poor Child——The Excess of Grief which followed was so Violent, that it flung me into such a melancholy Disposition, as rendered me quite incapable to perform the necessary Affairs of my Family.

My affectionate Husband was extremely concerned at this Misfortune, and spared no Cost or Pains in endeavouring to restore me to my former State of Health and Gaiety; and at last made a Tour with me, to several populous Places in *Holland* and *Flanders*, and some Courts of *Germany*, hoping the Splendor and great resort of Gentry which were there (particularly at this Season of the Year) would divert my Melancholy; which, in process of Time, I must own, was a great Step towards it.

After I was somewhat recovered, my indulgent Husband took me to divers Plays and Balls; which, he said, he did purely in Hopes to effect the desired Cure, and not through any Delight he took in resorting to such Places himself. I must here acknowledge, that though I did not now much covet to appear in such Assemblies; yet I had not forgot how to behave myself among the politer Sort; neither was I yet so Old, or my Beauty so entirely defaced, as not to make a tollerable Figure among them; and more especially as I was in a Place where I was intirely unknown: But as my Husband was of a very grave Disposition, I was obliged (in Complisance to him) to behave myself with more Reservedness, at such Places, than was consistent with my former Gaiety, or I should have done, had I gone without him.

This made me resolve with myself, that if I could find a proper Opportunity, I would, once more, take an Evening's Diversion at a Ball, without my Spouse; and which I resolved, should be the last whilst I lived; but how to accomplish this Whim of Gallantry I could no way foresee, my Husband being so careful of me, that he would hardly ever suffer me to go out of his Sight.

We

We had now been some Time at *Brussels*, where was a very brilliant Court, at this Time, occasioned by some extraordinary Affairs being then on the Carpet, which drew a great Number of Persons of the first Rank out of *Germany*; even from *Vienna* itself, the Capital City of that Country. It was therefore at this Place, that I proposed to take my last Farewel of the Gallantry of a Court; but how to accomplish it was the Difficulty: I never, 'till now, wished for my Husband's Absence, from the Moment I was first married: But this itch of Fancy was so strong, that I wrack'd all my Invention to satisfy it; but in vain; I could make no Excuse whatsoever to absent myself from him; and he was so careful of me, as I said before, that he would not suffer me out of his Sight.

I short, I began to despair of accomplishing my Intention, and therefore proposed to quit this fine City, and gallant Court; telling my Husband, that as I was now perfectly recovered, it was Time to return Home, and Abridge the extraordinary Expences he had been at on my Account; which he readily agreed to, and began to prepare accordingly. But by Accident, some Days before our intended Departure, he met an old Acquaintance and Correspondent of his, when he first settled at *Paris*, who stood indebted to my Husband, in the Sum of about five hundred Pounds Sterling. This Merchant had made what they call a Slip in Trade; but having since recovered his Circumstances, was now both in a Condition and willing to pay him; provided he would take a Tour with him to his present Abode, which was about two or three Days ride.

My Spouse would have contrived the Money to be remitted him; but I (who thought this the only Opportunity that ever would offer to satisfy my Desire) persuaded him to go himself with the Merchant, for fear his Mind should Change; it being an Old Debt, and not easily to be recovered; so that I persuaded him (as the *English* Phrase is, to strike while the Iron was Hot) for that this Sum, so unexpectedly recovered, would assist in bearing Part of the Expence he had been at in this Journey. In short, I prevailed on him, and he set out accordingly.

The next Evening was appointed for a Ball, to which I resolved to go; and accordingly made all the Preparation I was capable, to appear as Grand as some of the Rest; but I wanted some of my
richest

richest Jewels to dress; however I had enough to pass off tolerably well.

The Hour being come I repaired thither, with two Ladies whom I had contracted the most Intimacy with in this great City; and found a large Company of Persons, of both Sexes, of the first Rank, whom it is needless, here, to give a particular Description of: Suffice it to say, that I spent the Time with abundance of Pleasure and Satisfaction, and behaved myself with as much Gaiety as possible; I danced as Nimble as I had done some Years before; and in particular the Dance I learned in *France*, and danced with such Applause in *England*, in my *Turkish* Habit; and which, I believe I should then have put on, if I had had it with me.

After I had done Dancing, I retired, with some other Ladies, into a little Apartment for some Refreshment; where I had not long been, but I observed an elderly Gentleman (who I had not observed before) and a sprightly young Gentleman, of a good Shape and Mien, as it were attending him; at the Sight of whom, my Heart flutter'd very much; and, as if by Simpathy, my Mind gave me, they were coming to speak to me on some extraordinary Occasion.

I had not Time to compose myself, before they saluted me in a wonderful genteel and respectful Manner; and the elderly Gentleman immediately whisper'd something in my Ear, whereby I presently discovered he was the Prince de ——— who had been so vastly generous to me at *Paris*, after the untimely Death of the Jeweller; and of whom I have given a full Account before.

I must leave my Readers to imagine, for I want Words to express the Astonishment I was in, at seeing the Person once more, who had been so great and good a Benefactor to me; and who (I must Confess) by his Temper, and generous Treatment, engaged me to love him in the most affectionate Manner; as Witness, on the Birth of the first Child, a Boy, of whose Maintenance and Education he took a particular Care, by settling a handsome Fortune, in the Bank of *Lyons*, to defray the Expence.

I own I had a prodigious Pleasure, and secret Satisfaction in this unexpected Interview; and the more I gaz'd, the more the Remembrance of Our past Endearments revolved in my Mind: And had I had no Husband in the Way, at this Time, I believe my now Vir-
tue

ture would not have been strong enough to have resisted the least Offer of embracing him again in my Arms. But he was a Man of too strict Honour to request it. He only desired the Opportunity of one Visit, to have a Detail of my past Life, whether good or bad, since he last saw me at *Paris*; at the same time Insinuating, that if my Circumstances required it, he would yet be a Friend to me; and, to convince me of his Sincerity, privately slipped into my Hand a Silk Purse, with as much Gold in it as amounted to one Hundred and fifty Guineas Sterling. As it was not a proper Place to discourse of private Affairs, he very respectfully took his Leave, only obliging me to promise him a Meeting the next Morning, which I agreed to.

But when the young Gentleman took his Leave, which was in a wonderful polite Manner, he saluted me so Affectionately, that I could not forbear imagining, he was something dear to me; but in what Condition I could not think.

Soon after they were gone, I took my Leave of the Ladies, in the Apartment I was in, and returned Home. But I was in the utmost Consternation how to behave in this Exigence; the Fear I had of giving my tender Husband any Umbrage, persuaded me to forfeit my Word given to the Prince *de* — But then, reflecting what a kind Friend he had been to me, when I was as it were a Widow, Helpless, and in a strange Country, the Endearments which had passed between us; how he maintained me in the utmost Splendor, for a long Time, and vastly encreased the Treasure the Jeweller left me worth, when he was murdered; I say, all these Things revolved in my Mind, to such a strange Degree, that I had no Rest at all that Night.

Morning being come, I quitted my Bed in the utmost Confusion; still irresolute what to do. I must Confess, my Passions were never so wrack'd before; what with the Duty owing to the most endearing Husband on Earth, whose Marriage-Bed I had never defiled, nor ever harbour'd the least Thought of; and the Promise so great a Person as the Prince *de* — had prevailed on me to make him, *viz.* to give him this one Meeting; the Consequence of which I dreaded, to such a prodigious Degree, that I knew not what to resolve on.

In fine, after a tedious Struggle betwixt Duty and Inclination, at last I came to this Resolution; that I would meet the Prince *de* — according to Promise: But as I had no Intention but an honest Visit, I dressed myself in the plainest Habit I had, which was a Suit of black Paduasoy Silk, made after the *Quaker-Fashion*: I dressed my Head, likewise, after the Manner of those People; imagining, that as I knew the Prince to be a Man of the utmost Taste of Grandeur, I should thereby preserve myself from any the least Temptation to his future Embraces, which was the only thing I dreaded.

In this uncommon Dress (in the City of *Brussels*) I went in a Chair to the Place appointed; where I was no sooner arrived, but immediately conducted to the Prince's Presence: But he was so astonished at seeing me in this plain Habit, that he remained silent for some Time.

At last (after a civil Salute) he broke Way; desiring me to sit down and refresh myself, and then give him a Detail of my Circumstances: and in what Part of the World I had hid myself so long; That he had made all the Enquiry possible after me, for a long Time, to no Purpose; and by means of his former Gentleman, had at last heard I was settled in *England*, but the particular Place he never knew. That he had once an Intention of altering his Condition, some Time after he had bury'd his Princess, who was one of the compleatest Lady's in *Europe*; and that, believing me to be perfectly Virtuous, and not to be overcome by any Man but himself; he therefore, at that Time, resolved to have made me his Princess; not doubting, but that (as I had been so subservient to him before) I should, if Possible, have been much more so, after he had given me this Mark of his Princely Affection: That in order to this he had given Instructions to his Gentleman to go over to *England* and seek me, with full Powers to treat with me on that Head; and that if I made any Scruple, after seeing his Credential Letters, he should marry me, by Proxy, in *England*; which he, the Prince, would stand to, and effectually Consummate, as soon as I arrived at the Place his Highness had appointed me to meet him, in *Germany*, near which he was then settled, and lived at one of his Estates.

It unfortunately happened (*to use his own Words*), that his Gentleman fell under some Indisposition but the day before he was to have set out for *England*, in pursuit of me; during whose Illness, he took the usual diversion of the Season which was Hunting the Wild Boar (the most desperate Diversion in *Europe*, if not in the whole World) and he (the Prince) happening to be foremost in the Chase the wild Creature go'd his Horse by which Means the Rider fell on the Ground, and before he could recover himself to make use of his Spear, was so terribly Wounded that with much difficulty his Companions rescued him from immediate Death; and convey'd him to the first Place of Relief where he was obliged to stay without any Hopes of Recovery.

After some time, when the Prince recover'd his Senses he was advised by his Friends to retire to a Religious Life and thereby prepare for the Salvation of his Soul; the Cure of his Body being despair'd of by all his Physicians, which accordingly he consented to.

Here it was that I had another Confirmation of the Fidelity of my Servant *Amy*, who had taken abundance of Pains in this Affair, when I sent her to *Paris*, and *Roan*, to find out my then *Dutch* Merchant, now my Husband, where she met her former Friend, the Prince *de —*'s Gentleman, who then told her all this Affair; upon which she embarked for *England*, came to my then Lodgings at the *Quaker's*, by the *Minories*, cursing all the *Romish* Priests, for having persuaded the Prince to change his Mind; by which I, her Mistress, was prevented being made a Princess.

I must confess, though I had received abundant Testimony of *Amy's* Fidelity to me; yet I was not a little pleased to find it corroborated by so judicious a Person as the Prince; and which, I cannot help declaring, afforded me some Comfort; by imagining, that as she had done so much to serve me, I must certainly have wrong'd her, by believing she could have the Heart to make away with my Daughter; especially when I reflected, that she well knew, notwithstanding all her Services done to me, and the many Years she had lived with me, I had turned her away, only for mentioning such a horrid Thing.

But to return, the Prince having satisfied me in all Things, with respect to his former honourable Intentions towards me, now insisted

on the Satisfaction, as he was pleased to term it, of hearing from my own Mouth, how *I* had lived; where my Place of Settlement was; and how my Circumstances were at present; that he might be the Judge how to act to serve me, according to the utmost of his yet Good-Will and Power; assuring me, he should rejoice to be conducive to my Happiness.

As for Matrimony, his Mind was quite altered; and he was now become so much a *Religense* (according to the *French* Phrase) that, setting aside a civil Salute of the Lip, he should require no farther Intimacy.

Nothing could be more Satisfactory to me, than to find this Noble Man so Generous; he who had been so kind a Friend, so great a Benefactor, and maintained me in such Splendor; he who might have commanded any thing, had *I* not been entered into the State of Marrimony, the Sacred Vow of which (as *I* had never yet violated) *I* dreaded *I* should not have Power to resist breaking, had he put the Question to me: *I* say, when *I* reflect upon this, *I* cannot sufficiently describe my Astonishment, and must impute it only to the Divine Goodness, who is Graciously pleased, many Times, to afford Assistance to the worst of Sinners, when they willingly reform: And in this Case, it was certainly so to me; for though *I* knew, the only Way to avoid the Sin is to shun the Temptation; yet *I* had not Power to avoid making the Prince this Visit, according to his Desire, notwithstanding *I* dreaded the Consequence.

It was now my turn to Answer him; which *I* did, by acquainting him, That after he had sent Word by his Gentleman, that his Princess being dead, he could visit me no more: *I* consulted (in the best Manner possible) how to preserve his Honour, and myself; that in Order thereto, *I* resolved to leave *Paris*; for being deprived of his Presence, *I* despaired of ever being Happy in *France*; and therefore, applied myself to a worthy, honest, just Merchant; who then resided at *Paris* to assist me, in conveying that Treasure, he had so Bountifully bestowed on me, into *England*; where *I* proposed to live a private Life.

That this Merchant, who was a *Dutchman*, not understanding the real Value of the Jewels his Honour had been pleased to give me, had recourse to a *Jew*, who was a great Dealer in such Commodities,
and

and esteem'd the best Judge of such things in *France*; and finding me the Owner of them, a single helpless Woman, propos'd to the Merchant to get them out of my Hands; and confiscate them to his own Use; but the honest Merchant prevented it, and sent me away immediately into *Holland*, to which Place he happened to have a Ship bound, ready freighted, only waiting his last Orders to sail, which he sent by a Messenger with me.

Here I particularly related the Hardships I underwent; how we narrowly escap'd being lost in a Storm; and at last was oblig'd to run ashore at *Hanwich*; how *Amy* was so fright'ned, that I was forc'd to leave her there and go to *Holland*; for fear of losing what I was to subsist on afterwards. — That while I was taking Care of my Affairs in *Holland*, the Dutch Merchant left *France* and return'd home; and after some Time, made such honourable Proposals to me of Marriage, that, despairing of ever seeing his Highness any more, I at last comply'd; and hop'd his Highness would please to forgive me.

As to my being in *England*, I told him, that I went thither from *Holland*, and lived a private Life in the City of *London*, till some Time after I was married, when I agreed to go to *Holland* with my Spouse, who went to take Possession of an Estate and Title there which had long descended in his Family; and that our Place of Residence was at— that we had made a Tour to several Places; but should depart hence homewards in a few Days.

Upon this he clasp'd me in his Arms, and with'd me all the Joy the World could afford; assuring me, nothing could be more pleasing to him, than to see me once more; and especially to find I was married to a good Husband; and that I had managed my Affairs so prudently——But (he said) he had one thing to acquaint me with, which he beliv'd would add to my present Joy, as it had done to his for a long time past; and that was, to let me know the young Gentleman who attended him the Night before, was my own Son; who, during the Time of Sicknes he had sent for, and owned for his Natural Son, had settled a Sufficiency on him to support himself like a Gentleman, and had brought him to *Brussels* in hopes of settling him

In a handsome Post, which he believed him deserving of, he having always behaved so Obedient and Respectfully to him, that in his private Reflections on his past Life, he was well satisfied his Amour with me was with a Person deserving to be a Princess.

He spoke these Words with so much Tendernefs and such an Emphasis, that I cannot deny but it roused my former Ambition, and I should really belie my Conscience, if I should say, at this juncture of Time, I did not wish my self in the same State I was in about fourteen Years ago; and I paus'd some time to consider how to act; both I was to speak one Word to disoblige the Prince, but had a strong Desire once more to see the Son I had by this noble Person; and was afraid to ask the Question for fear of disobliging his Highness.

My Countenance betraying me, the Prince, who look'd me in the Face all the while, courteously ask'd me what was the Matter, and presented me with a Glass of such Wine as he knew I lov'd best, saying, he hoped he had said nothing to disoblige me; conjuring me to acquaint him if any thing troubled me that was in his Power to redress.

His well known Affability and good Nature embolden'd me (at last) to tell him, I should take it as an extreme Favour if I might once more be admitted to feast my Eyes on the dear Pledge of his former Embraces, provided nevertheless, that the young Man might not be let into the Secret that I was the unhappy Woman who bore him, for that this Knowledge would be a great Unhappiness, and very likely tend to my utter Ruin.

To this he readily consented, assuring me, if I did not betray my self, all would be well; so calling his Gentleman, order'd his Son to wait on him immediately.

This Command was no sooner given, but my Son appeared, desiring to know the Prince his Father's Pleasure, who told him, that Lady (meaning me) having a Desire to see him, he had sent for him to satisfy her Curiosity.

Upon this he paid his Respects, and complimented me in such a polite Manner, as plainly bespoke him the Son of a Prince, and I mightily rejoiced in reflecting within my self, to think what a Happiness it was to be the Mother of so hopeful a Youth; but it was a dreadful Mortification that I dar'd not own him as my Son; however, I was oblig'd to stifle my Uneasiness as well as I could at this Juncture.

By

By this Time Dinner being ready, the Prince retir'd to the great Parlour, leaving my Son to conduct me thither; who, as if by instinct in Nature, took that little Opportunity to embrace me, which he did in so tender a Manner, that it mov'd my very Soul, and brought Tears in my Eyes, which I had much ado to prevent his discovering; and indeed 'twas with great Difficulty I refrained discovering myself to him, that I was his Mother.

After Dinner the Prince was pleas'd, according to his usual Custom, to take a Walk in the Garden, desiring me and my Son to accompany him; which we did accordingly; and pass'd a few Hours with as much Pleasure, to my thinking, as ever I did in my Life; and should have thought myself Happy, to have continu'd to the remaining part in it, in this calm Retreat, with such agreeable Company and Conversation.

About two Hours before Sun-set, we retir'd to a private Summer-House, where a fine Desert, Side-Board, &c. with divers Sorts of rich Wines, and a very neat, but not gaudy, Service of Plate, was ready laid for our Entertainment; where we continu'd till near the Close of the Day when my Confidence telling me, I must soon take my Leave of this noble Prince, and my Son, and bid them both *Adieu* for Ever; it created such a struggle in my Breast, between Duty to my indulgent Husband, and Affection to this Prince and Son, as cannot be express'd.

The Prince perceiving me disordered, rightly judg'd the Cause; and therefore order'd my Son into the House, and prepar'd every thing ready for his Reception; upon which, after due Reverence paid, he immediately withdrew; but, at his going out, he fix'd his Eyes so intently on me, that it seem'd as if he desired to leave them behind, to gaze yet longer; and mine pursu'd him to the utmost length of Sight, secretly wishing, I could always have him continue with me.

During the remaining space of Time we staid in the Summer-House, the Prince spok'd pretty smart to me on this Affair, telling me, this Womanish Behaviour would betray me; and as I had request'd the Secret should not be known, he had purposely order'd his Son out of my Sight; and that, except I fought it myself, I should see him no more, especially in his Presence: He then advis'd me to have a particular Regard for my own Ease and Quiet,

more

more especially as I had now a tender loving Husband; and exhorted me to be very careful not to give him the least Occasion of even a supposed Offence, which might be a Means (he said) of forfeiting his Love: For (continued he) Marriage is not only Honourable, but the happiest State in this Life, so long as the Husband and Wife agree well together; but if, once Uneasiness creeps in, it not only breeds Contempt of each other, but centers in making it a Hell upon Earth, which can only terminate with Life. As to his own Part, he would only sup with me that Night, after which, he would take his final Leave of me in this World, where he had not long to abide; that he would always, in his devoutest Prayers, recommend me to the especial Care of the Divine Being; and at last added, if ever I should need his Assistance, if I would let him know it, his Heart and Hand should be always open to administer to my Necessities. And with these Words he courteously took me by the Hand, and led me into the House.

This Declaration of the Prince had such an Effect upon me; that with all the Art I was Mistress of, I could scarce keep my self in due Decorum; and notwithstanding the curious Entertainment, which was compos'd of most Things in Season, my Mind was so perplexed, that I could scarcely Eat or Drink any thing; ten thousand different Thoughts (if possible) occurred to my Mind, and as many Reflections thereon; insomuch that I appeared as if struck Senseless.

This occasioned the Prince to rise sooner from Table than he usually used to do, whenever I had the Honour to sup with him before; and take his last Farewel of me; for so it proved indeed; and it was with the utmost Difficulty I prevailed on him, with Tears flowing from my Eyes in Abundance, to permit me to take my last Leave of this Son, so punctual was he to his Word; and such an earnest Desire had I to see him this once more, that I importuned him on my bare Knees, with Hands lifted up as if to Heaven, before he would grant my Request.—But at last, flying from me, as it were, to the other side of the Room, he called his Gentleman, and bid him send his Son in; who no sooner appeared, but he ordered him to Conduct the Lady to her Chair, and return again presently; and so left us.

Not-
led me to have a particular Regard for my own Fate and Order

Notwithstanding I was in this Perplexity, I plainly perceived the Prince was displeased; nay, more angry than I had ever seen him before, though I had lived with him (as I may say) several Years; the Consequence of whose Displeasure caused me no small Uneasiness afterwards, fearing it might turn to the Disadvantage of my Son, whom I loved much better, and had more tender Affection for, than that Son I had since, by the *Dutch Merchant*, who is now my Husband.

My Son having ordered the Chair to be got ready, returned, and finding me in Tears, earnestly requested to know the Cause: But I dared not tell him, for fear of its proving my Ruin. I made him a Present of a fine repeating Gold Watch, which I desired him to keep in Remembrance of the unhappy *Donor*; then I flung my Arms about his Neck, and kissed him, repeating these Words twice in his Ear, *My dear — Adieu for Ever!* He had just begun to Answer me (clinging his precious Arms about my Neck) and looking me earnestly in the Face, when the Servant returning with the Chair, put an End to the Discourse; so giving me the last tender Kiss, conducted me into it, and I was carried to my Lodging.

To prevent any Person's seeing me in this Confusion, I went directly to Bed, far more tormented in my Mind, than when I rose from it in the Morning. I now heartily wished I had forfeited my Word, and not gone to the Prince; then I reflected with myself on the Folly I had committed in going to the Ball, which was the Cause of my seeing him; and sincerely repented persuading my Husband to go the Journey, for otherwise we might have quitted *Brussels* by this Time, and all this Vexation had been prevented; thus, in sore Perplexity, I passed the second Night, having no Rest till late in the Morning, when I fell into a fine Slumber, which a little refreshed me.

I was disturbed from this Slumber by a strange confused Noise in my Anti-Chamber; one said, Certainly the Lady is Dead, for she never used to lie 'till this time of Day; but, said another, perhaps she may be but a little indisposed; don't fright yourself, knock at the Door, look through the Key-Hole, listen if she does not Answer——That signifies nothing, answered the first, for I brought her Chocolate up three Hours ago, which was after the usual Time her Ladyship used to rise; besides I never found her Door lock'd, and

the Key on the Inside before, so she must be Dead —— Lord have Mercy on us! and her Spouse has not been at home neither these three Nights! —— Well, says another, let us send for a Magistrate, and break open the Door; perhaps she hath committed the unpardonable Sin, and laid violent Hands of herself —— *Mon Dieu!* cry'd the Mistress of the House, I would not have such a thing happen under my Roof, for the whole World! —— But now I think on it, she look'd as if she was disordered in her Mind yesterday Morning, when she went out.

These Words roused my Spirits, and made me begin to think on what I had done; but finding them resolve to break open the Door, I cried out What's the Matter! Who's there? O Lord! My Lady! (answered the Landlady) we thought you were Dead! Dead! said I, No; bring up my Chocolate: Upon which they all went down Stairs.

They were no sooner gone, but I rose, and dressing myself in my usual Morning-Dress, went down to Breakfast, which I had never done before at this Lodging; but the good Woman of the House, and all the Servants, stared at me as if I had been some strange uncommon Creature: This made me laugh Heartily; however, I sat down and spent about an Hour with my Landlady, by which Time they recovered themselves from their Fright.

I then returned to my Chamber, where I stay'd the best Part of the remainder of the Day, ruminating on what I had done, and how to behave myself under this new Trouble, which I had entirely brought upon my own Mind by unhappily going to the Ball; but as Time past cannot be recalled, it was in vain to fret and fatigue myself beyond Measure, which it was but too likely might have occasioned a Relapse of the Disorder which my good-natur'd Husband had taken the Pains, at a great Expence, to cure me of.

Upon this, I resolv'd to leave *Brussels* with the utmost Expedition, and to that End, I employed my self in managing every Thing ready for our Journey, against my Spouse's Arrival, which providentially was a Day sooner than I expected him. He was so wonderfully pleased with what I had done, that he told me, he found I had been so busy at home, that I had taken no Diversion abroad since his Departure. I answered him, that without his Company, the only Diversion I desir'd, was to consult his Interest; that I had taken

taken this Employment purposely to expedite our Departure, to prevent further Expence; requesting him, if possible, to set out the next Day, which he readily agreed to.

Two substantial Reasons induced me to take this Method; the first was, if I should appear any more Abroad in *Brussels*, it would be always with my Husband; who, though I had never yet discovered the least Symptoms of Jealousy in, I was not certain what might happen, should he ever see any Person speaking to me, or pay me any extraordinary Respect; or hear of my going to the Ball in his Absence, and that I went out next Morning and stay'd all Day, &c.

The second was, if I should at any Time meet the *Prince de ---* I should not be able to refrain complimenting him in a particular Manner; but should I see my Son, I should not, (with all the Art I was Mistress of) be able to keep my Countenance; neither was I certain, but that he might take some Opportunity to seek me out and make me a Visit.

Thus leaving *Brussels*, we, by easy Journies, arrived safe in *Holland*, where after having rested my self a few Days, I began to think what I had to do in *England*; the first Thing was, to enquire whether there was not another Letter from the *Quaker*; then I resolved to take an *English* Servant whom I could trust, but was at a sad Loss how to get one to my Mind; for I concluded it impossible to find another so trusty as my old Servant *Amy*; and only for that Expression in the *Quaker's* last Letter, which describes her to be disorder'd in Mind, and occasion'd my believing her guilty of the Murder of my Daughter, who had been Cook-Maid at my House in *Pall-Mall*; I say, had it not been for this, I could most willingly have sent for her, to live with me the remainder of her or my Life.

This made me resolve to send a Letter immediately to the *Quaker*, empowering her to fix on a proper Person, and send her to me; I likewise desir'd an Explanation of her Letter in all Points, which, when done, I would consider of her Proposals, and assent to, or dissent from, as I judged best.

Inclosed in this Letter, I sent one to *Amy*, with positive Orders to her, to give me full Satisfaction as to the Welfare of my Child, which if she did, she might yet depend upon my Friendship and Protection,

Protection, but if not, I would certainly not only never forgive her myself, but would inevitably have her hang'd.

Having dispatched these Letters, I remained pretty easy in my Mind, living in profound Serenity in my Family; only now and then the Thoughts of my Interview with the *Prince de —*, and the Son I had by him, would creep in. But, as I was thoroughly satisfied from the *Prince* himself, that he had settled a Sufficiency on him to live like a Gentleman, and his further good Intentions towards him, I cannot say, but I made my self pretty easy on that Account.

Before I received any Answer from my Friend the Quaker, or Maid *Amy*, two of my Husband's Daughters (by his first Wife) were happily married; at whose Nuptials I appear'd as gay as possible, and to convince my Husband of the Sincerity of my former Promise; I made them both very handsome Presents out of my own Stock, which he had generously left me to dispose of at my own Discretion.

This was extremely pleasing to him; and he promised me, if ever he found any Opportunity, he would convince me how kindly he took the Regard I had for his former Children.

On the Celebration of the Nuptials of the youngest Daughter, my Husband was more liberal than ever I had known him to be before; and though I did not find any Fault with him about it, he gave me this Reason for it: That as these two Girls were well married, that is to say, to honest Merchants and Men of good Substance in the World, he should now have nothing to do but to provide for my young Son, whom he propos'd to make his sole Heir after my Death.

During this Time of Mirth, *Amy* arriv'd, and my Spouse being accidentally at the Door, dispatching a Messenger, on some Occasion, saw her passing by, who immediately brought her in, came to me, and said, My Dear, I have got your old trusty Servant *Amy* come to see us, and I desire you will make her welcome, especially on this joyful Occasion, for, I assure you, I respect her, as being the first living Instrument who brought me to the Sight of your dear self.

I was more than a little surpris'd at this News, not having yet received any Advice of *Amy*, or a Letter from the Quaker. However,

ever, I presently recover'd my self; and as it was a Time of Jollity at our House, contented myself for the present, with saying, I was glad to see her, and bidding her welcome in *Holland*; especially at my House.

Though *Amy* could not have come in a more seasonable Time to prevent my Anger, and immediately calling her to a strict Examination of her past Conduct since I turned her away, the House being full of Company; yet, I must own, it put a great Damp on my Spirits for that Day.

Next Morning, with my Husband's Leave, I ordered that *Amy* should again Officiate and attend me as my waiting Woman, and by that Means had the Opportunity of some Discourse with her, in which she gave me so much Satisfaction, that I was almost reconciled to her, and continued her in her Place.

A few Days before the Departure of the new marry'd Couples to their respective Homes, my Husband, out of Complaisance to me, proposed a Ball at our House, at which a few particular Friends should be invited, which Request I could not well refuse, so made Provision for it accordingly.

Amy coming over in a Vessel, on Board which were several Gentlemen of good Figure; one among the rest, being more careful of her, and proffering his Assistance to find out the Place and Person she wanted; this Gentleman she ask'd my Leave to admit to the Ball, which I granting, he was introduced by her accordingly.

I was still ambitious enough to order all Things in the compleatest and grandest Manner, and especially as it was my Husband's Request; and he, in Return, invited the People of the greatest Figure he could. I therefore dressed myself in the gayest Manner; nay, indeed, rather too gay for one of my Years, and danced with them.

After I had danced one Dance, my Spouse came to me, and taking me aside, desir'd I would, in Honour to his two Daughters, dress myself this once in the Turkish Habit, he had seen me have on in *England*; and that he hoped I would now make no Scruple of it, for I had *Amy* to dress me now, and perform the Part of the *Persian* Slave as well as then.

This I was very unwilling to do, telling him, it was a Dress entirely unbecoming me at this Time; however, I told him, if he

insisted on it, I would put on some more Jewels. But that would not satisfy him; nothing but the *Turkish* Dress would do; so at last I consented and took *Amy* up with me to dress our selves.

Not having used this Habit so long, occasion'd me to tarry longer than he expected, or I should otherwise have done, whereby his Patience was so much tir'd, that he not only sent for me twice, but the third time; and as I was coming down Stairs, met him coming himself for me, who led me into a little Drawing-Room joining to that where the Ball was; and having given Directions to the Musick what Tune to play, I enter'd and danc'd by my self the same Dance I had danc'd at *Brussels* without that Habit, which I now perform'd with as great Applause, considering the Company, as when I danc'd it at my House in *Pall-Mall*.

Upon my retiring again to the Withdrawing-Room, several Persons came with my Husband to compliment me, and admire my Dress, which they prais'd to the highest Degree, and particularly took Notice of the rich Jewels in my Head-Dress, some of which, even my Husband had never seen before.

But after all the rest, the Gentleman, whom I had given *Amy* Permission to admit, complimented me with the Title of *ROXANA* the Second; which two Words he added to the Name of *ROXANA* (as I afterwards found) because he understood I was now married; but he swore to *Amy* that Night, he was very sure it was the same *ROXANA* he had seen dance in *England* before the King; and that he knew her too; but bid her assure me, he would never open his Lips more about it, for fear of any ill Consequence that might happen to me.

The bare mention of the Name *ROXANA*, almost made me sound away, for I now made no Question but my Husband had got to the Knowledge of all my secret Transactions. There was now no Time to consider any thing; all I could do was, to drink a Glass of Water and retire, as if suddenly taken ill, which I did accordingly.

The quick-witted Jade, *Amy*, no sooner heard the Name of *ROXANA* mention'd, but she privately gave the Gentleman a twitch on the Sleeve, and taking him to a private Place in the House, conjur'd him to depart immediately, and mention such a Word no more upon his Peril, for that he must consider, he was now in *Holland*,
not

not in *England*, promising to meet him the next Day where he should appoint, provided he would promise and swear, as he was a Gentleman, never to speak that Word any more ; which he generously did, and for ought I know, kept his Word, at least, I never heard to the contrary.

Now I began to think with myself I was quite ruined, not only in the Affections of my Husband, but the Esteem of all the World ; for I verily believed at that Time, that all my Lewdness and Intrigues were discovered, and that this Person who had first given me the Name of *ROXANA* in *England*, and who was indeed, the eldest Son of the first Duke in that Kingdom, and when I gave the Ball at my House there, was but just arrived from his Travels Abroad, had made it his Business to find me out, on purpose to expose me, because I would not at that Time yield to his Embraces.

While I was thus disordered, and ruminating on these Things, my Husband came to my Chamber, kindly ask'd how I did, felt my Pulse, and propos'd sending for a Physician, assuring me of his hearty Sorrow for my Illness, and that he was really very uneasy at his over-persuading me to fatigue myself so much, which he told me (with a loving Kiss) he dreaded himself to be the Occasion ; and in a Manner too submissive for such a kind Husband, humbly begged my Pardon.

I was not so sick in reallity, as he imagin'd ; but wanted to sound him to the Bottom, that I might not only find out how he stood affected to me in this grand Affair ; but likewise know how, and in what Manner to comport myself to him, his Family, and all other Acquaintance ; but to no Purpose ; for I found he had taken no Notice of any thing that was said ; so after a little Time I compos'd myself, and having changed my Dress, went down again into another Parlour, where I staid till the Ball was over, which was not a great while ; for the Company was so affected at being told I was suddenly taken sick, that they broke up to prevent my being disturbed.

Any having been returned to me so little a Time, I never once thought of her in all this Bustle ; but next Morning, when I asked her about it, she gave me a particular Account how she had managed the Gentleman, abovementioned ; only she added ; Madam, as I have nothing so much at Heart as your Preservation in all Shapes,

Shapes; I entreat you to pass by my Neglecting to wait on you last Night; which had I done, both your Ladyship and myself must have continued in the Dark; with respect to your Ladyship's being call'd *ROXANA* in this Country: But I now assure your Ladyship, that the Gentleman who then called your Ladyship *ROXANA the Second*, is a very clever Gentleman (though I say it that should not) hath since given me his Word of Honour, pledg'd his Vows and Oaths; nay, I assure your Ladyship; upon my Soul, Madam! he hath pawn'd all that's possible for a Man to leave with a Woman! as a sure Pledge he will never let that Name drop from his Lips more; and he promis'd it me in such a--a--par--ticular Manner, and such a--a--ve--ry--par--ticular Time last Night and this Morning, that I could not help believing him; and would have your Ladyship believe me too; for you know I never scrupled doing ny thing to serve you in my Life.

Here I stopp'd *Amy's* going any farther, and really thought she was turn'd Lunatick, for I never heard her talk so Ludicrous before, and was afraid her Brain was really turn'd; so without any more to do, I order'd her to go to Bed, and wait on me again exactly at five in the Afternoon, when I should have something extraordinary for her to do; and that I might make sure of her, I pull'd aside Part of the Partition of my own Chamber, where my tender Spouse usually lay whenever I happen'd to be taken ill, that he might be ready to assist me at any Hour of the Night, and saw her undress her self and go into his Bed.

The next Day being fix'd for the Departure of both the new married Couple, my Husband was pretty much busied in ordering every thing ready for their Journey, which gave me a better Opportunity to watch *Amy*, for I sadly wanted to know how she had managed this Affair, therefore at the Hour appointed, I retir'd to my Chamber, call'd up *Amy*, who by that Time was pretty well compos'd, who gave me so good an Account of her Management in the Affair, as made me entirely easy.

Here I had another Instance of *Amy's* Fidelity to me, who at last ingeniously own'd, after begging my Pardon, that not being able to prevail on the Gentleman, on her Promise of meeting him next Day; She, to prevent his returning into the Ball Room again, where she dreaded he might again mention the Name of *ROXANA*, was

was obliged to go with him that very Night to his Lodgings, and even submit to his Embraces; which she condescended to (as she said) purely for the Preservation of my Honour and Quiet; protesting to me, he was a very fine Gentleman, and the only Man that had lain with her since the Prince de ———'s Gentleman, when she was last in *France*, when she, by meer Accident, met him in the Street at *Paris*, and he accompanied her to *Roan*, in *Normandy*, and back again to *Paris*; at which Time he acquainted her with his Master's Design of marrying me.

Though *Amy* was now, like me, growing in Years; yet she carried her Age very well, had a good Complexion, a tollerable good Shape and well Proportioned; had very good Cloaths, and always dressed herself Neat and Genteel. And besides, though she had been my Servant so many Years, she had a long Time been freed from doing any laborious Business, lived easy and well, more like a Mistress than a Servant, without Drinking and Debauching herself in the Manner I had done; so that indeed I cannot in reality deny, but if she had been set off with the rich gaudy Jewels I was, any Person (at first Sight) might as well have taken her for a Mistress as me, and especially for so short a Duration as one Night, in which space of Time these could be but little polite Conversation.

Though I did not altogether approve of *Amy's* being a Whore to serve me; yet when I had given myself the liberty of thinking, I could not but reflect, I was the only Person who first caused her to be so, by undressing her myself, and forcing her into Bed to my Friend the Jeweller (as formerly related) I cannot truly say I was quite so angry with her as I should have been otherwise; and more especially when I remembered he was a fine Gentleman, as she said. However, this confirmed me in one of my former Sentiments, *viz.* There certainly is a Critical, or unguarded Moment, when a Woman is to be Overcome; which juncture of Time, and a convenient Opportunity, being once let slip by the Suitor; she may be Proof against all his Efforts ever after.

But this, like all other Incidents of my past Life, soon passed off; I hearing no more of this Gentleman, or the Nick-Name of *ROXANA*, which he first gave me, and by which I was so well known in *England*.

The new married Folks being now gone, and the Family entirely settled, *Amy* was fully established in her former Station of serving me; and by this last Act of hers (wicked as it was in itself) she recovered my Good-Will again entirely, I began to be very chearful in my now small Family; Blessed in a tender loving Husband; and Happy with my old Servant and Confident *Amy*, who I empowered to settle a Correspondence, and receive all Letter and Messages that came to me.

Pursuant to this she, in a very short Time after, delivered me a long Letter from the *Quaker*, containing an Answer to such Matters as I required; in which Letter she made a Recital of most of the material Events had befallen me, during the Time I lodged at her House, all which, being before communicated, needs no Repetition.

The chief Design of this Letter was to acquaint me of the Death of her Husband beyond Sea, in much better Circumstances than she expected, or he had ever been, to her Knowledge, before——That she had been so far from lessening the yearly Income my Husband had settled on her, that she had now greatly added thereto——That she had given her Children the utmost Education the Principles of her Profession allow'd her; and particularly her eldest Son, who was now become a substantial *West-India* Merchant, ——That he had just sent out (mostly on his own Account) a Vessel for Trade to *Pensylvania*, from whence he expected great Returns, through the *Quakers* Means settled there, of which she said, her worthy Friend *Penn* was chief Proprietor and Governor, who had mightily encouraged sending this Ship, and in which he himself, with some of his Family, were going Passengers thither——Here she gave a long Account of her Principles of Religion; and what an excellent thing it was to be instrumental in saving a Soul, and the like——At last, after abundance of kind Professions to me, and all belonging to me; returning sincere Thanks for all Favours received, she declares, she had a great Desire to see one Thing accomplished before she died; and that was, if possible, to become ally'd to me, in the way of Marriage——That her eldest Son, who was a very sober young Man, had placed his Affections on a certain young Woman, whom, she verily believed, had likewise placed her Affections on her eldest Son; that the young Folks had both of them given such Demon-

Demonstrations to her of their reciprocal Love, and Desire they had to be joined together in Matrimony; that for her Part, she was very willing to condescend to their Wishes and Importunity; but that there was one very great Obstacle in the Way, which, she said, lay very heavy on her Spirits, and, as she thought, lay upon me to remove; and could not be well done without me, at least not without good Consultation and Consideration——In short, not to keep me longer in Suspense, she plainly tells me, her Son had taken a liking to my Daughter, who lived with the honest old People in *Spittle-Fields*, when I left *London*, and that the young Woman had the like good Will towards him, and had given her such plain Proof of it, that she was thoroughly satisfied as to that Point.

The only Thing in Doubt was, who were her Parents. can there be any plain Proof, positive Proof made of their Death, and in what Part of the World they did die; if they, or either of them are alive, it must appear so, though at never so great a Distance, for Certificates must be produced, signed before some noted Person, or Persons of her (the Quakers) Profession, giving free Consent to such intended Marriage.

Now, continued she, the Girl is a very sober good Girl, behaves extremely well, and I am sure would not tell an Untruth knowingly, or designedly upon no Account whatsoever, and she cannot in Truth say, she hath no Mother living, and without that Mother's Consent, *she cannot marry among our Friends*.

She goes on giving an Account how the Girl had lived and spent her Time; that she was so far from being Extravagant, that she had increas'd the Capital Stock I had settled on her, by her frugal Management of the yearly Interest, which she, the Quaker, paid her——That for all this, the Girl was not of a niggardly Disposition, but prone to Acts of Charity and Compassion, and that she work'd at her Needle at leisure Hours, on purpose to bestow it in Acts of Charity.

In short, she gave me such an extreme good Character of this Girl, that I must say, it was a great Comfort to me in my Solitude; but the Thoughts of her becoming a Quaker was what I was most concerned about, and what to do in that Affair I knew not.

'Tis true, I never disturbed my self about Religion, the Thoughts of that never broke my Rest, and when I went to the Quakers-Meeting

Meeting with my Landlady, it was not with any Devotion at all, for I only wore the Habit, had a plain Coach without any Lace to it, or the Livery, for as I may say, a Mask, to prevent my being known to be the Person who had led so vile a Life, in *Pall-Mall, Kensington, &c.* not in the least imagining that Men of Quality would come to a Quakers-Meeting in the City to seek out the noted ROXANA among those sober People.

Though (as I said above) I had very little, if any Religion in me, as to my own Part; it certainly was no Reason my Daughter should follow my Steps; especially in that Affair; for I have since had good Reason to believe, that Religion is, in a great Measure, a Preservative against Vice; and consequently a great Motive to Virtue, and Instruction to Morality——Besides, I could not contradict the *Quaker's* Principles, by any other Argument than this; *I do not like it!* And if the Question was ask'd me, *Why do you not like it?* I could only make this Answer; *Because I don't.* The like might have been said of any other Religion, for ought I know. But so much for Religion.

My honest *Quaker* concludes her long Epistle (to use her own Phrase) with abundance of good Exhortation to me; entreating me to consider well what I did, and mind how I behaved myself now, in the Deline, or latter Part of my Life; putting the Question very Home to me, *Whether the Girl was my own Child, or not*; she being the Sister of the other Girl, whom the *Quaker* used to call my *Troublesome Visitor*; who had positively asserted I was--- That she had many corroborating Circumstances to induce her to believe that I was the real Mother of them both; and that this particular one made it appear very Plain to her that it was so, *viz.* the great Care I took of their Education; which, though late (as she observed) was such as must have been very Expensive; and allowing them a competent Sufficiency to live Credibly on, without any Business, or Care——But what particular Reason I might have for not owning them, she said, she did not now hunt after.

She then took her Leave in very pathetick Manner; most earnestly requesting me, to weigh all Things in a just Ballance, and give her a speedy Answer, that she might know how to act in the Affair of her Son and the Girl, after which she would communicate some

some other Affairs to me; which she had now purposely postpon'd, as not requiring my immediate Care.

This Letter of the *Quaker's* I perus'd several Times, and consulting seriously with myself on the Contents of it, it brought to my Mind most of the past lewd Actions of my Life; which I now could not bear the Thoughts of, but with abundance of Regret at my Folly and Ambition; for I could not but Remember, that as what I did, in submitting to the Jeweller's Embraces, was through meer Poverty; and not the Effect of any natural Inclination, or Laciviousness in me; so, as he left me a sufficient Competency, at his Death, to maintain myself and Family, in a handsome Manner, it was, certainly my Duty to have returned back to *England* with it, and convert it to the good Use he designed.

But when once Ambition had fir'd my Breast, it led me, as it were insensibly, into all other Vices, *viz.* Pride, Wantonness, a greedy Desire of immoderate Riches, and Luxury to the highest Degree; which last, indeed, I always took Care that those on whom I bestowed my Favours, should bear the Expence of. I say, this Letter from my Friend the *Quaker*, revived all these Things in my Thoughts, and caused many bitter Reflections in my Mind, for so doing.

I was, as I said before, not at all pleas'd at my Daughter's being a *Quaker*, yet I could give no Reason for it; nor tell how to prevent it: However, after several Days Consideration, I began to think, That as I had left her to take her Chance in the World, a great while, without taking any Notice at all of her, if she had been of a vicious Inclination, she might have pursued it among the lower Class of Mortals, long enough ago; and probably have come to some unhappy End.

That as she had preserv'd herself free, even from Scandal, in the lowest Station; so, after I had taken Notice of her, and given her Education, she did not swerve from the Advantages gain'd thereby, but had still preserv'd herself Blameless, and maintained a good Reputation.

These Motives, at last, induc'd me not to hinder her marrying the *Quaker's* Son; but rather to forward it, as much as in my Power lay; for I was assur'd, she would then be settl'd in a very generous, sober, good-natur'd Family; and as to her being a *Quaker*, it

was nothing at all to me, as I did not then intend ever to see her again. Besides, it was a great Pleasure to me, to think, that thereby she would not fling away the Fortune I had given her; nor have a Drunkard, or Gamester for a Husband; and Consequently never be liable to that excessive Poverty, which first obliged her Mother to deserve the odious Name of WHORE.

I had now nothing to resolve on further in this Affair; only to consider what Answer to make the Quaker, about my being the Girl's Mother; which was more Difficult than all the rest; for she, being a Person of good Sense, could not easily be imposed on; especially in an Affair which so nearly concerned not only herself, but the whole Family; for they being Persons of good Repute, it would be a sad Thing to bear the Reproach of her eldest Son's marrying a Girl who could not prove her Parentage; whereby she might incur the odious Name of a *Merry-begotten One*; or, in plain Terms, a BASTARD.

Upon this I wrote to my Friend the Quaker, desiring her to explain herself more particularly in all Points, relating to the proposed Marriage of her eldest Son, with the young Woman she mentioned; and what she really wanted of me, in the Affair, or expected of me; promising to do all Things that lay in my Power to oblige her. *But (added I) Cannot the young Couple, if they have such an Inclination for each other (as you intimate to me they have) be married privately, without troubling me, or any Body else about it.*

About a Fortnight after I had sent this Letter, I received her Answer to it; wherein she told me; That the Girl's Fortune was far from being even the least Motive which induced her to Consent to the Marriage of her Son with her; for that there had been Offers made to her for him, far more Preferable as to that Point; among some of the best Families of their Friends; which would have been consummated without any Fatigue at all. But it was a settled Rule with her; That a Parent who had any Experience in the Affairs of Life, and a real Value for her Off-spring, ought never to use her Paternal Authority, in obliging, or even desiring, a Child to marry for lucre of Money; — for though it was Possible to force a Marriage, it was impossible to force Affection; and where that is wanting, on either Side, all the Riches in the World will never Purchase

chase Content and Happiness; and without this Blessing, Matrimony is the most Miserable State of Life; as evidently appeared, by innumerable Instances.—— Besides, the Off-spring of such Marriages are thereby too often Ruin'd; for when the Parents take a Dislike to each other, the proper Care and Education of the Children is always neglected——

For her Part (she said) she preferred a Portion in a Wife, far preferable to a Portion with a Wife; and that as the young Woman (my believed Daughter) was possessed of so many amiable Qualities, if she had no Fortune at all, she (the Quaker) would by no Means, in the least, thwart her Son's Inclination for so Virtuous a Person.

Now let any affectionate Mother Consider, what an inexpressible Comfort and Satisfaction it must be, to be blessed with so good a Child; and the more, as she descended from such base Parents; her Father being a meer Spendthrift; one who minded neither Wife or Children; but wallowed in Voluptuousness, Gaming, &c. 'till he had spent what should have maintained and educated them; nay, even destroyed all he had; and then left his Family to Starve, or go to the Parish: And a Mother to be so base likewise, to the Produce of her own Body, as to Desert them, turn *Whore*, and take no manner of Notice of them for so many Years, as is before related. But to return.

In Answer to my Proposition of Privacy in this Affair; the Quaker said, it was Impossible for them to be married Privately; except (to use her own Words) they went to the *Priest*; and to that she would never Consent, at any Rate whatsoever, be the Consequence what it would.

And that I might be satisfied of the Equitableness of the Proceedings of the People called Quakers, in respect to their Marriages, she gave me the following particular Account; which take *Verbatim*.

When a young Man hath taken a Liking to a Woman, he must first Acquaint his Parents, or Guardians with it, for their Approbation and Consent; before he makes any Overture to the Woman herself.

Their

Their Consent being obtained, he must go to the Parents, or Guardians of the Woman, Acquaint them of his having taken a Liking to to such a young Woman, who is under their Care ; certify them he hath obtained his own Friends Consent ; and desire Permission to visit her.

This Request is seldom, if ever, granted the first Time of asking ; but the Parents, or Guardians, of both Parties, appoint a Meeting to consult on it ; and when they have agreed, Permission is given him to make his Addreses.

Having obtained her Consent, his next Business is, to get a Certificate from her Parents, or Guardians, signed by two, or more, credible Witnesses, of *Our Friends* ; in these Words, or to the like Effect ; That ——— having declared his Intentions to them, of his Desire to take in Marriage ——— and they being Satisfied therewith do Consent, that he the said ——— do declare his said Intentions, to the Friends of ——— Meeting.

He must likewise have a Certificate from the young Woman, signed by her, in like Manner as the Former, declaring her Consent for declaring his Intentions of Marriage with her, ———, to the Meeting.

Armed with these two Certificates, and accompanied with his own Friends, he goes to the proper Meeting to which he belongs, where he declares, before the whole Audience, his Intentions of Marriage with ——— Daughter of ——— of ——— and that he hath brought Certificates from and signed by them, witnessed by the two worthy Friends, ——— ——— testifying their Consent thereto, his own Friends, present, assenting.

Upon this, two Members of that Meeting are appointed to enquire into the young Man's Character, Conduct, and Manner of Life ; and whether he be deserving of the young Woman whose Consent he mentions to have obtained ; of which they are to make Report.

The Woman must likewise pass through the same Discipline, at the Meeting to which she belongs ; and two Women are appointed to enquire after her Character, &c. and make Report thereof to the next Meeting.

On the Report of these Examiners depends the Consummation of the Marriage ; if they deliver a good one, the young Couple must
appear

appear together at the next Meeting, and both declare their Intentions by Word of Mouth, before the whole Audience; this they must do three Times; after which, they themselves fix a Day for Consummation of the said intended Marriage, which is always solemnized in a Publick Meeting; to which all Relations and Friends may be invited.

I cannot say but this is a very fair and just Way of Proceeding, though very Tedious and Fatiguing, and well worthy Imitation, for it would prevent the Ruin of many Thousands, who Rashly, or else very Inconsiderately, run Headlong into Wedlock, and do that in a Hurry, which they Repent of all their Life-Time after. Besides, it would prevent any Persons being Prosecuted, or Executed, for Stealing an Heiress, Instances of which, I Remember to have known in *England*.

But how to manage this intricate Affair I could no way Contrive; loth I was to hinder the Welfare of so good a Child; and how to forward that Welfare I knew not; without imminent Danger of my own Destruction. 'Tis true, I had appointed the Quaker to officiate, as my Deputy, or Steward, to transact all my Affairs in *England*, in the Room of *Amy*, whom I had then discarded; by which Means she had an Opportunity of being let into some of my secret Affairs; and therefore not easily to be deceived.

In this Immurgency, I was obliged to have recourse to my old Councillor *Amy*, to whom I shewed the Quaker's Letter; who was as much surpris'd and vext, as I had been before at the Girl's turning Quaker, till I reconcil'd her to it in the same Manner, and with the same Arguments I had done myself.

And after laying our Heads together, as the Saying is, *Amy* very cunningly catch'd hold of the Word Guardian; and the crafty Hussy, having a pretty quick turn of Thought, presently drew this Inference, That as the good old People in *Spittle Fields* had brought the Girl up from a Child, they were her proper Guardians, reminding me, that when I first sent her about my Son, (the now Merchant in *Italy*), she placed them Guardians over him, and that what I did afterwards for the Girls, was through their Request, and consequently, they acted as Guardians over them likewise; and that they being on the Spot, and this Girl continuing to live with

them, it could certainly be no difficult Matter to be performed.

She proposed this Method, that if I thought proper to send her over, she did not doubt bringing it to bear; and especially, as neither the Quaker nor they knew of her coming over to me, or that she had ever heard any thing from me.

Upon my considering this Scheme of *Amy's*, I could not but agree with her, it was the most plausible one that could be invented, and therefore resolved to send her over to put it in Execution.

In order to blind my Husband about *Amy's* going to *England*, I one Night at Supper, acquainted him, that *Amy* had received Information of the Death of a Relation there, and desired Leave to go to take Care of the Effects, and she would return again when she had done her Business, to which he readily consented; and she having settle a Correspondence to convey her Letters to me privately, departed accordingly.

Amy arriving in *England*, made her first Visit to the Quaker, who having welcom'd her after her Way, gave her the Letter I had inclosed in one to the Quaker some time since, but took no Notice at all of the intended Marriage.

She then went to the old Folks, in *Spittle-Fields*, who told her ever thing they could relating to the intended Wedding, and were mightily concerned at the Obstacle, which hindered the Girl's Happiness, as they said, of being well settled in a very sober good Family.

But the main thing the old Man told her, was, that the young Gentleman, and his Mother, who had several Times paid the Girl Money since her Ladyship (meaning *Amy*) had not come to visit them herself as usual, and therefore he concluded that her Ladyship was at least sick, if not dead, and had appointed the Quaker to bestow her generous Benevolence. But, Madam, continued he, Since you have once more been pleased to honour my poor Habitation with your Presence I intreat your Ladyship to take this Affair, I have now acquainted you with, into your serious Consideration. For my Part, I have done all in my Power, I have a natural Affection for the Girl, having brought her up from a Child, as your Ladyship well knows, and did the best of my Endeavour to provide for her Sister and Brother.

You

You may remember that I had placed the Boy out Apprentice, which (though to a laborious Business) was all my Circumstances would permit, after the Charge I had been at ; and the youngest Girl chose to go out to Service, but this Girl would by no Means go from me, choosing rather to remain in my poor Cottage, and perform such little Services as she was capable of, than part from those who had been so good Friends to her.

Now, Madam, (continued he) the Obstacle I was speaking of, is this, that the young Man and his Mother, believe the Girl has a Mother living, and they insist on knowing where and who she is, and on that Account I am in the utmost Perplexity, not knowing what to do more than I have.

I have given them a full Detail of my bringing her up from a Child, and believe her Mother to have been dead long ago ; for that I could not imagine otherwise, for this Reason ; that I knew her to be a Woman of that Spirit and Tenderness to her Children, that tho' her Necessity might oblige her to act as she did with Respect to them, yet he was assured, within himself, that had she been alive, she would have contrived some Method or other to enquire their Welfare ; he likewise thought, that had the Girl's Mother been living, and in any Capacity, she would certainly let him know it, and make him ample Satisfaction for the Trouble and Charge he had been at.

To be brief, he importun'd *Amy* to consult some Method, if possible, to bring this Affair about for the Girl's Settlement and Happiness, for he was very much afraid, if this Match was broke off, it would turn to her Disadvantage in all Respects.

Amy here interrupted him, by saying, That what she had done for the Family, was intirely out of her own Generosity and Respect for their Mother, to whom she had formerly been a Servant, and only came out of good Will, at present, to enquire after their Welfare.

However, since she found how Things were, she would yet contribute, all in her Power to serve the Girl, or any of the Family ; and that as to the Match, since he so earnestly wish'd it, she would contrive some Way to forward it, in promising him to come again in a few Days.

Now *Amy* acted the Part of a Gentlewoman, she hir'd a Glass Coach,

Coach, and Servants, took Lodgings in a reputable Place, and lived, in a grand Manner, that she might carry on her Scheme more successfully.

Being thus fixed, the one Day sent her Footman to invite the old Folks to Dinner, with the young Woman, (who she had not seen for a long time) and to shew her Gallantry, sent her Coach to attend them, and made a handsome Treat for their Entertainment.

After Dinner, *Amy* took the old Man aside, and so far wrought on him, that he believ'd me to be dead, and therefore no Obstacle could remain concerning the Girl's Marriage; for that as he had brought her up from a Child, he was her proper Guardian, and his Consent as such would be effectual.

In short, the Matter was at last agreed on without troubling me any more about it, and *Amy* made her a handsome Present towards Housekeeping; so in about six Weeks Time after they were marry'd at a publick Meeting by *Devonshire Square*.

Amy told me, it was perform'd in a very solemn Manner; and after the Ceremony was over, Coaches attended to carry the Guests, to the Place where they din'd; and that the Bridegroom, accompany'd by some young Men of his Acquaintance, waited on his Bride at Table.

The Entertainment was very elegant, with Plenty of divers Sorts of Wine; and the whole was conducted with that Decency and Order, that not one Person in the whole Company, which was pretty numerous, was in the least disguised with Liquor, a Practice well worthy the Imitation of others, especially on such Occasions.

About a fortnight after the Wedding, *Amy* began to think of returning home, and in order thereto, she went to take her Leave of the old People in *Spittle-Fields*, where she was inform'd of the Death of my good Friend the Quaker, who expir'd that Morning in an Appoplectick Fit; this occasion'd her to put off her intended Journey, and acquaint me with it by Letter.

This was something of a Shock to me; and the more as it happen'd so soon after my Daughter's Marriage; this occasioned me to order *Amy* to stay longer in *London*, and find out whether she had made a Will, and in what manner she had distributed her Effects.

Besides

Besides, as the Settlement my Husband and I made her, reverted to us again, it was necessary to take some Care about it.

By the Death of the Quaker, *Amy* became my sole Agent once more (for I knew not who to trust if I would change) in Consequence of which she informed me of all Things as fast as she could, and to my Satisfaction.

While she continued thus in *London*, my own Son, by my Husband, whom I had made an *Italian* Merchant arrived from Abroad, intending to settle there. He had not squander'd away the Fortune I had given him, but much improved it, and on his Arrival went immediately to the old Folks, to whom he made a handsome Present, and very respectfully returned them Thanks for the Care they had took of him and his Sisters, promising to be a Friend to them as long as he lived.

He was overjoy'd at the good Fortune of his Eldest Sister, in being so happily married, and took Lodgings in her House, where he continued till he himself married.

As soon as he knew where, he made a Visit to *Amy*, whom he stiled his good Benefactress, returned her Thanks in a very pathetic Manner, assuring her of his due regard to her at all Times. He likewise offered to reimburse the Charge she had been at in his Education, which was now in his Power to do. But *Amy* would by Means accept it, telling him that what she had done for the Family was entirely out of Good-will for her Mistress (his Mother) without any View at all of any Retaliation, or Amends.

I was extremely well pleased to hear this News you may be sure, for I must own, I was afraid he had not behaved himself so well, or taken that Care which I now found he had. His Gratitude to *Amy* in offering to reimburse some Part of the Charge she had been at was likewise pleasing to me; for I was now convinced he did not Copy after his Father at all; but acted quite the Reverse, for he was Sober, Careful and Industrious; whereas his Father was a noted Drunkard, Gamester, and slothful to the last Degree.

This Son continued Lodging at his Sister's House in good Credit, both at Home and Abroad; till her Family and his Business increasing, occasioned their Parting, my Son-in-Law not caring to part with his little House in the *Minories*, which he had purchas'd,

with some others adjoining, and jointur'd on his Wife, with whom he lived in perfect Peace and Tranquility.

Amy having dispatched all her Affairs to my Satisfaction, I at last sent for her Home again, where being arrived, she corroborated by Word of Mouth, what she had before wrote to me; all which, if possible, added to my present Happiness in this World.

About two Years after this my dear Husband was taken ill with what the Physicians call'd a Complication of Distempers, of which he languish'd about three Months and then died, leaving me possess'd of all he had, except a few Legacies to his Children by his first Wife, and a proper Settlement on the Son I had by him, whom he had placed at the University of *Leiden* in *Holland* to study Physick, in which he became a good Proficient: Some time after the Death of my Husband, I turned off some of my Equipage and Servants, resolving to live a more retired Life than I had yet done, and make some Preparations for a future State.

In order to this I dispos'd of most of my Jewels and gaudy Cloaths, unnecessary Plate and the like; good Part of the Produce thereof I bestowed in Charity; and among the rest I settled a yearly income on the Old People in *Spittle-Fields*, during both their Lives, and after them to their Children; which with what my own Son did for them, amounted to about two hundred and fifty Pounds a Year.

Having done this I searched my late Husband's Library, which was not very Large; but filled with good Books of some of the best Authors; I now took so much Delight in reading, that I spent some Hours every Day in perusing one Book or other; repenting within myself, that I had not practis'd it sooner; instead of wallowing, as I may say, in the sensual Pleasures of this wicked World. But alas! I never knew, till now, the Sweets of a Retired Life.

During this pleasant Time of Solitude, I received the News of the Death of the good old People in *Spittle-Fields*; and of my Daughter's being brought to bed of her second Child; and likewise that my eldest Son was upon the Point of marrying a Niece of the Merchant's, with whom he had been Prentice, a young Lady of good Sense, Beauty, and a large Fortune.

This News first rais'd a Thought in me of quitting *Holland*, and going over to *England*, and wear out the remaining Part of my Life there ; for I knew I could live as private there as any where else ; besides, I had been absent so long, that I should not now be known, most of my Acquaintance being dead ; this I communicated to *Amy* ; consulting her about what Part was best for me to settle in.

Amy was not for my going to *England* at all ; but used all the Arguments in her Power to dissuade me from it ; particularly, that being now grown in Years, it would not be proper for me to travel about ; and the more, as I was well settled in *Holland*, and better respected there than I could propose to be in *England*.

Her Arguments pass'd off pretty well at this Time ; but my Desire of coming to *England* increasing every Day, I consulted with her again about it ; but still found her averse to my Design. I could not now imagine what Motive induced *Amy* to this ; but, as will appear in the Sequel, she had a very powerful one to herself. However, she diverted me from it some time longer.

At last I fully resolv'd to go to *England*, for I had a vast Desire to see my Son, whom I had not seen since I sent him by *Amy* to his Uncle ; besides, I thought it much better to be near them, that I might leave the Substance I propos'd among them, with more Ease and Safety than it could be done if I died in *Holland*. I never intended to marry again, and I was fully resolv'd never to appear at Court, Masks, Plays, Balls, or any of the noted Places about the Town ; but live as retir'd a Life in *London* as I did now in *Holland* ; and as to what few City Acquaintance I had before, they were now dead, so that I had no Apprehension at all of being known.

The first thing I did, was to give my last Son his Portion, which I had propos'd, more than what his Father had allow'd him, which being done, I dispos'd of some other Effects, for which I took Bills of Exchange, payable at *London* ; and then broke up House-keeping.

But when *Amy* found I was going in earnest, she fell into such a melancholly Disposition, that I thought she would have died ; I was not willing to leave her behind, for divers Reasons, viz. for that she had been with me near forty Years (except that little Time I discarded her) during all which Time, she had been a very trusty, careful

careful Creature in all Respects; and besides, I could not well do without her, having had no other Companion (since the Death of my Husband) to converse with; and intended now to keep only one Maid to wait on us both. I had so much Regard for her, that I put off my Departure for above a Week, when there being no Signs of her Amendment, I was obliged to leave her; but not without taking due Care of her; and a punctual Order to follow me as soon as possible.

When I came to *London*, it seemed to me as if I had been in a Wood, I knew not where to go, neither had I any Acquaintance to converse with. — However, the Master of the Vessel got me a Lodging at an Apothecary's in *Tower-Street*, where I continued about a Month.

After a few Days Rest, I took a Walk towards my Daughter's; who lived in the same House I had lodged in with the Quaker; who at that Instant happened to come to the Door, with her little Son in her Arms (a sweet pretty Creature indeed) at Sight of which the Colour flush'd in my Face, which she perceiving, said, *What is the Matter Friend! Art Thou not well?* And invited me in to sit down, which I accepted of.

She then called her Nurse, bid her bring a Glass of Water, and the Bottle of *Mundus*; which being brought, she gave the Child to the Nurse, and pouring some of the *Mundus* into the Glass of Water, presented it me with her own Hand, in a very obliging pretty Manner.

Having a little recovered myself, I began to ask her several Questions; among others, if that was her Child, how Old it was, and the like; to all which she answered me so handsomely, and with so soft and sweet an Air and Voice, as charmed me, and occasioned me to tarry a great deal longer than I at first intended. I likewise took the Child in my Arms, and kissed it with a very particular Pleasure, and secret Satisfaction; and the Child, as if by Instinct, smiled in my Face, and seemed loth to go from me to his Nurse.

I perceived the Furniture not to be the same as when I lived there; it was finer, though very plain; and look'd wonderful neat indeed, which I commending, she invited me into the other Parlour, and shewed me her Chamber, which were of the same Neatness and Cleanliness.

She

She then importuned me to sit down, and drink a Glass of Wine, which, she having called for, was instantly brought; after this she shewed me her youngest Child (a fine Girl, much resembling the Mother, in its Features) which I likewise took in my Arms, and kissed it; and the Mother seemed wonderfully well pleased that I took such Notice of her Children.

I had never seen her Husband; nor he me; for before I lodged there he was sent to — *Thomson's* Boarding-School down in *Lancashire*; where many of the Town Quakers used to send their Sons, to be qualified for such Business as they designed them for; and from this Boarding-School, or Accademy, he was put out Apprentice, without coming home at all to his Mother; so that finding myself entirely secure from his Knowledge of me, and as I was now at his House, I wished for the Opportunity of seeing him; and it succeeded accordingly; for he was, as I afterwards found, a very punctual Man.

Presently after he came home from Change; and finding me in the Parlour with his Wife (whom he first saluted, and then paid his Respects to me, in his Way) generously entreated me, without any Enquiry who I was, to stay Dinner; and this he did in such a free affable Manner, and so Polite, without any strain'd Compliments, that I accepted his Invitation.

I could not but improve the Opportunity I now had, of taking particular Notice of the sweetness of his Temper, and generous Treatment of a Stranger, which plainly bespoke him the Son of my deceased good Friend, Companion, faithful and trusty Agent, the *Quaker*, who was a Woman of extreme good Sense, Manners, and Generosity to the highest Pitch; so that the silly Notion some People have conceived are entirely False and Groundless, who assert, that the *Quakers* are an Illiterate, Headstrong, Stubborn, Stiff-neck'd and Unmannerly People; as the Witty *Tom Brown* hath scurrilously made a Comparison:

— Like the Modern Quakers of the Town;
Expect our Manners, but return us none. —

What might induce *Tom Brown* to make this Comparison I know not;

not; but sure I am the Case was not so here; for my Daughter, who had, without all Doubt, fallen intirely into the *Quakers* way of Behaviour, by this Time; as well as imbibed their Principles; behaved with the greatest Politeness, entirely free from any Affectation or Reservedness; and so likewise did her Husband, who had been a Quaker Born as well as Educated; and I could not but observe, with infinite Pleasure and Satisfaction, the vast Felicity my Daughter enjoyed in her Matrimonial State, being blessed with a kind, tender, loving Husband, who willingly afforded her all the Comforts a discreet virtuous Woman could possibly Desire; and withal was so Diligent, and took such Care, of what is commonly called the Main Chance, that (as I found afterwards) he Annually laid up a handsome Stipend, towards making Provision for his Children.

Had her Father, my first Husband the Brewer, but taken a hundredth Part of the Care this young Man did, I had never been enticed to the Embraces of any Man but himself; sought my Fortune in Foreign Countries, or ever gained the Name of *ROXANA* in *Pall-Mall*, which was the sole Cause of the dreadful Constraint I was under, of not letting her know, that when she conversed with me, she conversed with her own Mother.

Her Husband having entertained me with what his House afforded, which was extream Good and Plentiful, in a very decent Manner took his Leave of me and his Spouse, at the appointed Hour, in order to prosecute the Affairs of the Day; bidding his Wife use her Friend well.

To be brief, I tarried with her best Part of the Afternoon, and really found by her Discourse, that she hardly remembered her Father or Mother, or where they lived, having been brought up by an Uncle and Aunt, in *Spittle-Fields*. Here she recounted to me the Manner of Life the good old People lived; and what sad Straits they were sometimes driven to, to provide Necessaries for so large a Family——That they were in such Necessity was more than ever I had heard before; and what gave me some Uneasiness, that I did not relieve the poor Man, and his large Family, sooner; especially as my own Children, in a great Measure, caused the Hardships of the rest.

Having

Having got all I could out of her, at that Time, I took my Leave, both of her and the Children, making Presents to the Servants; and invited her to my Lodgings in *Tower-Street*; but she very modestly excused herself from coming; saying, *I very rarely go out but on the First-Day, and then seldom but with my Husband, to the Meeting,*

Some Days after this I began to think of *Amy*, for I was like a forlorn Person without her, since the Death of my Husband; and particularly now I was come to *London*; where I had no manner of Acquaintance, no Companion, no Person to advise or consult with about my Affairs, or in what Part it would be best for me to reside in; and having heard nothing of her since I came from *Nimeguen* in *Holland*, where I left her Sick, made me imagine I had now lost poor *Amy* quite; for I believed she was dead. I therefore sent a Letter by the first Post, to the Person at whose House I left her to be taken Care of, to send me a punctual Account, with all Speed, how *Amy* did; and if she was living, to hasten her coming over.

As I could not expect to have an Answer to this Letter in less than a Fortnight, or three Weeks, I spent most of my Time at my Lodgings, consulting within myself, in what Manner to wear away the Remainder of my Days; whether I should set up any Equipage; or live in Town or Country. But before I came to any Resolution, I made my Daughter another Visit, and was received, both by her and her Husband, with the same good Humour and Manners as before. There being no Company, and finding myself secure, as to any Discovery of the Grand Affair, I began to be very free of Speech with her, asking what Relations she had Living?

She told me, she had one Brother, who was an *Italian* Merchant, who had lodged with her about three Years past; but that he was now on the Point of *Marrying*, and therefore had taken a large House in *Mark Lane*, and was fitting it up in a commodious Manner, against his Wedding.

I Then asked her, What sort of a Man he was, as to Temper; and whether she thought he would make a good Husband; what Fortune he had to begin the World with; what kind of Woman his intended Wife was; what Family she was of; and what Portion he was to have with her?

She

She answered, As to his Temper, she believed it was pretty well now he was grown up; but to speak the Truth, though he was her own Brother, he was not so good-humour'd when Young; for he was then Sullen, Obstinate, and very Unlucky. As to his making a good Husband, she thought that would be according to the Conduct and Behaviour of the Woman; for if she proved Good-natur'd, Careful, and Diligent in her Family, she might make her Life Happy; but if, on the Contrary, she should be Turbulent, Extravagant, and Careless of her Affairs at Home, she much feared he would resume his former Temper, and then she would be very Unhappy indeed, notwithstanding her Fortune, which was reputed to be Ten thousand Pounds.

That as to what Fortune he had to begin the World she could not say; but believed it was something Considerable; however, be it what it would, she was very sure he had vastly encreased it; for he had not only vast Success ever since he returned to *England*, and he was a very sober, careful and industrious Man; which last, *she said*, she partly attributed to his Age, before he launch'd into Business on his own Account; for he was near twenty Years Old before he went out Apprentice to the Merchant; and he served eight Years; by which Time, some of the Sallies of his Youth might be pretty well over; and he had certainly a far better Notion of the World, than if he had launched into it, at the usual Age, which is twenty-one.

I then asked her the Reason of his not going out sooner; intimating, that there was some Years lost——To this she did not readily Answer; but said, that he, with herself and another Sister, being left Fatherless and Motherless, this Uncle brought them up with his own Children, as well as he could, making very little if any Distinction between them; either in Education, Habit, or any Thing else; that consonant to this, he put her Brother out Apprentice about the Age of fourteen, which is the usual Age of binding Boys in the City of *London*, to a Neighbour of his, one Mr.—— a Draught-Weaver, in *Spittle Fields*; and though it was a very laborious Business, the good old Man gave twenty Pounds with him to his Master, with two new Suits of Cloaths, besides what wearing Apparel he had before. The Boy served this Master between two and three Years.

About this Time a fine Gentlewoman [*Amy*] who had formerly lived, as she herself confessed, with their Mother, and afterwards went to the *East-Indies*, where she marry'd and lived several Years; but becoming a Widow, and being immensely Rich, she came over again to live in her own Country; and to use my Daughter's own Expressions, *The Lord was pleased to put it into her Mind to come into Spittle-Fields, and enquire what was become of my Brother.*

After telling my Uncle and Aunt of her good Fortune, she said, she would do something for him, in Remembrance of his Mother, who had been a very good Mistress to her; and that she loved the Boy as well as if he had been her own Child: So she paid my Uncle the twenty Pounds back again, and gave him Money to take him from his Master, put him to School for about two Years more, where he was Taught Accounts, and other necessary Qualifications, proper for the Business; she cloathed him like a Gentleman, and then gave a large Sum of Money to an *Italian* Merchant, of great Reputation, to take him Apprentice. With this Master he served about four or five Years, to such Satisfaction, that then his Master sent him over Sea, to a Place called *Messina*, where he served the Residue of his Time.

His Master then appointed him his Agent at *Messina*; and he proved so faithful to his Trust, that some Time after, finding he had fixed himself in an *English* Family of Note there; His Master remitted a handsome Sum of Money to him (I suppose by Order of the aforesaid Gentlewoman) to begin trading with for himself. He continued there some Years, and having great Success, had the good Fortune to encrease his capital Stock to upwards of fourteen thousand Pounds. That he having acquir'd this Sum, he had resolved to come back to *London*, to settle himself (as he said) for Life; accordingly he arrived here, and had lodged with his Sister for about three Years; then his Master proposed one of his Nieces to him for a Wife, a very pretty well-bred Woman, and the Match was so far advanced, that his House was fitting up, as she supposed, for her Reception.

This Account my Daughter gave me of her Brother, I believe to be very Just; for the Description she gave of him when Young, answered exactly to what I could conceive of his Temper before I

sent him away with the other three, by *Amy*, to my Husband's Relations, as mentioned before.

But it was an inexpressible Satisfaction to me to hear he was so alt red for the better, and cannot but think her Notion very true, that his being so Old when I enabled him to launch first into the World on his own Account, was a very great if not the only Inducement thereto.

Just as I was going to ask another Question, I was alarmed by a furious knocking at the Door, as if by some particular Person of Authority; this, I must Confess, so much resembled what I had formerly been accustomed to at my own House in *Pall-Mall* (when *ROXANA* was the Toast of the Quality) that it somewhat surprised me; but my Daughter immediately gave me Ease, by saying, *Now, my Friend, Thou wilt have the Opportunity of seeing this Brother of mine, we have been talking about so long; I am sure 'tis his Rap; and I desire Thee to take particular Notice of him, and give me thy Sentiments of him next Time we meet.*

Scarce had she uttered these Words, but in comes a fine personable Man, dress'd very Genteel, but not Gaudy, who accosted my Daughter in a Gentleman-like Manner: *Dear Sister, I hope you are well, and all your Family.* He then paid his Respects to me, as a Stranger come to visit his Sister; but this he did in such a Polite and Complaisant Way, that plainly demonstrated a genteel Education and Behaviour.

Compliments and Ceremonies over we sat down, and my Daughter call'd for two Bottles of Wine, one of what she knew her Brother lov'd, the other for herself and me; over which we spent some Hours in delightful Conversation.

At last I pretended, that both by his Air and Speech I perceived he had been Abroad, asked him in what Parts, and how far he had travelled, and the like: He gave me such satisfactory Answers to all these Questions, that I was thoroughly satisfied my good Intentions for him had their desired Effect, and that he fully deserved all that I had done for him.

I then spoke to him in *French*, and found he understood it perfectly well: Then in *Italian*, *German*, and *Low Dutch*; in which Languages he was so good a Proficient, that let the greatest Mis-

for-

fortunes whatsoever befall him, I found him qualified for a *Master of Languages*; and by this Qualification only, many a Bankrupt Merchant lived very Happy, and maintained their Families in a decent pretty Manner, after Misfortunes by Losses at Sea, or by any other Means reduced.

After abundance of Discourse in foreign Languages (wherein his Sister had no share) he was pleased to tell me: That he had had both the Honour and Opportunity of conversing with many bright Ladies, both Abroad and at Home; but never met with any One so Perfect as myself; and therefore desired me to give him a Detail of my own Travels in foreign Parts which he was sure, he said must be very Entertaining and Delightful.

This I could by no means condescend to oblige him with, for several Reasons, and especially at this Time; I therefore excused myself, on pretence of the Time not permitting. He then mightily importuned for Leave to make me a Visit; this I agreed to; and accordingly told him where I lodged.

I thought this the sweetest and pleasantest Visit I had ever made in my Life; and I cannot express the secret Satisfaction of Mind I had in it; to be blessed with the Company of my own lawful Son and Daughter, (and two Grand-Children) who had been Absent from my Sight so many Years: But for all this, there was such a Sting in my Soul, that I dared not own them, and let them know who this Visitor of theirs was, that *maugre* Resolutions, it not only allay'd the Pleasure, but I could scarce forbear bursting out into Tears before them.

Night now drawing on, I desired my Daughter to let her Servant call a Coach, which being come I took my Leave; but my Son insisted on waiting on me Home, which I readily consented to, being extreme glad of his Company. We spent about an Hour in Conversation there, and then he took his Leave, promising to do himself the Honour of Visiting me again.

I stay'd at Home all next Day, ruminating the vast Difference there was between my first Husband; and this Son I had by him; the Father was a downright obstinate ignorant Fool, who was so void of Understanding that he could not even Read, much less Write good *English*; associated himself with none but Poltroons, Scoundrels, Footmen, Porters and the like: The Son a fine ready
Wi;

Wit, a profound Linguist, and conversed only with Gentlemen of Sense, who were at least his Equals, if not Superiors. 'Tis true, he so far resembled his Father, that he was a jolly handsome Man, as to his Person, tall, and well made, only more genteel: But he had none of his Father's Folly or Vices; for he was industrious, careful in Business, very saving, yet no Niggard, took his Pleasures and Diversions moderately, at proper Times, not to hinder Business. His Father soon spent a good Fortune: The Son, who had not above a fourth Part so much as he, to begin the World with, in a few Years gained a handsome Estate with a fair Character.

From this Time my Son made me frequent Visits, sometimes once, and sometimes twice in a Day; contracted so great an Intimacy with me, that he often consulted and took my Advice about Affairs of Importance; and particularly about making his House Commodious, and furnishing it; and he not being so near marrying as my Daughter imagined, would do nothing in Respect to that Grand Affair of Life, without first consulting me about it: Wherefore I wrote down my Advice about Marriage, and sent it to him, to peruse seriously at his leisure Hours; a Copy of which I here present my Readers, hoping it may be of Use to some of them.

ROXANA'S Advice to her Son about Marriage.

MARRIAGE is one Step more to make your Life comfortable, and to advance your Fortune still higher; and that is, well to dispose of yourself in it: It is certainly a Business which requires your grave and most serious Consideration.

Ride not Post for your Match; if you do, you may, in the Period of your Journey, take Sorrow for your Inn, and make Repentance your Host for Life.

When you Marry, be sure endeavour to espouse a Vertuous Person; for a celebrated Beauty, like a Fair, will draw Chapmen from all Parts.

Make choice of your Wife by the Ears, not the Eyes.

He that in the choice of a Wife, believeth the Report of his Sight, is like him who telling out the Portion in his Thoughts, takes the Woman upon Content, not examining her Condition, or whether she be fit for him.

I would not advise you to marry a Woman for Beauty; for Beauty is like Summer Fruits, which are apt to corrupt, and is not lasting.

Never marry so much for a great Living, as for a good Life; for a fair Wife without a Portion, is like a brave House without Furniture; you may please yourself with the Prospect, but there's nothing within to keep you Warm.

Those Weddings are the Happiest, where the Parties are first Matched before they Marry. If a Man Marries a Woman much Superior to himself, he is not so truly Husband to his Wife, as he is unawares made Slave to her Portion.

Be sure you love her Person better than her Estate; for he who Marrieth where he doth not Love, will be sure to Love where he doth not Marry; and Love without Ends, hath no End.

Love is the Child of Folly; it's the strongest of the Passions, and too often found in the weakest Minds.

Young Men are Amorous, middle Age Affectionate, but the Old Men are Doting.

There is a great Difference between a Portion and a Fortune with your Wife; if she be not Virtuous, let her Portion be never so great, she is no Fortune to you.

A Noble Roman being asked why he put away his Wife, she being Beautiful and Rich; put forth his Foot and shewed his Buskins, *Is not this,* said he, *a handsome compleat Shoe? Yet no Man but myself knows where it pinches me.*

It is not the lustre of Gold, the sparkling of Diamonds, and Emeralds, nor the Splendor of the Purple Tincture, that Adorns or Embellishes a Woman, but Gravity, Discretion, Humility, & Modesty.

A young Lacedemonian Lass being asked by an Acquaintance of hers, *Whether she had yet embraced her Husband?* made Answer, *No, but my Husband has embraced me.*

As there is little or no Use to be made of a Mirror, though in a Frame of Gold enchased with all the sparkling Variety of the richest Gems, unless it renders the true Similitude of the Image it receives. So there is nothing of profit in a great Portion, unless the Conditions, Temper and Humour of the Wife be conformable to the Disposition and Inclination of the Husband, and that he sees the Virtues of his own Mind exactly represented in hers.

Chuse

Wit, a profound Linguist, and conversed only with Gentlemen of Sense, who were at least his Equals, if not Superiors. 'Tis true, he so far resembled his Father, that he was a jolly handsome Man, as to his Person, tall, and well made, only more genteel: But he had none of his Father's Folly or Vices; for he was Industrious, careful in Business, very saving, yet no Niggard, took his Pleasures and Diversions moderately, at proper Times, not to hinder Business. His Father soon spent a good Fortune: The Son, who had not above a fourth Part so much as he, to begin the World with, in a few Years gained a handsome Estate with a fair Character.

From this Time my Son made me frequent Visits, sometimes once, and sometimes twice in a Day; contracted so great an Intimacy with me, that he often consulted and took my Advice about Affairs of Importance; and particularly about making his House Commodious, and furnishing it; and he not being so near marrying as my Daughter imagined, would do nothing in Respect to that Grand Affair of Life, without first consulting me about it: Wherefore I wrote down my Advice about Marriage, and sent it to him, to peruse seriously at his leisure Hours; a Copy of which I here present my Readers, hoping it may be of Use to some of them.

ROXANA'S Advice to her Son about Marriage.

MARRIAGE is one Step more to make your Life comfortable, and to advance your Fortune still higher; and that is, well to dispose of yourself in it: It is certainly a Business which requires your grave and most serious Consideration.

Ride not Post for your Match; if you do, you may, in the Period of your Journey, rake Sorrow for your Inn, and make Repentance your Host for Life.

When you Marry, be sure endeavour to espouse a Vertuous Person; for a celebrated Beauty, like a Fair, will draw Chapmen from all Parts.

Make choice of your Wife by the Ears, not the Eyes.

He that in the choice of a Wife, believeth the Report of his Sight, is like him who telling out the Portion in his Thoughts, takes the Woman upon Content, not examining her Condition, or whether she be fit for him.

I would not advise you to marry a Woman for Beauty; for Beauty is like Summer Fruits, which are apt to corrupt, and is not lasting.

Never marry so much for a great Living, as for a good Life; for a fair Wife without a Portion, is like a brave House without Furniture; you may please yourself with the Prospect, but there's nothing within to keep you Warm.

Those Weddings are the Happiest, where the Parties are first Matched before they Marry. If a Man Marries a Woman much Superior to himself, he is not so truly Husband to his Wife, as he is unawares made Slave to her Portion.

Be sure you love her Person better than her Estate; for he who Marrieth where he doth not Love, will be sure to Love where he doth not Marry; and Love without Ends, hath no End.

Love is the Child of Folly; it's the strongest of the Passions, and too often found in the weakest Minds.

Young Men are Amorous, middle Age Affectionate, but the Old Men are Doting.

There is a great Difference between a Portion and a Fortune with your Wife; if she be not Virtuous, let her Portion be never so great, she is no Fortune to you.

A Noble Roman being asked why he put away his Wife, she being Beautiful and Rich; put forth his Foot and shewed his Buskins, *Is not this,* said he, *a handsome compleat Shoe? Yet no Man but myself knows where it pinches me.*

It is not the lustre of Gold, the sparkling of Diamonds, and Emeralds, nor the Splendor of the Purple Tincture, that Adorns or Embellishes a Woman, but Gravity, Discretion, Humility, & Modesty.

A young Lacedemonian Lass being asked by an Acquaintance of hers, *Whether she had yet embraced her Husband?* made Answer, *No, but my Husband has embraced me.*

As there is little or no Use to be made of a Mirror, though in a Frame of Gold encased with all the sparkling Variety of the richest Gems, unless it renders the true Similitude of the Image it receives. So there is nothing of profit in a great Portion, unless the Conditions, Temper and Humour of the Wife be conformable to the Disposition and Inclination of the Husband, and that he sees the Virtues of his own Mind exactly represented in hers.

Chuse

Chuse a Wife as may Sympathize with you in your Misfortunes, for Marriage is just like a Sea Voyage, he that enters into this Ship, must look to meet with Storms and Tempests.

I knew a Gentlewoman, a very Fantastical and Conceited Person, and one who was not overkind to her Husband; she had a Daughter of the same Tone and Temper with herself, to whom her Father had left a very considerable Portion; I commended a very worthy and sober Person to the Mother, to be a Husband for the Daughter, but she did not like the Gentleman; some time after there came a Vain Under-headed Fellow, a Suitor to the Daughter; the Mother entertained him with all Kindness; one Day the Mother came to give me a Visit, and with great pleasure told me, such a Person was a Suitor to her Daughter, a brave Gentleman of excellent Parts, and one that is the Cream of the Country, and asked me how I liked him; Truly Madam, I answered, *if he be the Cream of the Country, as you say he is, he is the fitter for your Daughter to make a Fool of;* The Gentlewoman replied, *And so she shall if please God it be a Match;* And she was as good as her Word.

When I read that ingenious Epigram of *Ausonius* of the Ecco, it doth methinks Graphically represent a Talkative and Prating Woman;

Phidias made the Statue of *Venus* at *Elis*, with one Foot upon the Shell of a Tortoise, to signify Two great Duties of a Virtuous Woman, which are to keep at home and be silent.

The *Egyptian* Women anciently did never wear Shoes, to the end they should accustom themselves to stay at Home.

Tales being asked by his Mother why he did not Marry; said, it was too soon; some time after being solicited again to Marry, said, It was too late.

As you are able to live of yourself, are out of Debt, and design to Marry, have a Care you make not too great a Jointure out of your Lands; if you should, it may be more Fatal and Calamitous to you and your Family, than any Debt.

Provide for your Relict a competent Estate; but not so as to impoverish your Children; for that would be to destroy a quick Hedge to make a dead one.

If you have Children, it is better to leave them a competent Estate with a Profession, than great Riches without it; for in the one

one there is place for Industry, but the other like a Lure, will bring all Birds of Prey to devour them.

He that breeds his Children well, though he leaves them little, he gives them much.

Have a regard to a good Bishop to satisfy your Conscience; for an honest Lawyer to settle your Estate; and Marry into a good Family to keep up your Interest.

Where Man and Wife are Unisons in Affection, there is the best Musick; there was such an Harmony in Affection between *Ulysses* and *Penelope*, that rather than forsake his dear *Penelope*, he refused Immortality at *Calisto's* Hands.

Rubius Colen commanded to be engraven on his Monument that he lived with *Caja Ennia* his Wife, Forty Three Years, Eight Months, and that *Sine querela*, without any Difference, Complaint or Jar.

The Ancients placed the Statue of *Venus* by that of *Mercury*, to signify that the Pleasures of Matrimony chiefly consist in the sweetness of Conversation.

They who sacrificed to *Juno* as the Goddess of Wedlock, never consecrated the Gail with the other parts of the Sacrifice, but having drawn it forth, they cast it behind the Altar, thereby implying, that all passionate Anger and Bitterness of Reproach, should be terminated from the Thresholds of Nuptial Cohabitation.

King *Philip* of *Macedon* pulled and hawled a Woman to him by Violence against her Will: *Let me go*, said she, *for when the Candles are out, all Women are alike*: A Virtuous Woman, when the Candle is taken away and her Body not to be seen, her Chastity, her Modesty, and her peculiar Affection to her Husband, ought then to shine with the greatest Lustre.

If you will be happy, never have above one Woman in your Bed, one Friend in your Bosom, and one Faith in your Heart.

Methinks the Zeal of that Priest did trespass upon his Discretion, when in a Wedding Sermon he much commended Marriage, but compared the Woman to a Grave; *For as every Grave* (saith he) *hath a Hic jacet, so when you come to Marry; Hic jacit the Wisdom of Solomon; Hic jacet the Valour of David; Hic jacit the Strength of Sampson: Here they are all Buried,*

The Poets have unhappily represented all the Furies, under the Notion

Nation of Women; and expressly ordered, that *Erinnis* should be

One Day a Gentlewoman meeting an Old Friend of hers, asked him if he was marry'd; he answered *No*. You look very well, said the Gentlewoman to him again, *I am apt to think, Sir, you make use of Vipers*. *No Madam*, answered he, *the Reason I look so well is, because I have nothing to do with Vipers*. Thereby insinuating, a turbulent Wife is as ill a Companion as a Viper.

The ill Temper of many Women, made *Diogenes* one Time say, when he saw a Woman had hanged herself on a Tree, *That it was the best bearing Tree that ever he saw in his Life*.

But I hope you have no Kindness for those morose Cynicks, who sully the Glory of the riches Jewels in the Cabinet of Nature.

For a generous and brave Woman, is the Exchequer and Treasury of Virtue.

While I was sending this away to my Son, I received a small Packet of Letters from *Holland*, which brought me the welcome News of the remaining Effects I had left there, under *Amy's* Care, being safely shipped on Board a Ship called the *Three Sisters*, Captain *Matthews* Master, and that I might expect Her up the River in a few Days, Among the rest there was one from the Person at whose House I had left poor *Amy* Sick. This Letter gave me a particular Account of her Sickness, what a deplorable Condition she had lain in for some Time, that at last she was on the mending Hand, was got so well as to walk about, and walk in the Garden; and there were then great hopes of her Recovery. She then made her Will, leaving all she had (upwards of a thousand Pounds) to her Daughter, who lived in or about *London*, with a Letter of Exhortation and Instructions to her. This being done, she spent most of her Time in Writing something, which contained several Sheets of Paper, and was many Days about, this she carefully sealed up, and left with another Person, to be sent to *England* at a particular Time; but to who, or what Part they could not tell. But at the Sight of my last Letter she swooned away, fell into Convulsion Fits, and it was several Hours before she could be brought to herself. That she never rose out of her Bed afterwards; but laid my Letter under her Pillow, and at those intervals of Time she was

sensible, would be reading it. That at last she went raving Mad; continually calling on her dear Lady, and the like. She continued in this miserable Condition about three Weeks, and then died in the greatest Agonies imaginable.

This was the End of poor *Amy*, who had been a faithful Servant, trusty Friend, good Companion and Counsellor to me, for about forty Years, as ever any Creature was, or can be, both in the greatest Adversity, as well as the highest Station of my Life: Her Death grieved me not a little; but as yet I was entirely Ignorant of what, in all Probability occasioned it. I put myself in Mourning, as a Token of the Love I had for *Amy*, and wore it six Months.

Amy being gone, I made my Son my Counsellor and Confident in her stead; that is to say, with respect to where I should settle myself for the short Time I had to remain in this transitory World; telling him, I resolved to live Private, some little Way out of Town.

In a short Time he found out a pretty commodious House in the Parish of *Hornsey*, situate on the Banks of a little Rivulet, and but a small Distance off the Wood.

I liked this Cottage, with its Conveniencies, so well, that I resolved to take it; but on Enquiry, we found the Owner of it to be a poor Man, unable to prosecute his Intentions in the building of it; so to prevent being fatigued with Landlords, I purchased it outright, and so had it finish'd and put in Order according to my own Desire.

I then furnished it with entire New Furniture; after the Manner of my Daughter's House; very Good, but Plain; this I did for two Reasons; *First*, Because it was suitable to my Years, and the Retirement I propos'd. *Second*, That it would be more acceptable to my Daughter, and her Family, to whom I resolv'd to give it at my Decease, for their Country-House. All things being ready for my Reception, I entered accordingly; attended only by two Servant Maids, one Man, and a Boy to send on Errands; all of my Son's procuring for me.

Being settled in this little Cottage, without the least Apprehension of being discovered, I mean, as to my former Life and Conversation; I spent my Days in sweet Retirement, free from Noise or Bustle, often reflecting on my past dissolute Life, and the Vanities of the World; I now found more solid Enjoyment in this rural

Cottage (as I may call it) than in all the Splendor of a Court, or the pompous Equipages of Quality. I now lived Regular, without being disturb'd, or fatigu'd with Visitors, impertinent Letters or Messages. I had a Neat little Appartment built in my Garden, where I fixed my late Husband's Books, which with some Addition, made a compleat little Library, where, and in a natural *Grotto*—I had in the middle of my Garden, I spent good part of my Time, in Reading, Contemplation and Writing; and that my Readers may judge, in some sort, of my present Happiness, I here present them with some of my Lucubrations, *viz.*

ROXANA in Retirement.

WHEN I retire into my little Cave, or *Grotto* in my Garden, near the Chrystal Stream, there I find Happiness and Content: Here I observe the Lady *Flora* to cloath our Grandam Earth with a new Livery, diaper'd with pleasant Flowers, and chequer'd with delightful Objects; there the pretty Songsters of the Spring, with their various Musick, seem to welcome me as I pass along; the Earth putteth forth her Prim-roses and pretty Dayes to behold me; the Air blows with gentle *Zephyres* to refresh me; here I find such Pleasure, with a *Gusto relevante*, that I could bid adieu to *Alcinous*, *Adonis*, and *Lucullus's* Gardens, and would not envy the *Thessalians* for their *Tempe*. If I were *Epicurus* (the Master of Pleasures) I should wish to be all Nose to smell, or else all Eyes to delight my Sight.

Here is no slavish Attendance no Canvassing for Places, no making of Parties, no Envy of any Man's Favour or Fortune, no Disappointments in my Pretensions to any Thing, but a calm Enjoyment of the Bounties of Providence; here I can enjoy myself in the greatest Tranquility and Repose, without Fear, Envy, or desiring any Thing.

If I lie under the Protection of Heaven, a poor Cottage for Retreat is more worth than the most magnificent Palace: Here I can enjoy the Riches of Content in the midst of an honest Poverty; here undisturbed Sleeps and undissembled Joys do dwell; here I spend my Days without Cares, and my Nights without Groans; Innocency is my Security and Protection.

Here

Here are no Beds of State, no Garments of Pearl or Embroidery, no Materials for Luxury and Excess; the Heavens are my Canopy, and the Glories of them my Spectacle; the Motion of the Orbs, the Courses of the Stars, and the wonderful Order of Providence are my Contemplation.

My Grotto is Safe, though Narrow; no Porter at the Door, nor any Business for Fortune; for she hath nothing to do, where she hath nothing to look after.

Here I am delivered from the Tumults of the World, free from the Drudgery of Business, which makes us troublesome to others, and uneasy to ourselves; for the end of one Appetite or Design, is the beginning of another.

I say with *Epicurus*, to live closely is beyond a Diadem; and I must say with *Crates*, That Men know not how much a Waller, a Measure of *Lupines*, and Security of Mind is Worth.

This is the Way to Heaven which Nature hath chalked out, and it is both Secure and Pleasant; there needs no Train of Servants, no Pomp or Equipage to make good our Passage, no Money or Letters of Credit for expences on the Voyage; but the Graces of an honest Mind will secure us upon the Way, and make us Happy at our Journeys end.

Similis, Captain of the Guard to *Adrian* the Emperor, having passed a most toilsome Life, retired himself, and lived privately in the Country for seven Years, acknowledging that he had lived only seven Years, and caused on his Monument to be engraven,

Hic jacit Similis, cujus Aetas multorum Annorum fuit, ipso Septem dunc aetat Annos vixit.

You perhaps have more Friends at Court than I have, a larger Train, a fairer Estate, and more illustrious Title; but what do I care to be outdone by any, in some Cases, so long as Fortune is overcome by me in all.

Zeno hearing *Theophrastus* commended above any of the Philosophers for his Number of Scholars, *It is true*, said *Zeno*, *his Quire is larger than mine, but mine hath the sweetest Voices*; so others may have more Lordships, and ample Possessions, and larger Territories; but I have now the sweetest Life, because more retired.

Nothing

Nothing comes amiss to me, but all Things succeed to my very Wish: There is here no wrangling with Fortune, no being out of Humour for Accidents; whatsoever befalls me, it is God's Pleasure, and it is my Duty to bear it. In this State I feel no want; I am abundantly pleased with what I have, and what I have not, I do not regard; so that every thing is Great because it is Sufficient.

O the Blessings of Privacy and Freedom! The Wish of the Greatest, but the Privilege only of the Mean ones. It was *Augustus's* Prayer, *That he might live to Retire, and deliver himself from publick Business.*

They that live close, live quiet; they fear no body of whom no body is afraid; they that stand below upon the firm Ground, need not fear falling lower.

What is all the Glory and Grandeur of the World, or the great Territories in it, to that Happiness I do now possess and enjoy? The whole Compass of the Earth to me seems but a Point, and yet Men will be dividing it into Kingdoms and Dominions.

King *Philip* receiving a Fall in a Place of Wrestling, when he turned himself in rising, and saw the Print of his Body in the Dust, *Good God,* said he, *What small Portion of Earth hath Nature assigned us, and yet we covet the whole World?*

Some are so Covetous, that the Riches of *Potosi* will not content them; whereas in a Retired Life there is not occasion for much Money, except to look on it, and tell it over.

I am here at no Man's Command, but am a Servant to Reason; yet I enjoy that Privilege which *Diogenes* bragged of, when he said, *Aristotle Dines when it seems good to King Philip, but Diogenes when himself pleases.*

It is stark Madness in a Man to think he shall be Safe and Quiet when he is Great.

Many Liberties may be taken in a private Condition, that are dangerous in a publick One.

I can walk alone where I please, without a Guard, without any Fear, or without Company; I can go and come, Eat and Drink, without being taken Notice of.

The higher we are raised, the more eminent are our Errors and Infirmities; there is not a Day, nor an Hour, that we can call our own; How can we expect Peace and Repose in a Station, when all
that

that ever went before us, have encountred Hazards and Troubles, if not Death itself? Consider when you are exalted in the Orb of Glory, that every Man that admires and flatters you, envies you too in his Heart.

It is common to Men of the greatest Eminency, that they perish by the Hands and Harms of those they least feared.

What with our open and secret Enemies, we are never secure; we are betrayed by our Friends, our Servants, nay, even our very Relations; but these are the Infelicities and Miseries of Courts, not of Cottages: Servitude is the Fate of Palaces; he that is Master of many, is the Servant yet of more.

Innocency hath no Residence at Court, where Ambition always Wars against eminent Virtues.

Let any one but observe the Tumults and the Crowds that attend Palaces, what Affronts must we endure to be admitted, and how much greater when we are in. The Way to Happiness and Tranquility is fair, but the Passage to Greatness is craggy, and stands not only upon a Precipice, but upon Ice too; and though we ourselves should be at Rest, our Fortune will not suffer us.

What are Crowns and Scepters but Golden Fetters and Splendid Miseries, which if Men did but truly understand, there would be more Kingdoms than Kings to govern them; look not upon the Splendor of the Crown, but upon the Tempest of Cares that accompany it: Fix not your Eyes upon the Purple, but upon the Mind of the King, more sad and dark than the Purple itself; the Diadem doth not more compass his Head, than Cares and Suspensions his Soul; look not at the Squadrons of his Guards, but at the Armies of his Molestations which attend him.

A great Fortune is a great Slavery, and Thrones are but uneasy Seats.

Those Grandees upon whom the admiring Multitude gazes, as upon refulgent Comets, and Prodiges of Glory and Honour, of all Men most Unhappy; look into their Breasts, then you shall see the Swarms of Cares and Anxieties which incessantly corrode their very Hearts.

Consider the brave Men of the World, who for their Merit have been advanced to the highest Elevation of Glory, have, for their Virtues, been ruined; some have been proscribed, because their De-

eris were above Requital; and others, not because they had done any Harm; but for fear they might do some, by reason of their Greatness.

Rutilius and *Camillus* were rewarded with Banishment, to whom Rome owed not a little of her Greatness and Renown. The *Athenians* cashiered not only their *Miltiades* and *Themistocles*, who had often preserved their Lives and Fortunes; but also their *Phocion* and *Aristides*; which are not so much the Names of Men, as of Virtue and Goodness.

The *Venetians* clapt up in Prison the brave *Pedro Lore-Dano*, a Senator of *Venice*, because he had so much Authority as to becalm a Tempest by Land; I mean a great Commotion and Tumult raised by the Seamen, which threatened much Danger to the City, and this *Par Region' di Stato*.

Every thing that is Virtuous and Good, does not always Triumph. Things of this World have their Seasons, and that which is most Eminent, is obnoxious to the ill Arts of others.

Ever think it is the best Living in the temperate Zone; between *Nec Splendide, nec Misere*.

If Heaven shall vouchsafe me this Blessing, that I may enjoy my Grotto with Content, I can look upon all the great Kingdoms of the Earth as so many little Birds-Nests. And I can in such a Territory prime myself as the great *Alexander* did, when he fancied the whole World to be one great City, and his Camp the Castle of it.

If I were advanced to the Zenith of Honour, I am at the best but as a Porter, constellated to carry up and down the World a vile Cartage; I confess my Mind, the nobler Part of me, now and then takes a Walk in the large Campaign of Heaven, and there I contemplate the Universe, the Mysterious Concatenation of Causes, and the stupendious Efforts of the Almighty, in consideration whereof I can cheerfully bid adieu to the World.

You will find by Experience (which is the best Looking Glass of Wisdom) that a private Life is not only more Pleasant, but more Happy than any Princely State.

I can easily believe that *Dioclesian*, after his Retreat from the Empire, took more Content and Pleasure in exercising the Trade of a Gardener in *Salona*, than in being Emperor of *Rome*; for when *Maximianus Hercules* writ to him to resume the Empire (which he had

had with much Felicity governed for twenty Years) he returned this Answer, *That if he would come unto Salona, and observe the rare Productions of Nature, and see how the Coleworts, which he had planted with his own Hands, did thrive and prosper, he would never trouble his Head with Crowns, nor his Hands with Scepters.*

And sometimes I think, that *Dionysius* took as great Pleasure in commanding his Scholars in *Corinth*, as in reigning over *Syracuse*.

This made *Scipio*, after he had raised *Rome* to be the Metropolis of almost the whole World, by a Voluntary Exile, to retire himself from it, and at a private House in the middle of a Wood, near *Linternum*, to pass the remainder of his glorious Life, no less gloriously.

The tallest Trees are weakest in the Tops, and Envy always aimeth at the Highest.

Those who have been bad, their own Infelicity peccipitates their Fate; if good, their Merits have been their Ruin.

If they have been Fortunate Abroad, they have been undone at Home by Fears and Jealousies.

If Unsuccessful, the Capricio's of Fortune are counted their Mis-carriages, and their Unhappineffes esteemed for Crimes.

Howsoever a virtuous honest Man, though his Bark be split, yet he saves his Cargo; and hath something left to set him up again.

There is no Safety, no Security, no Comfort, no Content in Greatness. This made a great Man say, *Requiem quaesni & non inveni, nisi in Angelo cum Libello; I have sought for Rest and Quiet, but could not find it but in a little Corner with a Book.*

Vive tibe, & longe nomine magna fuge.

O the Sweetness and Pleasure of those blessed Hours that I spend apart from the Noise and Business of the World! How calm, how gentle, not so much as a Cloud or Breath of Wind to disturb the Serenity of my Mind. The World to me is now a Prison, and sweet Solitude a Paradise.

If you think it pleasant from Land, to behold Marriners striving with Storms; or without endangering yourself, Armies joining Battle; certainly nothing can be more delightful, than from the calm Throne of Wisdom, to view the Tumults and Contentions of Fools;

not

not that it is pleasant that other are afflicted, but it pleaseth that we ourselves are not involved in the same Evils.

All the Exterior Lustre of the World, which charms the Eyes of Men, is but a painted Cloud, a Dial which we then look on, when the Sun of Honour reflects upon it; or like an Act in a Comedy, which presently hath its *Exit*.

Long Life and a peaceful Death, are not always held by Character of Honour, except Virtue and Integrity renew the Patent. Flattery and Envy, two ancient Courtiers, lay secret Trains to blow up the greatest Structure of Fortune.

Give me a retired Life, a peaceful Conscience, honest Thoughts, and virtuous Actions, and I can now pity *Cesar*.

During my Hours of Felicity in this *Grotto*, or Place of sweet Retirement, I read divers Authors on various Subjects; and at some other Times diverted myself with travelling o're the Universe in an easy and unexpensive Manner; to wit, by the Globe and Maps; and can truly join with the Poet in the following Lines, *viz.*

Thus would I range the World from Pole to Pole;
To encrease my Knowledge, and delight my Soul:
Travel all Nations, and inform my Sense;
With Ease and Safety at a small Expence.
No Storins to Plough, no Passage Sums to pay;
No Horse to hire, nor Guide to show the Way;
No Alps to climb, no Desarts here to pass;
No Ambuscades, nor Thieves to give me Chase:
No Bears to dread, no ravenous Wolves to fight,
No Flies to sting, no Rattle-Snakes to bite;
No Floods to wade, no Hurricanes to fear;
No dreadful Thunder to surprize mine Ear:
No Wind to freeze, no Sun to scorch or fry;
No Thirst or Hunger, and Relief not nigh:
All these Fatigues, and Mischiefs could I shun;
Rest when I pleas'd, and when I pleas'd jog on;
And Travel thro' both *Indies* in an Afternoon.

My Son generally visited me twice or three times a Week; he was

was so well pleas'd with my little Cottage and Way of Living, that he sometimes wish'd himself free from the Cares of the World, to come and spend his Time with me in sweet Retirement. I being desirous to enjoy as much as possible of his Company, caus'd an Apartment to be commodiously fitted up for his Reception, which I furnish'd in a handsome Manner, with Goods of the Newest Fashion: I likewise plac'd a small Side-board of Plate in his Anti-Chamber; all which things I made him a Present of.

My Daughter and her Husband likewise made me several Visits, which were very acceptable to me; their Apartment I furnish'd like the other Part of the House, Plain and Neat, with which they were exceedingly pleas'd.

I now reflect'd more than ever on the Hardship I had suffer'd, not daring to own myself to my Children, notwithstanding the Intimacy that had been between us for some Time past; and that all I had done for them, both in respect of their Education, and Settlement in the World, had pass'd as if it were the Bounty only of *Amy* herself, who own'd the only Inducement was her having been a Servant to their Mother; whereas in Truth, though *Amy* was a good-natur'd Creature enough, she was so far from doing any thing for them of her own Thought, that she never so much as once mention'd them to me, or propos'd my taking any Notice at all of them.

And it was certainly a Matter of no small Concern to them, to esteem themselves beholden to their Mother's Servant for the Comforts they now enjoy'd, and the happy Situation they are fix'd in. — I say, these Reflections were now the only Stings that gall'd my sweet Repose. — I therefore began to consider, there was now no Obstacle remaining that need in the least hinder me making myself known to them; I had no Relations living who knew me; neither was I under any Apprehension at all that my having lived in *Pall-Mall* could ever be discover'd, I having been gone from thence so many Years, and most if not all my Visitors either dead, or dispers'd in different Parts of the Kingdom, after the Demise of the King, I could not but conclude myself quite forgot: Besides, as I fully resolv'd never to be seen again in that Quarter, and settled in so remote a Place, where none of those Gentry ever came, I was entirely easy in that Affair.

Having maturely considered these things, I resolved upon a Discovery; but how, and in what manner to effect it I could not as yet determine; for I was to consider what Reasons to give them for concealing myself so long; and what Part of the World I had hid myself from their Knowledge; and how I came by my Riches, after that excessive Poverty which occasioned my sending them to their Father's Relations for a Maintenance. To answer these necessary Questions, and without Hesitation, required my chiefest Thoughts to consider; lest by endeavouring to add to my Childrens Happiness I should introduce Disatisfaction, and such Discord between us as might end in redenting they had known me; if not some worse Disaster.

My Son often came to me, and sometimes tarried all Night; and one Evening after Supper, he took occasion to return me Thanks for sending him my Thoughts on Marriage; which (he said) he had carefully perused, and maturely considered: He owned them to be just, and agreeable to his own Sentiments, of that State of Happiness or Misery in this Life; and to convince me they were so, he promised strictly to adhere to them. — He then requested me, to oblige him with some Rules for his better Instruction in the Management of himself and Business. This I promised to do, and he not coming again for several Days, I sent him the following Lines in a Letter.

ROXANA's Instructions to her Son.

IT will be great Prudence in you, well to study the art of Complaisance, certainly an Art of excellent use in the conduct of Affairs.

For there are so many Circumstances in the way to an Estate or Greatness, that a Morose or Peremptory Man rarely attains either. Never violently oppose yourself against the Torrent of the Times you live in, thereby to hazard your Fame or Fortune; but by fair Complaisance attain your Safety.

Plato compares a Wise Man to a good Gamester, which doth accommodate his Play to the Chance of the Die.

So should a Wise Man accommodate the course of his Life, to the occasions which do often require new Deliberations.

Mahomet

Mahomet made the People believe that he would call a Hill to him, and from the top of it offer up his Prayers for the Observers of his Law; the People assembled, *Mahomet* call'd the Hill over and over to come to him; and the Hill not moving, he was not at all out of Countenance at it, but put it off with a jest, *If the Hill will not come to Mahomet, says he, Mahomet will go to the Hill.*

You must imitate *M. Portius Cato*, who was of such a Temper, that he would humour all Occasions, and was never out of his way.

Knowledge itself ought to be according to the Mode, and it's no small piece of Wit, to counterfeit the ignorant; the relish of things changes according to the times.

Let a prudent Man accommodate himself to the present, though the past may seem better unto him.

When any thing is requested of you, which you are not willing to grant, deny it not point Blank, but make your Denial to be taken down by Sips; leave always a Remnant of Hope to sweeten the bitterness of the Denial: Let Courtesie fill up the vacuity of Favour, and good words supply the defect of good Deeds: Hold Men in hopes, when you cannot give them satisfaction.

A Complaisant Humour, assisted with the practical Knowledge of Men and things, gains and ravishes the Hearts of People; it's a thing of good consequence, for a Man to make the best of his own Talent.

The Air of the Countenance hath certain Charms which have a great influence on the Minds of Men.

Marshal de Rhetz did deserve the highest Encomium for his Complaisancy; the access to his Person was ever easie, his Humour not Morose, his Countenance Serene, and when necessity and private Reasons obliged him not to grant a Petition, it was in terms that sweetned the discontent of the Unsuccessful.

Truth hath Force; Reason, Authority; and Justice, Power; but they are without Lustre, if the graceful way and manner of doing be wanting; the pleasant way of doing makes the man of Fashion.

A Wise Pilot always turns his Sails according to the Wind.

It will be prudence in you to ascribe your most eminent Performances to Providence; for it will take off the Edge of Envy; and none are less maliced, or more applauded than they who are thought rather happy than able, and Fortunate than Cunning.

When

When you come into company, or to act, lay aside all sharp and morose Humours, and be pleasant; which will make you acceptable, and the better effect your Ends.

Xenocrates, who was of a very severe and rigid Disposition, would be very pleasant in his Discourse; at which the Disciples of *Plato* much wondering, said *Plato*, *Do you wonder that Roses and Lillies grow amongst Thorns.*

I must confess, I am now by the malignity of my Stars, grown somewhat morose. I cannot subject myself to the Humour of other People; I cannot, with *Anaxagoras*, maintain Snow to be black; nor with *Lavorinus*, a Quartan Ague to be a very good thing; but must appear without any Disguise, and declare my Judgment according to my own Sentiments.

I cannot mould myself *Platonically* to the Worlds Idea: I had rather lose my head, than stoop to any low and unbecoming Action: In my solitudes I can bless myself, when I contemplate the felicity that my ashes will meet with in the Urn.

Now in order to proceed in the Grand Affair I was speaking of, I concluded to begin with my Daughter, and found her thoroughly, with respect to her Mother, what became of her, where she died, or if living, whether she should not desire to see her; and likewise I proposed to make use of her to sound her Brother's Sentiments, and to act in it according as I found their Inclinations.

Therefore, that I might the better carry on my Scheme, and enjoy her Company oftner, I resolved once more to set up an Equipage; but far Different from what I formerly used to have; that is to say, what I now did was not for any Grandeur or Affectation, but only for necessary Use. I therefore ordered a Coach to be made, lined with light colour'd Cloth, which the Maker called *Quakers-colour*, without any Lace at all: It was painted Black on the Outside, without any Gilding, or Coat of Arms, as I used to have before; except to that one I had made when I lodged with my honest Friend the *Quaker* (as aforesaid.) I ordered my Son to buy me only one Pair of Horses; they being sufficient for the Work I designed. The Man and Boy I had hired before, were Attendants enough for me; I therefore cloathed them in new plain dark-colour'd-Cloth, and Accoutrements suitable.

The

The setting up this small Equipage was more fatiguing to me than any of my great ones had been; for when I purchased this little House, I had no thought at all of keeping a Coach; so that, having made no Provision for it, I was now obliged to have a Coach-House and Stables built on Purpose: The Noise of the Workmen, and the Offensiveness of the Lime, &c. which I was never troubled with before, so disturbed me in this lonesome Place, that I was as it were obliged spend most of my Time in my Study in the Garden, leaving the Management of the Building to the Care and Direction of my Son (who not only willingly undertook it at my Request, but was very Diligent in it.) Wherefore, to oblige him, in some Measure, for his Trouble, and extraordinary Pains, I proceeded (according to his Request) in penning down such Rules as I thought proper for the future Conduct of his Affairs, for though I was fully satisfied he did not absolutely stand in need of them, as his Management hitherto plainly demonstrated; yet I was determin'd to oblige him all things he should desire of me; and the rather during this Time of Vacancy; I being resolved to prosecute my Intentions of making myself known to him and his Sister, as soon as all things were ready to my Mind; which Affair, I concluded would then sufficiently both employ my Time and Thoughts. The first Letter I now wrote to him was this.

R O X A N A's *Instructions to her Son, on Business.*

IN Business be Active and Industrious; for many Men of large Abilities, relying wholly upon their Wit, and neglecting the Use of ordinary Means, suffer others Able, but more Active and Industrious, to go beyond them.

Diligence alone is a fair Fortune, and Industry a fair Estate: Idleness doth waste a Man as insensible as Industry doth improve him; a Man may be a younger Brother for his Fortune, but his Industry will certainly make him an Heir.

Æsop's Fisherman could catch no Fish by his playing upon the Flute; but was necessitated, to preserve his Being, to cast his Nets and Tackling into the River.

And we may observe, that in Heaven the moving Planets are of much greater Consideration than those that are fixed.

I very much discommend the Humour of the *Neapolitan* Gentry, who stand so much on the Puncto's of their Honour, that they prefer Robbery before Industry.

Action is Noble; and not only the Celestial Bodies are in continual Motion, but he that is most high, is *purissimus actus*; for besides his Contemplation of his own Goodness he is ever at Work in Acts of Providence and Government of his Creatures.

There is not any thing in the Universe stands still, although the Earth moves not Spherically (as *Copernicus* fancied) yet there is a continual Motion in that too, in her Productions, the idle Man is only a *Manus inoperosa*.

I would not have you like the Lillies of the Field, *Quae nequa laborant, Inaquaerunt*.

I am very much pleased with his Device, who placed for his Emphasis a pair of Compasses with this Motto, *Constantia & Labor*, the one Foot being fixed, the other in Motion.

Before you act, it is Prudence soberly to consider; for after Action you cannot recede without Dishonour; take the Advice of some prudent Friend, for he who will be his own Counsellor, will be sure to have a Fool for his Client.

And that you may Act with Glory, I heartily wish you the Four great Virtues which make a Man Complete. *First*, A clear Innocence. *Second*, A comprehensive Knowledge. *Third*, A well weighed Experience. *And, Fourth*, The Product of all those, a steady Resolution.

Resolutions are the Moulds wherein Actions are cast; but if they be taken with over-much Haste, or too much Affection, they often miscarry.

A sanguine Complexion with its Resolutions, do well in pursuit of Success; Flegm and its Patience, do best in a Retreat from Miscarriages.

In the Conduct of Affairs, you may shew a brave Spirit in going on; but your Wisdom will most appear in securing your Retreat, and how to come off; for there is such incertainty in all Human Affairs, that that Course seemeth best to me, which hath most Passages out of it.

Therefore it was well observed by one, that the *Turks* being to make an Expedition into *Persia*, and because of the straight Jaws of the

the Mountains of *Armenia*; the Basha's consulted which Way they should get in; one who heard the Debate, said, *Here is much ado how we shall get in, but nobody takes care how we shall get out.*

However, let me advise you to make the publick Good, as well as your own private Advantage, the Object of all your Undertakings; for by providing for your own Particular, you may wrong the Publick; but by effecting good for the Publick, you must do good for yourself.

If Success of Business doth not at first answer your Expectation, let no Fumes of Melancholy possess you; use other Expedients and Addresses; for he that constantly makes Head against the Assaults of Fortune, shall be sure to be Victorious, and attain his Ends. You must not give up the Game, because the Cards prove cross.

Every thing hath two Handles; if one prove hot, and not to be touched, you may take the other that is more temperate.

Howsoever, in doing Business, apply your Thoughts and Mind seriously to his; but be not too eager, nor passionately engage in it; nor promise yourself Success; by this means you will have your Understanding clear, and not be disturbed if you miscarry, which you must make account will often happen to you.

When a Business may turn to Disadvantage, it will be your Wisdom to temporise and delay, and get what Time you can by deferring; because Time may occasion some Accident which may remove the Danger.

But if it be for your Advantage, Delays are Dangerous, and you must act with Secrecy and Celerity, which are the two Wheels upon which all great Actions move.

The noblest Designs are like a Mine; if discovered they are lost. And to spend that Time at gaze upon Business, which might serve for a speedy Dispatch of it, would be to imitate that Musician who spent so much Time in the tuning his Instrument, that he had none left to exercise his Musick.

If the Matter you undertake be doubtful, when you have done your Best, you perhaps cannot yet warrant the Success. Remember the *Italian* makes it part of the Character of an *English* Man, when he is to undertake any thing, presently he saith, *I will warrant you*; but when he misseth of his Undertaking, he saith, *Who would have thought it?*

However,

However, use Circumspection in all your Actions; for he who intendeth what he doth, is most likely to do what he intends; it is the only Ruin of Fools that they do not consider what they are about; half doing any thing is worse than no doing; and a middle Course, in Cases of Extremity, of all is the worst.

As there is no Business so secure but may have some flaws in it; so there is scarcely any so desperate, but hath some Opportunity of Recovery.

It was excellent Advice of *Tiberius Caesar*, *Non omittere caput rerum, neq; te in casum dare*: Follow safe Counsels by Reason, rather than happy by Chance.

Yet some Things must be ventured, and many Things which exceed the Prudence of Man, are often by Fortune disposed to the best.

Certain it is, that he who will commit nothing to Fortune, nor undertake any Enterprize, whose Event appeareth not infallible, may escape many Dangers by his wary Conduct; but will fail of as many Successes by his unactive Fearfulness.

All that a Wise Man therefore can do, is to attempt with Prudence, pursue with Hope, and support intervening Accidents with Patience.

It will be great Prudence in you, rightly to take hold on Opportunities; for Opportunity admits of no after-game; and those who have lost their first Hopes, any thing that is future seems best.

In management of Affairs stand not upon niceties and punctilio's of Honour, but by fair Compliance gain your Ends: Heat and Precipitation are ever fatal to all Business; a sober Patience, and a wise Condescension, do many times effect that which Rashness and Choler will undo.

If you are to negotiate a Matter with any Person, observe their Temper, and (as far as Prudence and Discretion will give Leave) comply with their Humour; suffer them to speak their Pleasure rather than interrupt them; provoke them to speak; for they will, out of Ignorance, or inexperience, let fall something which may be for your Advantage.

Give fair Words, and make large Promises, for they are the most powerful Engines to work your Ends.

Converse with all Men as *Christians*; but if you have to do with any Stranger, look upon him as one that may be Unjust (I own it is

Severe,

Severe, but it will be your Safety) if he proves otherwise, he doth but fail your Expectation; for believe me (and I have found it to my cost) nothing will undo you more than to rely too much upon the Honesty of other Men.

And, if possible, order your Affairs so, that he with whom you are to deal, perform first; when that is done, if you be deceived, you may thank yourself.

If at any time you shall be overmuch pressed to do any thing hastily, be careful; Fraud and Deceit are always in haste; Diffidence is the right Eye of Prudence, *Cavendo tutus.*

Remember *Epicharmus* his *Memento diffidere.*

There is no better antidote against Deceit than Caution.

Where there is too great a Facility of believing, there is also a Willingness to be deceived: And though Belief carries with it a Colour of Innocency, yet Distrust still carries Strength and Safety; the greatest Advantage of Deceit is other Mens Imperfections; and Men are rarely deceived by others, except they have first deceived themselves by trusting: To keep People in Hope, is Prudence; but to trust them is indiscretion; yet I would have you so to behave yourself to him with whom you have to do, as not to seem to distrust, for that passes from Incivility to Offence, and makes him to be your Enemy.

In all great Actions take many (if you think fitting) to your Assistance, but few to your trust: And if you trust any, be sure to trust yourself most.

If you be to go Abroad, if the Weather be fair and serene, carry your Cloak with you; but if it Rams, you may leave it behind, if you please.

Never suffer any Rub to lie in the Way, which may hinder the true running of your Bowl.

When you have a present Good in Prospect, which may turn to Advantage, decline it not by the Importunity of others; if you do, you will make room for Repentance. Let the Business of the World be your Circumference, but yourself the Center.

If you meet with a Person that is more Complaisant or Officious unto you than usual, have a Care of him; for he will have some Design upon you, and he either hath, or doth intend to deceive you.

A fairer Look than Ordinary towards the *Spaniard*, puts him into

into a present Suspicion of his own Safety: The *Italian* thinks himself on the Point of being Bought and Sold, when he is better used than he was wont to be, without manifest Cause.

Never put yourself into the Power of any Person how he will deal with you: if you come to depend upon the Charity of others, you are undone; therefore always stand upon your Guard.

When you engage in any great Concern, let it be with your Equals, not with them that are Superior to you; if you do, they will have the Honour and Profit, and you the Toil, and must be content with what they will give you.

At a Time a Lion invited a Cow, a Goat, and a Sheep to Hunt with him; promising them, that what Game was taken, should be equally divided between them; upon this they went out together, ran down a Hart, and quartered it; each of the Companions stood eagerly expecting to receive his Share, which put the Lion into a Rage; I, said he (with a Terrible Voice) *take the first Part as your King, the Second I claim as being Strangest, the Third is my Due as a small Reward of all my Pains and Trouble; and he that shall presume to refuse me the fourth Share, I here declare him my Enemy.* His Companions hearing this, without daring to murmur, were obliged to go Hungry away.

It will be Wisdom in you, to take Advantage of the Over-sight of other Men; for the Follies of one Man is certainly the Fortune of another; and no Man prospers so suddenly, as by the Errors of others; you may make your Fortune as you please, if you rightly manage Opportunities: Fortune is nothing but an attentive Observation of the Revolution of Affairs, and the Occasions resulting from them.

Keep an exact Diary of all your Actions, and of the most memorable Passages you hear or meet with.

And if, in the Conduct of your Affairs, you have been deceived by others, or have committed any Error yourself, it will be Discretion in you to observe and note the same, and the Defailance, and the Means or Expedients to repair it; this method will make you more Prudent and Wary for the Future.

For let me tell you, no Man is truly Wise, but he who hath been deceived; and your own Errors will teach you more Prudence than the Grave Precepts or Examples of others.

At a Time there was a great Contest between Folly and Prudence, which should have the Precedence; the Difference grew so high, that at last they agreed to refer it to *Jupiter*; who having heard all that could be said on both Sides, gave his Judgment, *That Folly should go before, and Prudence follow after.*

Let all your Observations and Remarks be committed to Writing every Night before you Sleep, and by this Means, in a short Time, you will have a Dictionary of Prudence and Experience of your own making.

For wise Men now begin, not to be Content with inhabiting the World only, but to understand it too.

R. O X A N A's Second Letter of Advice to her Son.

SINCE you are come upon the Stage of Action, as it was your Duty, so it will be your Glory, to deal justly with all Persons whatsoever.

Clear and round Dealing is the Honour of Man's Nature; hate nothing but what is Dishonest; fear nothing but what is Ignoble; and love nothing but what is Just and Honourable.

To stoop to any fordid low Action, is to imitate the Kite, which fieth high in the Air, yet vouchsafes to condescend to Carrion upon the Ground.

Do Injury to none; for by so doing, you do but teach others to injure you.

Innocency will be your best Guard, and your Integrity will be as a Coat of Mail unto you.

A good Conscience breeds great Resolutions, and, an innocent Soul is impregnable.

It is less Difficult and more Safe, to keep the Way of Honesty and Justice, than to turn away from it; yet commonly our Passions lead us into bye Paths.

You may be assured, he that in any one Affair relinquisheth Honesty, banisheth all Shame in succeeding Actions; and certainly no Vice covereth a Man with so much Shame, as to be found False and Unjust; and be assured, that Divine Vengeance rewards all Unjust Actions of Men with slow, but sure Payment; and full Interest

Keep touch in small Matters, not to deceive in greater, but the better to dispose yourself to perform things of Weight and Moment; a Promise is a just Debt, which you must take care to pay, for Honour and Honesty are the Security.

In great Matters think an Hour before you Speak, and a Day before you Promise: Hasty Promises are commonly followed with speedy Repentance.

Generosity and Virtue made the old *Romans* build a Temple to Fidelity.

Breaking your Faith may perchance get you Riches, but will never get you Glory.

He that breaks his Promise, forfeits his Faith (which was the Security) and so is become an Infidel to him to whom he promised.

It was well said by Monsieur *de Gorgius*, a French Captain, who having burnt many of the Churches of the *Spaniards* in *Florida*, and being asked Why he did so? told them, *That they who had no Faith, needed no Churches.*

To deceive one who is not obliged to believe you, is ill; but to cheat one whom your fair Pretences have induced to believe you, is much worse; for this is to Murder one whom you have persuaded to lay aside his Arms.

Upon a Time there was a Cat fallen into a Fat of Wort, and was almost drowned; the Cat cried out for Help; the Rats hearing the Cry, came and saw her Misfortune; the Cat desired them, in all Love, to help her out, and such a Day she would give them a great Reward, which they consented to, and hope her out accordingly. The Time of Payment being come, the Rats made their Application to the Cat for the promised Gratuity; the Cat said, she made no such Promise; but they proved the Promise; *Well*, said the Cat, *I do not remember any such Promise, but if I did make such a Promise, I was then in Drink.* The Cat was so highly displeased with the Rats, that instead of rewarding them, she fell upon them, and killed several of them. I leave the Moral Application, my dear ——— to yourself.

A Man's Word, and the Effect of it, ought to be as inseparable as Fire and Heat; this the Ancients decyphered to us, when they painted a Tongue bound fast to the Heart.

It is now so well remark'd what it is to keep one's Word, that those who do, generally pass for old fashioned People.

Great Men make Promises; but Middling Peoples keey them best.

Each Man's a *Craesus*; Promises hath Store,
But in Performance, who's not *Irus*, Poor?

Eucratidas, the Son of *Anaxandridas*, when one asked him, Why the *Ephori* of *Sparta* sat every Day to determine Causes about Contracts? Replied, *That we might learn to keep our Word, even with our Enemies.*

I advise you to look upon Faith and Monesty as the most sacred Good of Mankind; not to be forced by Necessity, or corrupted by Reward.

It is the Glory of a brave Man, to be such, that if Fidelity was lost in the World, it might be found in his Breast.

Be sure to have so much of a generous Soul in you, as not to desert that which is Just, but to own it.

Where are those noble Resolutions of our Fore-fathers? Where is the *Romau* Gallantry? which obliged *M. Regulus* to return to be a Martyr for Virtue, rather than Stain the *Roman* Faith?

Faith is the Foundation of Justice, and Justice the Stay of the State?

A just Man should account nothing more precious than his Word, nothing more venerable than his Faith, nor nothing more sacred than his Promise.

King *Francis* the First, said, *That if Faith were banished out of the World, it should be found in his Breast.*

The Greatest and best of Kings have ever been exact in the Performance of their Promises.

When there was a Reward promised by *Augustus* the Emperor, to any that should bring in *Croton*, a Notorious Robber, and a Banditti, or his Head; whereupon *Croton* surrendered himself; and *Augustus* commanded that Sum to be given him, which he had promised to be given to the Person who should bring in *Croton*, or his Head.

The *Florentine* tells us, that a Prince who lived in his Time, never talked but of Peace and Faith; and if he had kept either of them, he had lost his Reputation and Credit.

But certain it is, nothing doth add more to the Splendor of a Prince, than to keep his Faith, and to act by the just Principles of Wisdom; for all things multiply to Humour in a Prince that hath gotten Reputation for his Faith and Wisdom.

It goes a great Way towards the making a Man faithful, to let him understand that you think him so; and he that does but so much as suspect that I will deceive him, gives me a kind of right so to do.

There is nothing easier than to deceive a good Man; he that never Lies, easily believes, and he that never Deceives, Confides much; to be deceived is not always a Sign of Weakness, for Goodness is sometimes the cause of it; Have a care not to be so good a Man that others may take occasion from it of being bad: Let the cunning of the Serpent go along with the innocency of the Dove.

R O X A N A's *Third Letter of Advice to her Son.*

IF you design to yourself Happiness in this World, and an Improvement of your Estate, let me particularly advise you to avoid Suits in Law; for if you engage in any, you put yourself into a House of Correction, where you must labour stoutly to pay the Fees before you are discharged.

If the Cause shall go on your Side, there are those who will tell you, that Victory is a fair Game; but you must let them divide Stakes.

If it shall be your Misfortune to engage in any, have a care of a rich Fool; for there is nothing more dangerous, as to Mischief, than a rich obstinate Fool, in the Hands of a cunning Knave; and have a watchful Eye over him that hath but two or three Causes (if he be a busie Fellow) for he will give you Trouble enough; an inconsiderable Mouse may give Disturbance to a noble Lion.

There were two Lawyers very passionately pleading their Clients Cause, to their great Satisfaction; when the Cause was over, the Lawyers came out of Court, and embraced each other with much Tenderness; the Clients being astonished at their Behaviour, one of them asked his Lawyer, *How they could be Friends so soon?* *Tush,* answered the Lawyer, *we were never Foes; for we Lawyers are like a Pair of Sheers, if you open them, and pull them down, they seem to cut one another; but they only cut that which cometh between them.*

You

You cannot but remember the Fable of the Vulture, sitting upon a Tree to see the Lion and Bear fight, and to make a Prey of him which fell first; have a care you do not make the Moral.

It was good Advice mentioned in the Scripture, *If any Man will sue thee at the Law, and take away thy Coat, let him have thy Cloak also*; the Reason is Evident, lest the Lawyer should come between and strip you Naked, even of your Shirt.

To go to Law is like a Lottery, or playing at Dice, where, if the Game be obstinately pursued, the Box-Keeper is commonly the greatest Winner.

I believe there are many excellent Men Practitioners of the Law, if it be but your Fortune to meet with them.

Some Years since, in the State of *Venice*, all their Advocates were Noblemen, appointed by the Grand Council, to the Number of Twenty-Four, and had all of them an Allowance from the State; being forbidden to take Presents of Money, that the Nobleness of the Profession might not be sullied, and that in all Processes it might be their Interest to give a speedy Dispatch.

But you will be sure, at every Market in the Countrey, to find some Fairies, Elves, and little Spirits, with Hawking-Baggs, or Snap-sacks, by their Sides, wherein they have their Familiars, some with Green-coats, others with Yellow-vests, which they send forth to the Disquiet of Good Men; as *Aeolus* did the Winds, which he had got into his Bottle, to the Disturbance of the World. These are like the Sun in *Aries*, which move, but not remove the Humours.

It shall rain Snares upon them; which a Rabby interpreted to be the Multitude of Advocates, Proctors, and Solicitors, which were Snares to catch the People.

Certainly these Elves are much of the Nature of the Ant, very good for themselves, but exceeding pernicious in the Garden of a Commonwealth.

If ever you should fly to these for Succour, as the Sheep do to the Bushes in a Storm, you will be sure to leave a good Part of your Coat behind you.

These like a Quartan Ague, will never leave you, as long as any Humour be left in you; and if you shall have need to make use of them, they will stir no more without a Fee, than a Hawk without a Lure.

I have often admired at the Genius of a Nobleman of *France*, who was much delighted in troubling Men with Suits; *Lewis* the *French* King hearing of it, offer'd to ease him of his Suits, by putting an End to them; he thank'd his Majesty, but earnestly besought him to leave Thirty or Forty behind, whereby he might merrily pass away the Time.

Humours are Mens Religion, Power their Laws;
Their Wit Confusion, and their Will their Cause.

My Advice to you, is, that you seriously employ yourself in the Study of the Laws of this Nation (being the most excellent for their Justice and Wisdom) if not to practise the Law, yet to gain so much Knowledge therein, as to defend yourself and Estate from the Robbin-Good-Fellows of it.

If you be not so disposed, you must lay up one third Part of your Estate to preserve the other two, or else you will be assuredly undone.

P O S T S C R I P T.

Next Suits in Law, (which are but *jactus aleæ*) avoid Gaming; it hath no Satisfaction in it, besides a sordid coveting of that which is another's; or a Prodigality of that which is your own: It's a Madness beyond the Cure of *Hellebore*, to cast a Dye whether your Estate shall be your own or not; if you have not a Care, I can (without an Augure) tell what will be your Fate; this, like a Quicksand, will swallow you up in a Moment; and Goods which are so gotten, are like Pyramids of Snow, which melt away, and are dissolved with the same ill Husbandry that did beget them; and believe me, you will find it more chargeable to you, than the seven deadly Sins.

Always remember, that one Crown in your Pocket, will do you more Honour and Service than ten spent.

Plato seeing a young Man play at Dice, he reproved him for so doing: Upon which the young Man said, *What! so small a Matter & Cnslow*, replied *Plato*, is no small Thing.

ROXANA's Fourth Letter of Advice to her Son
Concerning his giving and taking Counsel.

IT is easier to give Counsel than to take it: Wise Men think they do not need it; and Fools are too Obstinate to take it.

It is no Diminution of Grandeur, no Character of Insufficiency to take Counsel; the Dignity of the greatest Persons is rather advanced than diminished, when they sit in the Chair of Council.

The Counsels of a Wise Man are the Voice of an Oracle, which foresees Things to come, and guides the Designs of Posterity.

It is Wisdom for great Persons to advise with others what they should do; but it is not necessary to declare to them what they will do; let them take the Advice of a Wise Man; but let the Determination come from themselves.

Those Persons are not fit to advise others, that have not first given good Counsel to themselves.

The Trust of giving Counsel, is the greatest Trust; therefore Counsellors are obliged to all Faithfulness and Integrity, and they ought rather to be skilled in their Masters Business, than in his Humour and Inclination.

Augustus lamented for the Death of *Varus*, Because, said he, *I have now none in my Country to tell me Truth.*

What wants a Sovereign? said a flattering Courtier; Truth, answered a Serious King.

Heliogabalus required the Advice of a Counsellor, who giving that Advice which did not please him: *How darest thou be so plain?* said *Heliogabalus*: Because I dare Die, answered he; *I can but Die if I am Faithful, and I must Die though I Flatter.*

He that advises a Prince to satisfy his Humours and Desires, sets Interest, which cannot Err, by Passion, which may.

A Wise Counsellor must take Notice of the *Minima's* of Affairs, and as they are apparelled with their Circumstances; this is the best Method to direct his Advice; for many times great Matters hang upon very small Wyers.

Never set your Heart upon advising a Prince in any doubtful Enterprize which concerns the State; for if it prosper, the Glory of it must be his; but if it fail, the Dishonour will be yours.

It hath passed antiently for a Maxim of Wisdom, to have old Men for Counsel, and young Men for Execution: But I think Men in the Meridian of their Years, are fitter for Counsel or Action than old Men; for Men of Age object too much, consult too long, adventure too little, and repent too soon.

The Republick of *Venice* suffers not any Ecclesiasticks to sit in their Council, by reason of their Dependance on the Pope, but before any Suffrage pass in Council, the common cry is, *Fuori I Preti, Out Presbyters.*

The true Exposition of a Counsellor, is rather to be well studied in his Master's Business than his Nature, for then he is like to advise him, and not flatter him.

Solon being sent for by *Cræsus*, who advised and counselled *Cræsus* wisely, but was dismissed with Disrespect: *Æsop* being much grieved to see him so unthankfully used, said to him, *We must either tell Kings nothing at all, or what may please them.* No, said *Solon*, *either nothing at all, or what is best for them.*

Every one is more ready with pleasing Conceits to delight a Prince, than with profitable Counsel to serve him; smooth and pleasant Speeches, and small Endeavours, always find Favour; but to advise a Prince that which is Just and Convenient, is a Point of some Pains, and many Times a thankless Office.

Those who advise Princes, ought to speak as if they put them in mind of somewhat they had forgot, not as teaching them what they knew not.

If a Prince had several Kingdoms under him, it is Wisdom to admit every Kingdom into his Council; by that Means the several Nations will rest the better satisfied, and each Nation will rival and contend to excel the other in smartness of Wit, and depth of Design.

When a Prince hath any great Enterprize in Design; it is safest at first to propound the same to his Counsellors seperately, and in private, ordering them to set down their Opinions in Writing, with their Reasons, and not communicate the same to others; in private they will be more free and bold; whereas some great Person or Favourite in Council, having once declared his Conceits, carries the rest after him, without any Contradiction; so that the best Opinions are either concealed, or not so well debated; if the Prince meets

with

with any Obstruction in his Enterprize, let him order those who have delivered their Opinions, to debate and defend the same in Publick (which in Honour they ought to do) freely without Passion or Respect to any others; by this Means Matters will be well debated and discussed.

Those are the best Counsels, and chiefly to be embraced, that have the greatest Facility and Security in them, and such as are well grounded; and upon mature Deliberation resolved upon, and as little subject as may be to the Power of Fortune: All desperate Counsels are dangerous, and are commonly attended by Despair and Infidelity.

Nothing is more fatal to great Undertakings, than rash and precipitate Counsels, Haste and Rashness are like Storms and Tempests, which wrack Business; but Expedition, like a fair Wind, bringeth it into the Haven.

The Chariot of Wisdom is drawn by Remora's, and its Council-Table is made of Tortoise-shell.

King *Demetrius* being asked by *Proclus*, one of the Captains, Why he would not give Battle to *Ptolomy*, seeing his Strength and Number of Men was much Superior? answered, *That a thing once done, can never be undone; and before a Man attempts a difficult Enterprize, it is necessary long Time to consider and debate.*

Sartorius was highly commended by *Plutarch*; because he was slow in Counsel, grave in his Undertakings, and quick in his Executions.

Great Designs must be filed and followed; the Pillow is a silent Sybil, from whence you may receive Oracles of Wisdom.

To sleep upon a Thing that is to be done, is better than to be awakened by a thing already done.

Agessilaus, that wise Captain of the *Licanians*, being much pressed to give his Answer to the *Theban* Ambassadors, said, Sudden Resolutions are always dangerous, and no less Peril ensueth of slow and doubtful Delays.

Those are presumed to be the best Counsels which come from them that advise against their own Interest.

The *Athenians* having been Victors in the *Peloponesian* War, and conquered almost all *Greece*, had a Purpose to have conquered *Sicily*, which Design was Disputed in the Senate of the *Athenians*:

Nicias,

Nicias, who was one of the chief in *Athen*s, dissuaded it; and his Reason was, because he persuaded them to that which was not for his Advantage; for while *Athen*s was in Peace, he knew there were many which would go before him, but in Time of War, he was sure none could come near him.

A sober and wise Counsellor ought to look through the present to the Future, and well to consider the Consequence of Things, and what Evils may happen out: The State of *Venice*, when they consult of a Business to Day, they consider what may fall out forty Years after.

He must not be *Phrygean* like, who assembled their Council after the Mischief was happened, to consult how they might have prevented it.

Boldness in Counsel is ill, because it is blind, it sees not Danger and Inconveniencies; but good in Execution; for in Council it is good to see Dangers; in Execution not to see them except they be very great.

In matters of Counsel, the good and prudent Part is to take Things as they are (since the past cannot be recalled) to propose Remedies for the present Evils, and Provisions against future Events.

A prudent Counsellor consults with both Times, of the ancient Time what is best, of the present what is fittest.

Pericles was wont to say, That Time was the wisest Counsellor.

It may be the Felicity of a private Man, now and then to meet with a sober Person to advise him (and it is his Prudence to acquiesce in his Counsel) not of great Men, for they love them that flatter and feed their Humour most, not those that serve their Interest best.

When *Xerxes* marched with a prodigious Army against *Greece*, he asked his Counsellors, What they thought of his Affairs? One told him, they would never come to Battle; another, that he would only find empty Cities and Countries, for his coming; only *Demaratus* advised him not to depend too much on his great Numbers, for he would rather find them a Burthen to him than an Advantage, and that three Hundred Men in the Straights of the Mountains would be sufficient to give a Check to his great Army; and that such an Accident would undoubtedly turn his vast Numbers to his Confusion: It fell out afterwards as he foretold. A miserable

Prince,

Prince, that amongst so many thousand Subjects, had but one Servant to tell him Truth. That excellent King *Alphonse* was wont to say, That his dead Counsellors, meaning his Books, were to him far better than the Living, for they, without Flattery, Fear, or Bashfulness, presented to him Truth without Disguise.

Howsoever, it is not safe for any Prince to change his secret Council, especially those made privy to any of his last Resolutions, for they resemble Keys that are lost or misplaced, no farther Security remains, but to change the Lock.

Counsellors of Princes ought to give such Counsel as may comport with the Dignity and Honour of their Master, and not that which suits with the Model of their own Mind and Fortune.

Parmenio hearing what great Offers *Darius* made to *Alexander*, which he rejected, *Parmenio* said, Surely were I as *Alexander*, I would accept of those Offers; said *Alexander*, So would I, were I as *Parmenio*.

After any Matter propounded and well debated in Council, many times nothing can be more pernicious than not to come to a speedy Resolution.

The *Lavinians* being sought to by the *Latins* for Aid against the *Romans*, put off the Resolution of it so long, that when they were just marching out of the Town to give Succours to them, News came that the *Latins* were defeated; whereupon the *Praetor* *Milvius* said, We shall pay dear to the *Romans* for this little Way we have gone; for if at first they had resolved to help, or not to help the *Latins*; Not helping, they had not given Offence to the *Romans*; but helping them, had their Aid come in Time, with the Addition of their Forces, they might have gained them the Victory.

As nothing is more becoming a sober Counsellor than to advise his Prince justly; so nothing multiplies more to the Glory of the greatest Prince, than to take good Counsel and pursue it.

The first part of Wisdom consists in Ability to give good Counsel; the next is to take it.

Hence was that the *Egyptians* adopted *Diodorus* to be their King; for he was so cunning in giving and taking Counsel, and in changing it with Dexterity, when Opportunity served, that it is said He could turn himself into any Figure or Shape.

Hanibal the Carthaginian being in Exile, advised King Antiochus, upon an advantageous Occasion offered, to give the Romans, his Enemies, Battle. Antiochus, when he had sacrificed, told him, The Entrails forbid it. Hanibal sharply rebuked him thus, Sir, you are for the doing what the Flesh of a Beast, not what the Reason of a Wise Man adviseth.

It is not so fatal to the Common-wealth, to have an evil Prince, and a good Council, as it is to have a good Prince misled by evil Counsellors.

Nothing doth suit so ill with the Wisdom of a Prince, as to hearken (as some Princes do) to counsels given by one of his own Temper.

Let a Wise Counsellor advise nothing but what is practicable; every Project that thwarts Prudence, is a kind of Folly and Quack-
ing, which in matters of Politicks, is the Ruin of States; though at first it may seem plausible, it is but a neat Delusion, and will afterwards lose its Vogue, when the Vanity thereof shall be known in Practice.

When one propounded in the Senate of Sparta, to free Greece; Well conceived indeed, said Agis (the Son of Archydamus) but hard to be brought about; he said, Friend, thy Words want an Army and Treasure.

Such Counsels as are over-subtle and nice, are not much to be regarded, because they are seldom brought to a good Issue: Hence it is that the Venetians, although they are not so ingenious a People as the Florentines, yet are they for the most part more happy in their Consultations than they are; and the Lacedemonians were in this particular more fortunate than the Athenians.

Counsels too finely spun, are easily broken; and a deep Contrivance agrees not with the impatience of the Vulgar, to whom speedy Undertakings seems always most Heroick: And slow, yet sure Practices, are interpreted by them as the Motions of False or Base Spirits.

R. O. X. A. N. A. *last Letter of Advice to her Son.*

HE that in a wicked Age will endeavour to do that which ought to be done, or to study to be Virtuous and Just, and this

this I wish you ever to be, will thereby many times hazard his Fortune and his Safety; and believe me, more Men are undone for their Virtues than for their Vices; and a good Man is more in danger than a bad.

A Plebeian moved in the Senate of Athens to have *Aristides* banished; being asked what displeasure *Aristides* had done him, he replied, *None, neither do I know him, but it grieves me to hear every Body call him a Just Man.*

Theodorus the Patriarch, was scoffed at by the Grecian Court, as an Antick, for using Goodness when it was out of fashion; and adjudged Impudent for being Virtuous by himself.

In elder Story it passed for an Oracle of prudence, *That Honesty was the best Policy*; but in Modern Practice you will find, *That Policy is the best Honesty*: To deal justly, looks like a piece of Knight-errantry; and a Good Man is but *Apuleius* inverted.

Virtue and Integrity, when Men were good and innocent, were great securities; but, in a depraved state, they are but as Traps to ensnare those who do profess them.

But if it shall be your Infelicity to live in bad Times (as I wish you the best) I hope you may be the better for them by an Antiperistasis.

If the times be perillous, you must, as a discreet Pilot, play with the Waves which may indanger you; and by giving way thereunto, avoid the hazard: So the Tempest may shake, but not rend your Sails.

To pass a dangerous Wood safely, it's sometimes lawful to put on such Skins as the Beasts have, which haunt those Woods.

He that acts a Begger to prevent a Thief, is never the poorer.

Be not singular, but observe the Humour and Genius of the times, for he that with *Camelion*, cannot change Colour with the Air he lives in, must with the *Camelion*, be content to live only upon the Air.

Be not of any Faction; a Wise Man is always free.

In all Factions carry yourself with Moderation, and so you may make use of them all.

And herein *Pomponius Atticus* was so happy, that all Factions loved him, and studied to do him kindness, and in the midst of them lived in Peace and Prosperity.

Factions

in Factions in State never hold long their Ground; for if they be not suppressed by the Power of the State, they will be ruined by some Distempers rising in their own Party.

But in Popular Commotions, if you stand Neutral, you will be sure to run the fortune of the Bat to be picked by the Birds, and to be bitten by the Mice.

I am of that boon Courage, that I had rather be devoured by a Lion than done to Death by Flies.

Neither can I run myself with those Persons, who act for their advantage; like the Bird, whereof *Leo Africanus* makes mention; which when the King of the Birds demanded Tribute, would always sink himself amongst the Fish; and when the King of the Fishes required his Service, would be always with the Birds.

If any signal Inequality shall happen to fall upon you, the only way is, not to sit still, but to resolve upon Action; for so long as nothing is done, the same Accidents which caused your Misfortune, do still remain; but if you act something, you may deliver yourself: However, you express a brave Spirit that you durst attempt it.

But that which is out of your Power, let it be out of your care; you may, if you think fit, give yourself much trouble, but leave God to govern the World as himself pleaseth.

If you will live Comfortably, let God alone with his Providence, and Men with their Rights.

Having sent away these Letters to my Son at times, as I wrote them; he came one Day into my Study, to tell me all Things were now ready; that is to say, the Building finished, my Coach and Horses come Home, &c. I therefore proceeded to the main Design of making myself known to my Son and this one Daughter, I had not yet received any farther Account, what became of my other Daughter (who had formerly been so troublesome to me) since the Account which *Amey* had given me of her, the last Time of her coming to *Holland*; so that I believed what *Amey* had said became of her, to be Truth. But to proceed.

A few Days after this, I dressed myself in a new Suit of black Pannoy Silk, and plain Linen (but not quite after the Quakers Mode) for two Reasons; First, that I would not give any the least occasion of Offence to my Son, who was not of that persuasion; and

and well knew that neither he nor his Sister had their Education as such. *Second*, That as my Daughter had thought fit to change her Religion, I was in no wise willing to give her the least Suspicion, but that I had always lived a chaste sober Life. Add to this that it was the most becoming Habit with respect to my Age, and the retired Life I now lived.

Thus equip'd, with my plain Coach, &c. I made a Visit to my Son, who received me with all the Demonstration of Affection possible, entertaining me in the handsomest Manner.—At this Interview he returned me his Most hearty Thanks for my foregoing Letters of Advice, assuring me they were so acceptable to him, that he would make it his chief Study to practice the Rules therein laid down to him.—He then told me all the particular Steps taken, in respect to the proposal of marrying his Master's Niece; assuring me, he should have somewhat rashly entered into Matrimony, had it not been for my seasonable Advice, which had caused him to consider much better of that Holy Ordinance than he should otherwise have done; adding, he would do nothing more in that grand Affair without my Advice and Concurrence; notwithstanding he thought all things would be adjusted to his Satisfaction, and he might appoint the Day of Solemnization when he pleased; at the same Time desiring my Company as his chiefest Guest and best Friend.—I invited him home with me that Evening, which he accepting of, hindered my visiting my Daughter at that Time, as I at first intended.

That Evening I presented my Son with a handsome Service of Plate, which I had still left by me, against his Wedding, worth about five hundred Pounds Sterling; and finding him in a very agreeable Humour, after some previous Discourse I asked him, if his Mother would not accompany him at his Wedding? He said, his Mother being dead, he should always esteem me as such, in her stead, for my Care of, and Goodness towards him and his Sister. I examined him strictly as to the Time and Circumstances of his Mother's Death; which he could give no farther Account of than his Sister had done (as before related) only he heartily wished she were living; adding, with a particular Emphasis, that upon Condition he could be assured his dear Mother was living, he would willingly part with half he had in the World to see her.

Not being able to contain himself longer, he burst into Tears, and after venting his Passion a little, said, were his Mother but living at this time, he should be compleatly Happy.

This touched me so to the Quick, that (though I had determined to break the Affair to my Daughter first) I could not but reflect on his tender Affection, and the Hardship we all had labour'd under so long, which the Words, *I am She*, would now remove. This drew Tears from my Eyes in more abundance than I had shed for some Years; he was astonished at this, and endeavoured all he could to pacify me, and wiped the Tears off my Checks; upon this I had not Power to contain myself any longer, but flinging my Arms round his Neck, bursting again into Tears, whisper'd thus to him, *My dear ——— I can no longer forbear telling you, I am your own Mother, and am ready to convince you of it.*

At this my Son started from me, and stood like one Thunder-struck, looking passionately in my Face for some Time; at last, Silence broke, *And are you, Madam* (said he) *the Person to whom I owe my Being?* I answering in the Affirmative, we clasp'd our Arms about each others Neck, and mingled our Tears of Joy together.

The first transport of Passion being a little over, we debated the Matter, and I thoroughly satisfied him I was the very Person—— we then consulted in what Manner I should discover myself to my Daughter; he intreated me to let him have the Management of that by reason she was big with Child, and therefore it required to be brought out by Degrees, lest a too hasty excess of Joy might endanger her or the Child's Life, if not both.

This was so modest a Request that I had not any thing to say against it; so we spent the remainder of the Evening in my giving him an Account as I thought proper of my past Life, how I went Abroad, in what Parts I had lived, and the like, with which he was fully satisfied.

Next Morning he took his Leave of me for that Time, promising to let me know every Evening how he proceeded in the Affair with his Sister, and that he would bring her to me as soon as he possibly could, to pay her Duty.

While he was busy with his Sister, I looked over all my Papers, and burnt all *Amy's* Letters to me, and the Copies of mine to her, with

with all other Writings that could give the least Intimation of my former Gallantry, and wicked Course of Life, that they might not bring any thing to light.

My Son managed the Matter much better and more discreetly than I should have done, and with such Expedition, that the fourth Day he brought his Sister to me, fully satisfied that I was really her Mother; and in respect to the Sex, and the Condition she was in, left us together for the Space of two Hours, in which Time we were perfectly reconciled in all Things; only she thought it strange I had not made myself known before, so many Opportunities as I had with her.

This Affair over, I now lived as happy as my Heart could wish, enjoying the sweet Consolation of my own Children, which I had been deprived of so many Years. This Comfort I enjoyed for seven Years, bless'd with a tollerable good State of Health. At last, finding Infirmities begin to creep on me, I settled all my worldly Affairs, made my Will, leaving only a few Legacies, among some distant Relations, and all the rest, which was still something Valuable, between my Son and Daughter and their Children.

About three Months after this, Madam ROXANA was taken Sick, and though it was the Opinion of her Physicians, that her Distemper was Mortal, she was not in the least disinayed, but freely resigned her Soul to the Mercy of him who gave it, dying in Charity with all the World.

She was buried according to her own Desire, in a private Manner, in *Hornsey Church-Yard*.

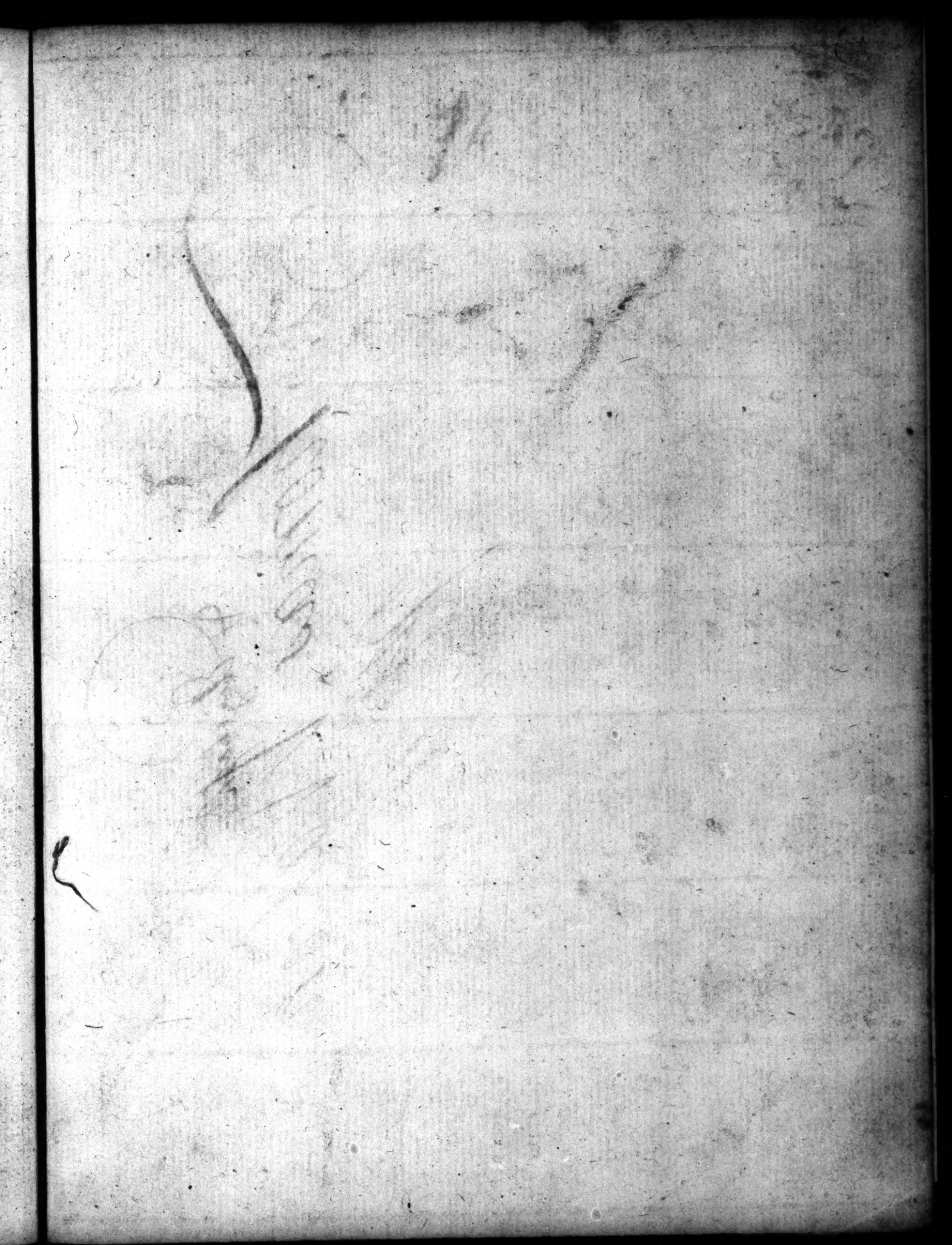
F I N I S.

BOOKS Printed for, and Sold by E. APPLEBEE, at *Caleb D'Anvers's Head*, in the *Old Bailey*.

THE LIFE of CHARLOTTA DU PONT, an *English* LADY; taken from her own MEMOIRS. Giving an Account how she was trapan'd by her Step-Mother to *Virginia*, how the Ship was taken by some *Madagascar* Pirates, and retaken by a *Spanish* Man of War: Of her Marriage in the *Spanish West-Indies*, and ADVENTURES whilst she resided there, with her return to *ENGLAND*: And the HISTORY of several Gentlemen and Ladies whom she met withal in her Travels; some of whom had been Slaves in *Barbary*, and others cast on Shore by Shipwreck on the barbarous Coasts up the Great River *Oronoko*; with their Escape thence, and safe Return to *France* and *Spain*.

MEMOIRS of the LIFE of the late DUKE of ORMOND. Written by HIMSELF. Containing many Curious Particulars, especially his Negotiations at Foreign Courts, in favour of the Chevalier *de St. George*; and his Amours at *Avignon*, and elsewhere. Translated from the *FRENCH*.





Thomas, W. W. W.

1841

